LIBRARY
Theological Seminary,
PRINCETON, N. J.
The Stephen Collins Donation.
No. Case, 145
No. Shelf, 2
No. Book, 33

SCC
7795
v. 5

THE MEMOIRS

OF

THE DUKE OF SULLY,

PRIME-MINISTER TO

HENRY THE GREAT.

TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH

BY CHARLOTTE LENNOX.

A NEW EDITION,

REVISED AND CORRECTED; WITH ADDITIONAL NOTES,
SOME LETTERS OF HENRY THE GREAT

AND

A BRIEF HISTORICAL INTRODUCTION.

IN FIVE VOLUMES.

VOL. V.

PHILADELPHIA:
PUBLISHED BY EDWARD EARLE.
J. MAXWELL, PRINTER.
1817.

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2011 with funding from
Princeton Theological Seminary Library

http://www.archive.org/details/memoirsofdukeofs05sull

MEMOIRS OF SULLY.

BOOK XXIX.

1610—1611.

The reasons why the princes, grandees, and ministers hated Sully: he opposes the unjust proceedings of the council: refuses to sign a *comptant* at the queen's request. Quarrels in full council with the duke of Bouillon. Disputes in the court and council. Coronation of Lewis XIII. Sully goes to Montrond, and is taken ill there: reasons for the queen-regent and the ministers recalling him: the reception given him by this princess, who, afterwards takes part with Conchini and the ministers against him. His resolution in opposing the unjust demands of the grandees, and the dissipation of the royal treasures: the uneasiness he suffers on this occasion. He quarrels with Villeroi and d'Alincourt in full council. The princes, lords, and ministers, enter into a confederacy against him. He takes a resolution to retire for ever from court: different opinions concerning his retreat. He resigns the superintendance of the finances, the government of the Bastile, &c. The prudent advice which he gives his secretaries: their obligations to him. He prevents the artifices of his enemies to ruin him: his letters to the queen-regent for this purpose, in which he justifies his conduct, and his administration: the queen's answers. The king increases his pension. He gives a general account of his public and private conduct; of his wealth: and of his domestic affairs: his faithful performances of the promises he made to Henry IV.

WHAT I have just related in the preceding Book respecting Cleves, and the conduct of the queen-regent towards me, took from me, at length, all hope of bringing back the court to just notions upon the two chief points of government, the conduct of foreign affairs, and the management of the finances: on the contrary,

the changeableness of the prince, what I saw daily pass before my eyes, and, above all, the air of dissimulation which in the last place they had recourse to, convinced me that they would never get out of the confusion in which the affairs of the council seemed to be lost, but by such an extrication as I was always afraid of. In order to bring that about, some time was necessary; for connections so strong and so well cemented as those which the king had formed for the destruction of the house of Austria, with all those of the princes interested in its destruction, are not broke all at once, nor sometimes without a struggle which has mischievous consequences. But I have no reason to doubt but that the queen-regent and her counsellors employed all their arts to make them ineffectual. That prejudice in favour of what they called the party of religion; the hatred they bore to all Protestants, whether French or foreigners; a natural inclination, strengthened by habit, to unite with Spain, every impulse of which they could not help following publicly, when the designs of Henry the Great becoming manifest, they were convicted of supporting a cause at once odious and desperate: it could not be expected that the force of these motives was abated, when, by an unexpected stroke, they found themselves upon the point of accomplishing what they had so ardently desired. My religion, my engagements the advice I had given to the late king, of which at least the certain effect would have been the free exercise of the Protestant religion in France, and in all Christendom, even the death of that prince, which seemed to declare me the only repository of his sentiments, and the executor of his designs, all the glory and honour of which must necessarily reflect upon me: these were

their motives for hatred against a man who had already so many powerful enemies; and, by the care which Sillery and Villeroi took to enforce them, they could not fail of having a speedy effect.

Another motive, less openly declared, but probably stronger than all the others, because it directly attacked those private interests, united them all a second time against me. This was a too exact and too impartial administration of the finances, for persons whose avarice had already, in imagination, engrossed to themselves all the treasures of the late king. I have, on this head, an infinite number of circumstances to relate, which certainly will not do any honour to the French name; but it would be to no purpose to be silent, since they are generally known. The reader then may here see some of the most important of them: they will serve to give him an idea of the court at that time.

I shall begin with the favourite of the queen-regent. He cast his eyes at first upon the post of first gentleman of the bed-chamber, not that this dignity was capable of satisfying his ambition, but it was necessary to begin by obtaining a rank which might take away the disproportion that had hitherto been, between him and the other courtiers. To this motive was added some personal resentment against Bellegarde, the cause of which I shall not relate, because it would lead me into too long a discussion. It was highly flattering to the vanity of Conchini that the first step he was seen to take at court, should put him upon a par with his rival:* he therefore caused it to be proposed to the duke of Bouillon, to treat with him for this post. Bouillon, who really

* The marquis d'Ancre (for so he began then to be called) had a difference with the master of the horse, the particulars whereof may be seen in the History of the Regency of Queen Mary de Medicis.

intended to sell it, readily accepted the proposal, and was well paid for his compliance; for, in the first place, he obtained a suppression of the offices established by his majesty in the neighbourhood of Sedan, for levying taxes upon all goods and merchandises exported and imported; so that this gratuity may, without exaggeration, be said to be worth more to him than his whole principality. To this Conchini added two hundred thousand livres, under a pretence that he had been promised that sum upon surrendering his city. I represented to them that the duke of Bouillon had been exactly paid all that was promised him, and if they looked into the account, they would be convinced of it: but what I said was not regarded, and all the expense Henry had been at to get possession of Sedan, ended in paying twice for the place, which, after all, was still in Bouillon's hands.

Conchini, however, did not effect his purpose so easily as he had imagined: the count of Soissons, as I have already hinted, opposed him, as well in that, as in his solicitations for the archbishopric of Tours; but he did it in such a manner as left him room to hope there was a possibility of gaining him; and Conchini soon found the means. He caused the government of Normandy to be given to him, and to this end did not scruple to take it away from the second son of France. The late king, that he might avoid creating any jealousy among those who aspired to this government (which I had refused with the condition of changing my religion annexed to it), and willing to oblige Fervaques, who well deserved that he should have this consideration for him, had bestowed it upon his own son. It was not possible for me to give my assent to this action of Conchini, or to the gratuity given by the council to

the count of Soissons, at his majesty's expense, by purchasing, at a high price, some very inconsiderable claims which the house of Montaffié had in Piedmont, of which mention has been already made. However, notwithstanding all my remonstrances, the bargain was concluded. It was now their custom to suffer me to talk, but to act without me.

Conchini found out a method how to dispose of part of the king's treasures, without its appearing that the sums raised by those means were received or employed for his use. This was by persuading the queen to continue the issuing of *comptants** as the late king was used to do. She wrote the following letter to me upon this occasion, dated the 15th of June:

"Cousin,

"I am resolved, for one year more, to continue the "*comptants* for the payment of those sums which the "late king, my lord, ordered the treasurers of the ex- "chequer to deposite in his privy purse: Béringhen "shall distribute the money arising from hence to the "same persons as formerly. I therefore send this to "acquaint you, that it is my desire you should direct the "treasurer of the exchequer at present in office, to pay "into the hands of the aforesaid Béringhen, the said "*comptant* for the July quarter."

* The *comptants* were orders for payments of money, or receipts for sums paid by the king's order, without specifying in what manner the money so paid was employed. Henry IV, and Lewis XIII, or their ministers, severely felt the abuses that might be made of them; but an infinite number of expenses, which interests of state required to be kept secret, prevented their being abolished. Cardinal de Richelieu determined to put an end to them, but in lieu thereof to leave a million of gold in the king's hands for his private expenses, and to be disposed of at his pleasure. Test. Polit. Part. II. p. 143.

The next day Puget and d'Argogues brought one of these *comptants* to me that I might settle it, and write underneath an order for the payment. I took it, and at the first glance did not observe that it contained any thing but a great number of sums which the late king caused to be paid in this form: but, the amount of the whole appearing to me to be excessively large, instead of looking any farther, I told the bearers, that it was true the conduct of Henry IV seemed to authorise this form, but that at present this writing did not appear to me to be any longer a sufficient discharge to him, who should venture to give an order for its payment. They replied, that, if I would take the trouble to read to the end of the paper, I should find my objection removed by a discharge so valid, that I need not have recourse to any other person for it. I continued to read, being curious to know how a paper, which seemed to contain nothing more than the articles of a *comptant*, and that not very long, should produce a sum of nine hundred thousand two hundred and ten livres and fourteen sols, which I had seen by casting my eyes upon the sum total. My curiosity was soon satisfied: the two or three first articles were followed by others with which I was not greatly pleased, and which seemed only inserted there, in order to prepare me for a morsel still harder to digest: this was a single article of four hundred thousand livres, with no other explanation than these few words which were not very likely to banish my scruples: "Paid into the hands of the late king."

I stopped short, and looking earnestly upon Puget, asked him whether this ingenious trick was of his own invention; then resolutely told him, that the late king had never taken up so much money at once for his pri-

vate purse: and that I had good proofs of his having never received this sum, either in part or the whole. He still continued to answer with the same indifference, that what I should see at the bottom would remove all difficulties. This was four or five lines, written by the queen herself, and in these terms: "We have examined "the articles of the above *comptant*, amounting to nine "hundred thousand two hundred and ten livres and "fourteen sols, and know that this sum was really dis- "bursed by the command of the late king, my lord, to "be passed in the form of a *comptant*, as usual, which "he was prevented from by death. We are satisfied "that the said articles are all just, and order an acquit- "tance of *comptant* to be expedited, to serve as a dis- "charge for Puget, treasurer of the exchequer. Given "at Paris, July 16, 1610, signed, Mary."

It did not immediately occur to me what resolution it was proper for me to take; but, after a moment's reflection, "Monsieur Puget," said I, "what I have read "does not explain to me for what reason so large a "sum is demanded of me; for I can never be persuaded "that the late king received it. It is in vain therefore, "that you press me to sign it upon that supposition: "you must consequently be satisfied with this paper, "such as it is, for your discharge; for, you may depend "upon it, I will add nothing to it." The affair did not rest here: they renewed their endeavours to obtain my signature with as much obstinacy as I refused it; for two whole days I was persecuted about this *comptant:* at last they left me in quiet, and it remained among the rest of my papers; but neither the queen-regent nor Conchini ever forgot it. The favourite thought this but a bad example for those whom he was endeavouring

to bring to a perfect conformity with all his desires: as for the queen, her resentment at my conduct on this occasion was so great, that she could not, with all her art, conceal it; and if till then, she had at times made some slight reflections upon what the king her husband had often said to her of the great use I should be to her in the administration of affairs, from that moment all remembrance of it was erased, and gave place to a settled resolution to bestow my employments upon a person who would be more tractable.

The chancellor gave me an example of that sort of behaviour they expected; but, instead of following it, I could not help reproaching him one day with a fraud truly unpardonable, on occasion of a letter of exemption for the purchase of the registry of the parliament, and of the Châtelet of Paris, which was shown in full council, as having been expedited and sealed by the late king, although I knew that he had obstinately refused to grant it, notwithstanding Villeroi had, at different times, used his utmost endeavours to prevail upon him. The law ordains, that, when the king dies, his seal shall be broken. This the chancellor not only neglected to do, but even dared to make use of it to authenticate several false regulations in favour of Conchini and some others, and continued this practice during five years after the king's demise, for which he had a double conveniency, as his son, who was secretary of state, forged all those writings, which he put the last hand to. Monsieur the admiral* received the assistance it gave him, as if it came from heaven. He brought to be registered in the parliament letters patents for duke and peer for the lordship of Damville in as

* Charles de Montmorency, duke of Damville.

good, and perhaps better form, than they would have had if Henry IV had been living.

I find a second letter from the queen-regent of the same date with the former, but it was on a subject of less importance. It related to a breach which was to be repaired in the fortifications lately raised before the city and castle of Vendôme, at the desire of the sieur Jumeaux, who was governor of it.

It would have been very difficult, exposed as I was to frequent quarrels with the ministers and nobles, to have avoided one with the duke of Bouillon, who on all occasions gave me proofs that he had not forgot or pardoned my having always preferred the king's interest to his, and who only waited for some opportunity to show his resentment of it. He one day proposed in the council, that all those who were in possession of the chief offices and employments in the kingdom, should be required to give in accounts of receipts and expenditure, to be examined there. The council received this proposal in the same spirit with him that made it; for, general as it seemed, yet it was levelled at me alone; and Bouillon undertook to give me notice of it, by saying to me, in full council likewise, that, being a man who loved method and exactness, and who was always desirous of setting others a good example, he did not doubt but that I would begin, by laying before the council those accounts which related to my post of master-general of the ordnance. I replied, in an accent and manner which possibly he did not expect, That whenever the king and queen were pleased to require it, I would lay my accounts before them, and with so much the more willingness, as I was well assured they would find nothing in them but what would be to their satisfaction, and my honour: that, in a minority, the princes

the blood represented the king's person likewise, therefore I would give them the same satisfaction; but that I was too well acquainted with the extent of the rights and privileges of my employment, not to know that, to make it accountable to any other tribunal, was to debase it. "Sir," replied the duke, "it appears to me "that the constable and the marshals of France having "a right to take cognizance of all affairs of the army, "as they fall immediately under their inspection by the "nature of their offices, so they may likewise of all "posts and employments relating to it: and yours is one "of the chief of that kind." "I see plainly, Sir," returned I, without endeavouring to conceal my resentment at this procedure, "that you have long designed "me this affront, and that you are artfully seeking to "support yourself with M. the constable, whose rank, "merit, and years, I honour and esteem, and for whose "friendship I am greatly obliged. I do not apprehend "that any dispute will arise between him and me upon "this matter; but as for you and all the others, I declare "that I do not think myself accountable to you in what "regards my office, but to the king alone." "You must "at least acknowledge, Sir," replied the duke of Bouillon, "that, your patent being directed to us, it implies "that we have some degree of authority there." "Sir," said, I, "you have either very slightly, or but ill under-"stood what you read, since, if what you assert be true, "I am likewise accountable to the mayors, the sheriffs, "and the captains of the city-gates, in what regards my "employments, since the patent is directed to them as "well as to the marshals and governors of France; but, "if you are really ignorant why those clauses are insert-"ed, now know from me, that it is in order that I may

"be assisted by all these persons in whatever I require "of them, which carries rather an idea of superiority "than the contrary."

The queen, who found that the dispute was growing warm, and that it might produce a quarrel between us, imposed silence upon us both, and introduced another question. Bouillon's flattery to the constable missed of the effect he proposed by it, for I was as much beloved by that nobleman for the services I had done him in some very difficult circumstances, as Bouillon, who had drawn him into those circumstances, was disliked by him. When the council broke up, he told the queen, in Bouillon's presence, that his claim was ill founded; then, addressing himself to the duke, he intreated him not to make any more attempts to engage him in his personal resentments and schemes of revenge. This quarrel made a great noise at court, because the friends of each party thought it incumbent upon them to engage in it. It was not here as in the council: my party was now greatly superior to his. The families of Guise, Longueville, and many others, declared themselves openly for me.

Nor did Conchini and his wife continue long to be in good intelligence with the ministers and the other chief persons of the state. It is the fate of connections, produced by a spirit of interest, that the same cause which gives them birth, destroys them with the greater facility. Hence followed a thousand scandalous scenes: they came openly to reproaches and abuses, which, from some remains of decency, should have been stifled. As the whole court was actuated by the same spirit, it was soon filled with hatred, jealousy, and faction; none but base or criminal methods were employed in disputing for favours or in obtaining them; some old grudge or

some new resentment embittered every mind, and the most sanguinary catastrophes were often apprehended among persons of the highest rank: it became necessary to watch them continually, to prevent the fatal effects of their quarrels The public was not ignorant of the motives which animated one against the other, all the princes of the blood, the constable, the master of the horse, the duke d'Epernon, and many more. In these dissensions Conchini had always the greatest part;* sometimes, while the balance was held between these illustrious rivals, the favours for which they disputed fell into the hands of mean, inconsiderable persons.

Discord, confusion, injustice, and fraud, all the evils which follow the contempt of subordination, poured in like a deluge upon the court and council, and more than once revenged the insulted memory of Henry the Great upon his domestic enemies, by those very means which they had made choice of to revenge themselves.

There was not any of the European powers who did not, by their ambassadors, acquit themselves of what they owed to this great king: but it was easy to distinguish among them, those who were more sincere in their compliments of congratulation for the accession of the new king to the throne, than in those of condolence for the loss of him whom he succeeded. There were found Frenchmen base enough to say to the ambassadors from the king of Spain and the archduke, these very words: "Your tears need not wet your hand-"kerchiefs much; it was a stroke of Providence that "saved the king and the Catholic religion from ruin." I shall say nothing of the reception that was given to these ambassadors.

* See the detail of these intrigues and court-quarrels in Siri, vol. ii. p. 327, and in the same historians.

My heart was too much removed from every sensation of joy, to allow me to have any part in the ceremony of the king's coronation;* therefore, while every one took the road to Rheims, I set out for Montrond, after having obtained the queen's permission to go to one of my country-houses. I carefully concealed my design of not returning again to Paris, at least while I saw the same dispositions among the courtiers, and the same disorder in affairs: but I had really taken this resolution, which was confirmed by my being attacked with a violent illness immediately after I arrived at Montrond, and which I could attribute to no other cause, than the painful situation my heart had been in for four months. It was here also, that, to calm the perturbations of my mind, I composed those two little pieces of poetry, one of which is intituled, *A Parallel between Caesar and Henry the Great;* and the other *An Adieu to the Court.*†

If this adieu was not the last, it was not my fault: I saw very plainly that I could not remain there. The secret council held at the house of the nuncio, which I have already mentioned, was continually recurring to my mind: to this I added some words which a princess, my relation and friend, told me she had heard said to the queen at the same time. Many other circumstances of this nature filled my mind with the strongest forebodings that the whole Protestant Church was on the eve of a persecution. By a letter which Préaux wrote

* The ceremony is very minutely described in the Merc: Franç. the Royal MSS. P. Matthieu, &c. anno 1610. It was performed the 17th of October.

† These pieces are recited in Sully's Memoirs, at the end of the first volume, p: 469.

to me from Châtelleraut, dated November 10, he seemed to be of the same opinion; "Already," says he, "I "fancy I see the theatre raised to renew our tragedies." With this melancholy expectation, my resolution was already settled, to dispose of all my employments to those persons who should be recommended to me by Conchini and his wife, as money seemed to be cheapest with them. I intended to send one-third of the sums raised by these sales to Switzerland, another to Venice, and another at Holland, where I proposed to retire myself, when the storm appeared ready to break out, with all the money that by good economy I had saved out of my yearly revenue. Thus had I regulated my affairs; and that I made any alteration in this plan, was owing to the following circumstance.

That jealousy and misunderstanding which subsisted among the nobles and persons in office, rendered the ceremony of the coronation so tumultuous and disorderly, that it was expected some dangerous consequences would follow. I do not speak here of their disputes for rank and precedence only. The duke d'Epernon, although for some years past, as it appeared, intimately connected with Conchini, yet one day, in concert with the duke d'Eguillon, used language to him equally severe, injurious, and threatening, and this in public. The duke of Nevers, supported by the princes of the blood, treated Villeroi, Sillery, and Jeannin, in the same manner: they were seized with consternation and fear; they found that they had not power, and, doubtless, felt they were not innocent enough to repel these reproaches, and now began to be sensible of the need they had of me. It might have dangerous consequences, if the princes and nobles were suffered to go on in re-

proving the ministers of state. I appeared to them to be the only man capable of putting things upon another footing, by the authority, the respect, and even the awe, which my birth, my character, and my manners, had acquired me in the council; and they so earnestly solicited the queen to make use of her influence over me, to oblige me to return, that she sent me by an express the following letter:

"Cousin,

"The coronation of the king, monsieur my son, be-
"ing happily performed at Rheims, we shall in a short
"time set out for Paris; and because many affairs that
"require your presence, on account of your employ-
"ments, and the great abilities you have shown in the
"exercise of them, will be transacted the latter end of
"this year, and the beginning of the next, I desire you
"will return to Paris with all possible haste, that we
"may find you there upon our arrival. So, in full assu-
"rance that you will not fail, I beseech God, &c.
"Written at Rheims, October 6, 1610.

"Your good cousin,

MARY."

I imagined, that by eluding this journey for the present, they would think no more of it; therefore my answer to the queen was conceived in these terms:

"Madam,

"My inclination, my duty, and the honour you do me,
"by remembering me, are all motives equally strong to
"engage my obedience to your majesty's commands;

"but a dangerous illness, from which I am but lately "recovered, has left me in so weak a condition, and the "certain knowledge I have, that my presence in the "council is not agreeable to several persons, who have "more authority there than I have, oblige me most "humbly to intreat you, not to be offended that I delay "going to court till I have recovered my strength; and "that when I do attend your majesty there, you will "permit me, before those persons whom you shall "please to appoint, to give you an account of my admi-"nistration, to lay before you the state in which I leave "the affairs of the kingdom, and the form I think ne-"cessary to be observed to keep them in the same "order and tranquillity they are now in. I must beg "your majesty to believe that this will be the sole end "of my journey, and that I have no intention or desire "to concern myself any farther in the administration "of affairs. I believe I have settled every thing relat-"ing to my employments in such a manner as the secre-"taries of the exchequer and the other officers can cer-"tify to your majesty, that my presence may be dis-"pensed with till the latter end of the year; at which "time, if my health will permit me, I shall not fail to "go to Paris, to pay all possible obedience to the king's "commands and yours; and upon this truth, I beseech "the Creator, &c. From Montrond, October 12, 1610."

This was not what the queen proposed to herself from the step she had taken to recall me; she perceived, that by delaying my return to court, I was only forming excuses for appearing there no more; or that if I did come, the part I should play there would not be very proper to oblige those who had deserted her favourite,

again to solicit his friendship, which was all she had in view; and to effect this, she made use of all my friends,* my wife, my son, and my son-in-law particularly: she began by an insinuating and gracious behaviour to them; showed such an unreserved confidence in me, added so many kind expressions, and promises so flattering to their hopes, that they were now more than ever confirmed in their belief, that I should commit a great error by laying down my employments. She afterwards sent them, one after the other, to me, charged with the most obliging letters, and the fullest assurances of her favour and esteem. I endeavoured, but in vain, to make them sensible, that all this was deep art on the queen's side; their solicitations, their intreaties, became persecution, which at length fatigued me so much, that being desirous of avoiding reproaches, to which I saw no end, and considering likewise that my compliance with requests thus earnestly urged, would expose me to no inconveniences for the present, I resolved to throw myself, though fairly warned of my danger, into all the snares that were laid for me at court, and again postponed the execution of my first design. I therefore set forwards to Paris, but showed no great eagerness to get there, since I did not reach that city till the sixteenth day after my departure from Montrond. The next morning, as I was preparing to go and pay my respects to the king, and the queen-regent, I was informed, that the king would pass the whole forenoon in the Tuilleries,

* "Bouillon had orders to go to him (M. de Sully) at Paris, on his re-"turn from his country-seat, and to assure him of the queen's regard for "him, and that she would place the same confidence in him the late king "had. He accepted the queen's offer," &c. Hist. de la Mere et du Fils, vol. I. p. 112.

and that the queen was to dine at Zamet's. I did not doubt but that my attending her there would be very acceptable to her; and indeed she received me in the most gracious manner imaginable: she several times repeated, with an air of freedom, and even pleasure, by which I myself was almost imposed upon, that she would follow no other counsels but mine. She intreated me to attach myself to her son, as I had done to the late king; she told me, that she would not suffer me to lay down my employments; that she would take such measures, that I should execute them in an absolute independence; and desired me to begin with the accounts of the finances for the year 1611, as I used to do; none of the ministers having shown themselves willing to take this care upon them during my absence, and she herself being desirous that I should continue to discharge it. The queen continued her discourse till dinner was served: I can relate only a small part of it. When she arose from table she entertained me with the disputes that had happened during the coronation: she informed me, that the nobles had made an infinite number of demands, but that she had resolved to conclude nothing till my return: however, she avoided saying any thing particular on this head, but only told me, that she would talk to me more fully the first opportunity, and would let me know what were the services she required of me on this occasion: these words seemed entirely free from reserve. The whole court appeared so gay, that it was but too probable this serious conversation was extremely disagreeable: accordingly it gave place to others more common; and at three o'clock the queen returned to the Louvre.

I went thither the next day, to pay my respects to the king, to the princes his brothers, and the princes-

ses his sisters. This part of the court was still untainted; the governesses, the nurses, the other women and officers, which composed the household of these young princes, formed a kind of separate people, to whom the memory of king Henry was still dear: the source of their tears and lamentations were not yet dried up; I wept with them, while we talked of that good prince; they conjured me, by every motive which they thought could make any impression upon my mind, by the friendship Henry had for me, by my attachment to him, not to abandon the children of a father to whom I had now no other way of acquitting myself of what I owed him. Their intreaties and their tenderness could add nothing to those sentiments of gratitude and affection which filled my heart, and, to our mutual misfortune, could not increase my power of serving them. Upon my attentively viewing the three princes, I thought I discovered in the countenance and behavour of the young king, strong indications of those happy dispositions which time has since ripened and disclosed. I imparted my thoughts to my wife when I returned home; but it was with grief that I judged, heaven would not give a long life to the second of these princes.*

I was visited by almost the whole court, with all those false shows of friendship, those praises and civilities, which never so nearly resembled the true, as when the heart has the least share in them. Conchini, who had taken care to have it insinuated to me by Zamet and

* This prince died the 16th or 17th of November in the next year, at the age of four years and an half; a quantity of water was found in his head; the too great thickness of the skull stopping the perspiration in that part; which proved the innocence of Le-Maitre, physician to the children of France, who was accused of having poisoned this young prince. Merc. Franç. ann. 1611. p. 158.

d'Argouges, that he was the person to whom I was most obliged for the gracious reception I had met with from the queen, and for her kind intentions towards me, waited three whole days in expectation that I should acknowledge this favour, by making him a complimentary visit; which the courtiers had accustomed him to look upon as a tribute due to his great influence and authority; or that I should at least send some person to discharge this duty for me. However, as he neither saw me, nor received any message from me, he condescended at length to make me a visit: but that I might not assume too much upon a step by which he conceived that he degraded himself, he was very careful to make me sensible that he came only upon his own business: and indeed our conversation turned chiefly upon his post of first gentleman of the bed-chamber; upon his pensions, which the queen had ordered should be carried to account in the same manner as those of Bellegarde; and upon a gift which he had lately received out of the offices of the gabelle in Languedoc, for which he had a brevet, obtained before the late king's death; but this I did not think proper to mention to him. I thought my answers to all this were not calculated to inspire him with any inclination to quit the subject he was upon; and for which he said he had come to me; yet he could not help it: but I believe it was not long before he repented it; for having slided in, by way of advice, that the best thing I could do, would be to comply with the queen in all things, and accommodate myself wholly to her will (which was tacitly charging me with ruining my own affairs by my obstinacy) I made him this short and severe answer, That I would pay an exact obedience to all the commands of the queen-regent, when they were for the

service of the king, the advantage of affairs, and the relief of the people; and when my honour and my conscience told me I might do it, without prejudicing either. Every word he uttered seemed to increase the aversion I had to him: he added something more, but with that caution which my behaviour to him seemed to authorise. I answered with equal coldness and reserve, and we parted very ill satisfied with each other; he, I believe, with fewer hopes than ever of moulding me to his purpose; and I full of grief at the advancement of those misfortunes which this presumptuous, insatiable man, without abilities, without experience, yet invested, with an absolute authority, was bringing upon France.

It appeared to me, from the day after this conversation, that things were greatly altered: the queen, whom I went to wait upon at the Louvre, seemed to have lost much of her former graciousness; yet she constrained herself to preserve some appearance of it, that the alteration might not be too remarkable, and to hinder me from imputing it to the conversation I had the day before with Conchini: she again mentioned to me the importunate demands of the grandees, taxed them with extravagance, and seemed resolved to refer them to the council; at which she desired I would always be present, to take care that nothing passed there contrary to the interest of the king and the state. She promised me, upon her royal word, presenting her hand at the same time to me, that she would support me there as strenuously as the late king had done. I lost all my suspicions at this declaration; I flattered myself for a moment that this princess having seriously reflected on all that had lately happened, was become sensible of the danger of

pursuing those measures they endeavoured to engage her in; but I was soon undeceived.

Prepared as I was for irregular proceedings, I could not, without extreme surprise, see that scarcely any business was transacted in the council, but what related to gifts to the nobles, to augmentations of the pensions to persons in office, the paying of debts which had been cancelled, the abatement of farms, and discharges of the farmers, and revocations of the contracts made for the rents, registries, and domains; creations of new offices, exemptions, and privileges; in a word, a thousand schemes to render the people miserable, instead of applying the treasures amassed by the late king to their relief, as, in justice, ought to have been done; since the circumstances of affairs were so changed, that the design for which they were raised could not be executed: but the rapaciousness of the great lords would have swallowed sums far more considerable. Here follow the demands, which the chief amongst them endeavoured to oblige the queen and the council to grant them. It must not be expected here, that this article can extend itself into a list, as I am afraid the other will appear, though I have cut off the demand of doubling and trebling the pensions, as a matter common to almost all the articles.

At the head of this list I shall put M. the prince who caused me to be solicited, sometimes openly, sometimes in a covert manner, to support his pretensions to the government of Château-Trompette, to that of Blaye, and to the principality of Orange, extended as far as the borders of the Rhone. The count of Soissons demanded the government of the old palace of Rouen, that of the castle of Caën, and that an edict on linen cloth should be created

for his profit, which I have mentioned in its place. The duke of Lorrain demanded the payment of the whole sum expressed in his treaty, although I had settled this affair a long time ago, when it was agreed, that that sum should be reduced two thirds. The duke of Guise solicited for a marriage between himself and madam de Montpensier; for the revocation of the rights of patents in Provence, and of offices for collecting the duties at the gates of Marseilles: he demanded likewise that his debts should be paid. The duke of Maïenne demanded other sums, besides those expressed in his treaty. D'-Eguillon, a gift of thirty thousand crowns, the government of Bresse, and the city of Bourg; and the embassy of Spain, with excessive appointments. Joinville, the government of Auvergne, or the first that became vacant. The duke of Nevers demanded the property of the gabelles of Réthelois, with the governments of Mézieres and Saint-Menchout. The duke d'Epernon, a body of infantry kept constantly on foot; the reversion of his government for his son; fortifications to be raised at Augoulême and at Xaintes; Metz, and the county of Messin, taken from Montigny. The duke of Bouillon demanded a sum of money, for the payment of old debts, which he pretended were due to him; the aides, tailles, and gabelles, of the viscounty of Turenne, for his use; and that the homage of this viscounty should be reduced to a simple homage; the arrears of his garrisons and his pensions during his exile; the right of holding general assemblies of the reformed religion. The chancellor demanded the money arising from the petty seals, his salary to be doubled, and letters of nobility in Normandy. Villeroi demanded, that a garrison should be

maintained at Lyons, the royal lieutenancy of the province taken from Saint-Chaumont: a marshal's staff for his son d'Alincourt, the repeal of a bargan which I had made for the repurchase of the crown lands in that province, and the mortgages of his registries and upon the king's lands.

It will be easly imagined that Conchini's demands, were not less considerable than those of any other; a marshal's staff, the governments of Bourg, Dieppe, and Point-de-l'Arche; a donation of the money produced by the offices of the gabelle of Languedoc, passed in the form of a comptant; the profit arising from the reduction made upon public works, granted to Moisset and to Feydeau: such was his portion. Château-vieux, the chevalier de Sillery, Dolle, Déagent, Arnaud the intendant, Duret the physician, all the members of the queen's privy council, who solicited so well for others, did not forget their own affairs. It would be almost the same thing to enumerate all those persons of any quality who had a share in this profuse distribution of pensions, gratuities, privileges, appointments, &c. as to name those who were comprehended in this list, for every one had some claim there; the princes, governors of provinces, the lieutenant-civil, the prevot des marchands, and even the societies and sovereign courts; all the officers of the crown were to have their pensions augmented twenty-four thousand livres each; and the salaries of every member of the council raised in proportion, and their number to be considerably increased. In a word, there seemed to be a general conspiracy to pillage the royal treasure, which was now considered as a lawful prize.

The indignation which I felt in myself against a licentiousness that degenerated into an attempt upon the

royal authority, would not permit me to examine, whether the resolution I had taken, singly to oppose this multitude of rapacious courtiers, was absolutely prudent; but this nothing could persuade me from doing, while the place I held in the council authorised such a conduct. My honour, my conscience, my reputation, which I was called upon to support; the interest of the king and the people, whose only defender I considered myself, would not permit me to attend to my own safety: the last words, nay, the intreaties of the queen-regent, gave me a right to oppose them: and though I was very sensible that she did not desire I should understand them literally, yet, all things considered, I was going to render her a service so essential, that she could not, or ought not, to disavow it: and yet I had another motive, which I will not scruple to declare, since I would have my most secret sentiments known to the reader. That desire of glory, that self love, which, when under the direction of reason and justice, has always appeared to me to have something great and noble in it; self-love, I say, dictated to me, that since sooner or later, I must necessarily be removed from the ministry, I should risk but little by hastening the moment of my dismission; and that I should gain a great deal by giving a convincing proof, that this disgrace would not have happened to me, had I not opposed the unjustifiable measures I saw pursued by the council, and disdained the servile compliance of the rest of the courtiers: there remains to unfortunate virtue this last recompense for the disappointment of its good designs, that it shines with redoubled splendour amidst opposition and persecution.

The queen soon left me only this consolation in the painful labours I began to sustain; all her conduct serv-

ed to show me, that she had only recalled me to Paris, and opposed me to the whole court at this tumultuous time, to reduce me to the fatal alternative of incurring the public contempt if I betrayed my duty, or particular enemies (which was still more to be dreaded) if I discharged it. A demand, which I had rendered of no effect in full council, at the risk of making myself a thousand cruel and implacable enemies, was afterwards privately granted as a gratuity by this princess and her confidant.

It is not my design to give a detail of all the schemes that, during this short time, were set on foot in the council, nor of what was said or done to render them ineffectual; it would be, in reality, to describe so many suits, where, as in law, they did not fail to make use of all the methods commonly practised to corrupt a judge too rigidly just, and against which I was so much the more incited to exclaim, as they attempted likewise to carry their point, either by secret plots or by open cabals. I shall give the reader one example, which will serve to show, that the evil was great enough to demand remedies no less violent than those I made use of. The article relating to Villeroi, or rather to d'Alincourt, is not the least curious or important of those which the reader has already had some account of.

When d'Alincourt required, that a strong garrison should be placed in the city of Lyons, of which he was governor, and maintained at the king's expense, he had two ends to answer by it; one was, to increase his income, by the profits arising from this garrison; for indeed he had occasion for great riches, to enable him to live as he proposed to do, not merely as a marshal of

France (a dignity which he expected to be raised to in a very little time) but with the state and retinue of a prince: vain pageantry, and doubly ridiculous in one who had only large possessions to supply the disadvantages of a mean birth. The other was, to compel the Lyonnois, by the terror with which so many forces would inspire them, to sacrifice to him their most ancient rights and privileges, which he had for a long time designed to invade. As for the treaty made for the redemption of the royal domain, which in that province amounted to twelve hundred thousand livres, he was inclined to demand the suppression of it, because those who were concerned in that affair secured to him a present of an hundred thousand livres, if he could by any means hinder that redemption from taking place.

His designs, however, were crossed by two vigilant enemies, these were, the whole city of Lyons, and Saint-Chaumont, the king's lieutenant in that province; but to these he opposed the chancellor Sillery, and Villeroi his father, both very powerful in the council, and in high favour with the queen; these he set on to solicit for him, and with the more eagerness, because he found by my discourse, when he came to intreat me to be favourable to his pretensions, that he could not depend upon me in the council, before whom these demands were to be laid; he saw plainly, that he would have occasion for all his batteries: but he did not doubt of his success, when he was informed that his father and Sillery had brought over Conchini to his party, who afterwards prevailed upon the queen to espouse it likewise.

We were all assembled in the great closet, where a council was to be held upon this affair, when the queen

came up and spoke to me in favour of d'Alincourt: I told her majesty with great frankness, that she must not expect I would give my vote for a compliance with two such unjust proposals; that it was not reasonable the king should lose twelve hundred thousand livres, to put one hundred thousand in the pocket of M. d'Alincourt; that this was to open the way for every one else to get the like treaties for redemption of the domain, and other parts of the royal revenue, (which amounted to near fifty millions,) revoked over all the kingdom: that I would as strenuously oppose his other demand, although I knew it would be alleged, that the council had no right to take cognizance of it, and that it was only laid before it to get the first authorised; that by these measures we were going to expose one of the chief cities of the kingdom, hitherto well affected and loyal, to the danger of violating their allegiance, merely to gratify an unreasonable request, since, by the last treaty, which I myself had concluded with cardinal Aldobrandini for the duke of Savoy, his majesty being to keep possession of Bresse, and of both the borders of the Rhone, Lyons was no longer a frontier city, and having no more neighbours to fear, had no farther occasion for a garrison in it.

The queen seemed to be satisfied with these reasons, and turned towards Villeroi, as if to make him approve of them likewise; but he was not so easily repulsed; he gave her reasons in answer to mine, some good and some bad; and when he came to the article of the garrison, he told her, that it was indeed true, the Spaniards and Savoyards were not such near neighbours of this city as formerly, therefore it was not against their attempts that it was necessary to secure the city of Ly-

ons, since they were moreover upon the point of becoming our friends and allies, but that the true enemies to be feared were the Huguenots, who being now in a better condition, had probably a greater inclination than ever to make an attempt upon that city; he named Lesdiguieres in particular, as one from whom most danger was to be apprehended.

Berengueville overheard what Villeroi said to the queen, and repeated every word to me: this confirmed to me the truth of what I had heard concerning the secret council held at the house of Ubaldini, the pope's nuncio. I saw with indignation, that the sole view of these gentlemen was to set the Catholics and Protestants in France, as well as in all Europe, at variance. I was no less shocked at Villeroi's accusation of a man allied to my family, and rising up hastily, I went towards the queen, who was still listening to him, and told her, that I had forgot to forewarn her of a thing which I was as well assured of as if I had been a witness of it, and this was, that Villeroi, in his design of rendering her favourable to his son's pretensions, cared but little by what means this was brought about; and did not scruple to make the most false and malignant representations against the Protestants, without even excepting one, whom a thousand great and good services ought to place out of the reach of suspicion; that his malice went so far as to treat them as enemies whom France had more reason to fear than Spain itself; that if her majesty, judging Villeroi's arguments and mine to be of equal weight, should resolve to view the Protestants and the Spaniards in the same light, nothing remained for her to do (and I looked steadfastly upon him) but to exclude us both from the council. This

was a severe stroke upon Villeroi; but this man, who had neither abilities to speak in public, nor knew how to give his vote in the council, had not a single word to say in answer to me; indeed his surprise, and the secret reproaches of his own conscience, might well render him dumb upon this occasion: all he did was to go to that part of the room where the chancellor and the duke d'Epernon were conferring together; and the queen also, quitting her place without answering me, went to join the count of Soissons and marshal Brissac who were talking in private. I foreboded no good from these several connections.

Nothing was done this day in d'Alincourt's affair, and I sometimes flattered myself that the measures I had taken would hinder it from being resumed; but it was only put off till his father and himself, the chancellor and his brother, by new cabals with Conchini and the counsellors, secured all the votes in their favour, even that of Bethune my brother, who came to me with an intention to make one effort more to soften me: he represented to me, that my opposition was in vain, and would have no other consequence but to bring every body upon my back; that I should have the mortification to see that my example would not be followed even by my nearest relations. I replied, that I never expected any thing else from him, but that I was absolutely determined to continue to the end faithful in the performance of my duty; and I kept my word; for in the first council that was held on this occasion, seeing that the counsellor to whose charge it fell that day, was ready to make his report, I asked him hastily, what was the business? he replied, that it related to some proposals which were to be made concerning the do-

main in Lyonnois. I interrupted him, saying, that I was well assured d'Alincourt, who was most interested in that affair, had formed so strong a party for him in the council, by the mediation of his friends and relations, that it was already resolved on, even before it was laid before it; but that I protested against it, as being absolutely contrary to his majesty's interest; and that I desired a certificate of my protestation from the clerk, to send it to the parliament to be registered there, in order that this writing might one day serve to show the king the bad conduct pursued by his council after the death of the king his predecessor.*

* This account perfectly agrees with what is said in l'Histoire de la Mere et du Fils: "The duke of Sully," says that history, "continued to exercise "his office for a fortnight or three weeks after the coronation was perform-"ed, at which time the disputes on account of the Swiss at Lyons, which I "have spoke of before, were renewed, because Villeroi wanted to have "their pay charged on the general receipts of that city. The duke of "Sully was so much out of temper on this score, that not content with "maintaining, it was unreasonable to load the king with so great an ex-"pense, when the inhabitants of Lyons were sufficient to keep guard them-"selves, as they had always been used to do, he also treated the chancellor, "who sided with Villeroi, roughly, telling him, they were all agreed "amongst themselves to ruin the king's affairs. As this was an affront to "all these ministers in common, they joined their endeavours to ruin the "duke, the harshness of whose temper was not to be softened." This writer afterwards relates the several steps that were taken to unite the ministers with the count of Soissons, the marquis d'Ancre, the marquis de Cœuvres, and others, against the duke of Sully. As this author is one of the duke of Sully's enemies, I quote him on purpose to confirm the truth of what the duke says, that he might have kept his posts, if he would have joined in the measures of the new council; and that his perseverance in the support of justice, the public interest, and the late king's plan of government, was the cause of his disgrace. All men of sense have not, however, given the same judgment on his inflexibility as the author I am speaking of, though all the enemies of that minister have agreed with him in it. In the appendix to the Merc. Frang. for the year 1610, p. 9, we find an entire discourse on this subject, which justifies him in a manner extremely to his

These last words, which, it must be granted, were very severe, had no other effect, than to suspend, for a short time, the deliberation they were preparing for. No one replied; a general consternation seized all that were present: the chancellor alone, without showing any emotion, said to the counsellor, "Lay other papers "before us, and let us proceed to affairs of a different "kind; we shall find a time for this when these heats "and animosities are over, as it generally happens in "things that are most contested." The counsellor obeyed; the other matters were discussed; d'Alincourt's demand, when it was next laid before the council, was granted without opposition: but this was not till I myself was banished from the board; which happened in so short a time afterwards, that it may be said it was by this vigorous effort I finished my career.

I had now no other part to take but to retire from court. I had given sufficient proofs to all France, that it was not for want of the most strenuous efforts on my side that the affairs of the state were plunged into dis-

honour. The Memoires de Villeroi, vol. III. p. 259, also speak of him in the following manner: "The change which the said sieur de Sully made in "the condition of France, by retrieving her from a state of indigence, and "rendering her rich and opulent, by his economy and industry, sufficient-"ly proves his abilities: his free remonstrances to the king, and his oppo-"sition to all great men, discover his probity; and his having been able to "stand his ground amongst so many enemies, without sinking under his "own apprehensions, or their threats, shows how great were his prudence "and courage: even those who envy him are compelled to own, that he "alone is more useful to the public, and has more knowledge of business, "than all the rest together; and provided he would abate a little of his aus-"terity, he would be a servant worthy of your majesty. Though they en-"deavour to keep him from having any concern in the management of af-"fairs, yet they cannot stop him from freely speaking his sentiments of the "little respect paid to the memory of the late king, and of the small defer-"ence shown to our young prince, &c."

order: it was become impossible for me to apply any remedy to the increasing evil. This no one doubted of: I struggled to no purpose; and all that I had for the price of my labours and my good intentions, was the hatred of those persons whose interest it would have been to second them: Conchini employed his favour, the princes of the blood their authority, the other persons in office their credit, only to render me odious. I saw nothing preparing for me for the future, but new mortifications and other troubles. All my actions, my words, nay, my silence itself, witnessed against persons who were inwardly struck with the injustice of these reproaches. My post of superintendant of the finances was eagerly coveted by two princes of the blood, each of whom was made to hope that he should gain it when I was driven from court. By staying there too long, I exposed myself to the danger of being violently dispossessed of all my other employments. Those of my friends, who were most sincere, and best knew the plots that were forming against me, were continually giving me counsels which I was convinced deserved to have more weight with me, than the solicitations of some of my relations, who were either carried away by a mistaken tenderness for me, or a regard to their own interest. I therefore resolved to defer no longer the resignation of my two employments of superintendant of the finances, and governor of the Bastile, which were the most panted after, as by them they could dispose of the revenues and treasures of the king, hoping to purchase by this sacrifice, which might have still some appearance of being voluntary, the confirmation of all my other dignities,* which it was not in the power

* The duke of Sully at that time bore the following titles: Maximilian de Bethune, knight, duke of Sully, peer of France, sovereign prince of Hen-

of my enemies to deprive me of, especially if I took the precaution of removing for ever out of their sight an object which could never fail of re-animating their hatred, by the effect of an unavoidable jealousy, while I continued amongst them; and, that I might do all at once, I fixed myself in a resolution to quit the court, and Paris itself, at the same time that I resigned all further share in the administration of affairs.

I prepared to execute this design in the beginning of the year 1611.* The queen appeared desirous of op-

richemont and Boisbelle, marquis of Rosny, count of Dourand, lord of Orval, Montrond, and St. Amand, baron of Espienuel, Bruyeres-le-Chastel, Villebon, La-Chapelle, Novion, Baugy, and Bontin, chancellor to the king in all the councils, captain-lieutenant of two hundred gens d'armes under the queen's command, master-general and captain-general of the artillery, surveyor-general of France, superintendant of the king's finances, fortifications, and buildings, governor, and the king's lieutenant general of the provinces of Poitou, Chatelleraud, and Laudun, governor of Mante and Gergeau, and captain of the castle of the Bastile.

* Here follow several accounts of this event, very different from each other: "The year 1611 was begun with the retirement of M. de Sully, who, "at the instigation, and by the intrigues of the two princes of the blood, "was drove from the management of affairs. The superintendance of the "finances and the custody of the king's treasures, were taken from him. "The queen also took the bastile out of his hands, and gave the custody "thereof to M. de Châteauneuf [it should be Châteauvieux.] The finan- "ces were put under the direction of messrs. de Châteauneuf, the presi- "dent de Thou, and Jeannin: but the last was also made comptroller gene- "ral of the finances, which threw the sole management of them into his "hands, to the exclusion of the other two, who assisted only in the direc- "tion." Bassompierre's Memoirs, Vol. I. p. 308.

"The 24th of this month (January) M. de Sully quitted the arsenal. "There is a report that a brevet is issued to appoint him marshal of France, "with a grant of some thousands of crowns as a recompense to him. He "has voluntarily resigned the direction of the finances, *tanquam, è speculo prævidens tempestatem futuram.*" Journal de l'Etoile, page 256.

"The prince of Condé and the count of Soissons spoke the first of it to "the queen, the ministers seconded them, and the marquis d'Ancre gave "him the finishing stroke. Thus he found himself under the necessity of

posing it; but this was only for form's sake. Here follows the letter she wrote to me upon this occasion.

"retiring in the beginning of February, &c." Hist. de la Mere et du Fils, Vol. I. p. 235.

"Some have written that the duke of Sully shortly after the reconciliation of the count of Soissons and the duke of Guise, voluntarily resigned "into the queen's hands, as well the bastile, as the superintendancy of the "finances. Others say, that making an offer to the queen to give up all "his posts, he was taken at his word: others have spoken differently of it. "He himself says the contrary in the letter he wrote to the queen, which "was printed shortly after." Merc. Franç. anno 1611.

This letter is afterwards recited, but is not mentioned in Sully's Memoirs. The memoirs of the Regency of Mary de Medicis, Vol. I. p. 57, differ also from the foregoing accounts, asserting that the duke of Sully earnestly solicited the queen to dismiss him, which she with great reluctance consented to.

There may possibly be some truth in both these opinions: namely, that the duke of Sully would, doubtless, have freely consented to keep his posts, provided he could have enjoyed them with the same authority, though not with the same satisfaction, as under the late king: but the efforts he made for that purpose alienated the queen, the great men, and the ministers from him, and at last increased his disgust, as he found all his endeavours would be in vain. There is nothing in Matthieu's account discordant with this notion: on the contrary, he agrees with what is said in these Memoirs. "The duke of Sully," says he, "after the death of Henry the Great, im-"mediately saw he should not possess the same authority under the new "reign as he did under the last; and that the enmity of the count of Sois-"sons would bring on his ruin. As the direction of the finances had already "been taken from him, the queen was advised to deprive him also of the "bastile. This was esteemed so bold a step, that it was said Henry the "Great would not have dared to have taken it, for fear of stirring up those "of the duke's religion to resent it. She, nevertheless, saw him readily "obey her command to resign the bastile to Châteauvieux, one of her "knights of honour. Had he made any opposition, some of the great men "at court, who were afraid his steadiness might be drawn into precedent, "would have rendered this dismission more difficult. As soon as he was "stript of his office, he saw the prejudice resulting from his having so easily "submitted; and desired the queen's permission to go to Rosny, saying he "would not stay there above three days. When he was there those of his "religion cautioned him not to go back to court, where he had been so ill "treated. His wife and brother, on the contrary, urged him to return, and "he did so accordingly: but those who had been of the opposite opinion

"Cousin,

"I hear, with concern, that you have taken a reso-
"lution to discharge yourself of the care of the king my
"son's affairs, particularly of those relating to the finan-
"ces, contrary to the hope I had conceived, that you
"would continue to perform the duties of that employ-
"ment as you did in the time of the late king my lord.
"I intreat you to think well of this design before you
"put it in execution, and let me know your last determi-
"nation, that I may regulate mine upon it. So beseech-
"ing God, &c."

Paris, Jan. 24, 1611.

My answer to this letter being such as the queen probably expected, she sent Bullion to me two days afterwards with the brevets of discharge from my two employments, of superintendant of the finances and governor of the bastile, in the most authentic and, at the same time, most advantageous form, for me Her majesty in these brevets declared, that it was at my repeated solicitation she had granted me leave to resign these pla-

"withdrew themselves from him, esteeming it a meanness in him not to
"show a greater resentment for such ill usage. The queen received him
"favourably; but the count of Soissons caused him to be kept from having
"any concern in business, which had been so much under his immediate
"management in the late king's reign. Seeing himself thus fallen both
"from his credit and employments, he went to Sully; and not thinking him-
"self in safety enough there, he retired into the province of Bourbon."
This writer adds, that one of the principal motives which induced the Protestants to endeavour to increase his discontent, was their desire of having his great fortune engaged for the advantage of the common cause: but that he submitted to the prudent advice given him by la Vallée, the lieutenant-general of the artillery, who has been mentioned before, to keep himself quite retired without having any concern in the quarrels which soon after happened. Ib. p. 22.

ces; and that I should not hereafter, upon any pretence whatever, be questioned concerning my conduct while I held them.

To these brevets was added another, dated January 27, by which her majesty, in consideration of the services the late king had received from me during a long course of years, and of which she made a most honourable mention, granted me a donation of three hundred thousand livres, to be paid out of the royal treasury, free from the duty of the fifth and tenth penny, and the duty given to the order of the Holy Ghost, from which his majesty was desirous I should be exempted. The letters I received the following days from their majesties, either contained orders to give up the castle of the bastile to the sieur de Chateauvieux, whom they had made king's lieutenant of it, or acquittals for some jewels of the crown which I had delivered back into their hands, part of which consisted of a jewel called the *licorne*, and some other rings and jewels, for which a promissory note of mine for ten thousand livres was lodged with Puget, who now returned it to me, and part of three large rubies, for which I had given my receipt to madam le Grand, when I took them out of her hands, where they were mortgaged.

I employed the remainder of the time I staid in Paris in regulating my domestic affairs, in a detail of which the reader would find nothing to merit his attention, except probably the counsels I gave to my secretaries. I had generally six principal ones, as well for the business of my four chief offices of the crown, as for any extraordinary affairs I might have to transact with the court, and I found it necessary to have a great many other clerks

or transcribers under them; but those I shall mention here were my chief secretaries, whose abilities and exact discharge of their several duties well deserved that I should give them a share in affairs of importance, and my confidence in nice and delicate conjunctures; among these, the four brothers of the name of Arnaud were favoured in a particular manner by me. The eldest died while he was yet young, many years before the king was assassinated. I had so great a regard for the second, that, from being my secretary only, I procured him to be made counsellor of state, and intendant of the finances: the third went into the army, and was made a colonel of a regiment of horse: and to the last I gave the post of treasurer of France, and that of overseer of the highways. All my other secretaries were provided for in proportion. I believe I shall not be accused of having broken one of the laws of nature, which directs that the adherents to us, or, perhaps, we say more properly, to our places, should not be disappointed of those rewards, which it is in our power to bestow upon them according to their merit. Duret was preferred to be a treasurer of France, president of the chamber of accounts, and comptroller-general of the finances; Renouard was made auditor of accounts; la Clavelle overseer of the bridges and causeways; du Maurier, who had quitted the duke of Bouillon's service for mine, was employed in public affairs, to which his genius and inclination led him, and has been since ambassador to Holland; Murat was made treasurer of the extraordinary of wars; la Fond, whom I have often mentioned in these Memoirs, acquired the favour and confidence of the late king, who, among other benefits that he bestowed upon him, made him overseer

of his furniture; Gillot was made secretary of the ordnance. All these men were truly sensible how much they were going to lose by my retreat, and they omitted no sort of entreaties or methods to prevail upon me to alter my resolution. I will do most of them the justice to declare, that I believe, by acting thus, they thought they were serving my interest at least as much as their own; but as for the two Arnauds, the eldest especially, and two or three others, they were but little affected with my purpose. They would even have been grieved if I had altered my opinion; yet it was they who opposed it most. Arnaud the elder added, on this occasion, hypocrisy to avarice and ingratitude: meanly as he thought of Jeannin's abilities for the office of superintendant of the finances, for which he looked upon himself as much better qualified, he was one of those who solicited Conchini most earnestly to procure it for that minister, who, he flattered himself, would leave the chief management of it to him.

I penetrated into the inmost recesses of their hearts; I discovered views and designs which they probably imagined were sufficiently concealed; but I suppressed a resentment unworthy of me; and, taking them aside one after the other, I gave them such advice as, from the present conjuncture of the times, and the knowledge I had of their dispositions, was most likely to advance their fortunes: I told the elder Arnaud, that he had it in his power to make his court very successfully to the queen, by the great number of excellent memoirs upon the most important affairs of the finances, which were lodged in his hands, and that this sacrifice might lose no part of its merit, I advised him to offer it by madam de Con-

chini, seriously recommending it to him, at the same time, to devote himself faithfully to her service; I advised his brother to use his utmost endeavours to obtain the favour of the chancellor, of Villeroi, Jeannin, and, above all, of Conchini, who was the only oracle which it was necessary for him to consult in the exercise of his employment; and I desired the colonel himself to make his court to those very persons.

Duret, besides all those, might apply himself to the commander* and to Dollé; and this I recommended to him to do. Du Maurier was scarcely known to any but Villeroi; by carefully cultivating his friendship, which I assured him would be sufficient, and with the knowledge he had of foreign affairs, joined to the talents he possessed of speaking well, and of writing still better, he might easily obtain of the queen and the favourite, some honourable employment. To Murat, who was accountable for his conduct to the secretary of state, I recommended my interests at court; but to discharge this trust cautiously, and not without first asking Villeroi's consent. As for la Clavelle, his subtle wit, and proneness to flattery, secured him all possible success with the ministers, and even with d'Escures, who had more power than any body else to block up his way in the discharge of his office. La Fond's employment subjecting him wholly to the queen's will, or rather to Conchini's, he had but one path to follow, which I pointed out to him. The advice I gave to Renouard, was not to seek any other recommendation from his own court, except the importance which the force of his understanding might give him amongst his associates; and I desired he would

* Noel de Sillery, brother to the chancellor.

add to this employment, that of taking care of my domestic affairs at Paris. Gillot I placed with my son, to superintend the affairs of the ordnance; and, that every thing might be kept in the same order in which I had left it, I gave to my inferior secretaries and clerks such advice as I thought most suitable to their humbler station, and obliged those who showed most reluctance to comply with my measures, to confess, at length, that, in what I had recommended to them, I had a particular view to that necessity which sooner or later would force them to follow the rules I had prescribed. This I accompanied with a compliment to each, and an obliging command to follow my directions, which had such an appearance of sincerity, that they yielded to my arguments; and they have not repented. I had no intention, however, to keep no more secretaries in my service; but, being now out of place myself, I had no occasion for men that were in, for this employment. I therefore took two new secretaries into my family, whose chief business, in a cabinet no longer occupied with the affairs of state, was collecting and preparing these Memoirs for the public.

This done, and burying in eternal oblivion those hopes, desires, resentments, and regrets, which any other in my situation might have formed, I bid a lasting adieu to the court, and with the same indifference as if it had not for so long a course of years been to me the theatre of glory, wealth and happiness.* I lost at one stroke a

* "On Saturday, the 5th of February, the duke of Sully left Paris, "after returning the grant he had received of 100,000 crowns. The "dutches of Sully blamed his haughtiness and pride in doing so." L' Etoile, ib. p. 257.

king who was my benefactor and my support, and with him my fortune, my friends, and my favour. This loss generally brings along with it so many other mortifications, that, to those who have suffered it, it appears but the least part of their unhappiness. If this additional ill-fortune is always the effect of particular enmities, certainly no one was more exposed to them than myself; yet history can furnish but few examples of ministers and favourites in disgrace who were as much honoured and respected in their fall as I was; for it sometimes happens that public esteem succeeds to private favour in supporting those who are unfortunate only, and when it does not form a counterpoise strong enough to incline the balance to their side, it is because these supposed oppressed persons have always some weak place by which they may be attacked, and which they find it very difficult to defend. Acknowledged probity and innocence will always have the advantage over envy, even at the very time when she seems most to triumph. My enemies, therefore (for I have a right to apply this maxim to myself,) could satisfy but a small part of their rage against me, because the victory they had gained was one of those shameful advantages which it is thought necessary to conceal, and which is not enjoyed wholly without remorse; nor did the satisfaction my enemies felt for my disgrace, hinder some true Frenchmen, who eagerly embraced every occasion of showing their respect for the memory of the late king, from honouring a man who expected no more than to set out on his exile in privacy and peace. I was attended at my leaving Paris by more than three hundred horse.

It was not while I was present, and in a condition to defend myself, that I expected to see my enemies use

their utmost efforts against me: envy is a passion whose characteristic is cowardice, no less than malice and detraction: I was always persuaded that they would seize eagerly the advantages my absence afforded them. In effect, a few days were scarce elapsed after my arrival at Sully, when the whole court was filled with reports which tended not only to give a bad impression of my conduct in public affairs, but also to render me sufficiently suspected to afford them some pretence for commencing a prosecution against me, the shame and grief of which was all they desired I should suffer.* On this occasion I took such measures as I thought every wise man ought to take, which was to disarm envy the most effectual way, by preventing, with frequent letters, the minds of their majesties from being prejudiced to my disadvantage.

In the first letter, which I addressed to the king and queen, I complained that bad designs were formed against me: I offered to justify my conduct by every method they could propose, and even, if necessary, by new services: and, after giving their majesties the strongest assurances of obedience, fidelity, and innocence, I represented to them with some freedom, that, if they had been as well persuaded of that innocence as they had given me room to believe, I should have received proofs of it ere now, by the orders they would have been pleas-

* "He had no sooner retired," says the Histoire de la Mere et du Fils, p. 128, "but many prepared to pursue the victory over him, in order to "come in for a share of his spoils.—But the queen at last, with great rea- "son, changed her measures, it not being held reasonable to treat with ill "usage a person whose services had been so advantageous to France, "without any other pretext, than that, by his having been useful to the "public, he had at the same time been so to himself."

ed to give for the performances of the several promises they had made me, with respect to my places, and to the gratuities which the king had granted me: that the first artifice practised by my enemies, had been to defer, and afterwards to hinder, if they could, the effect of those promises, which, being so many proofs of their majesties' good opinion of me, while they subsisted, it was dangerous to attempt any thing against me; and it was for this reason that I was so solicitous for their being accomplished.

To this letter I received an answer from the queen such as I could have wished: she observed in it, that my past services, and my present inclinations, were so well known to the king and to her, that it was not in the power of any person whatever to alter their sentiments with respect to me: that hitherto she had not perceived it had been attempted; but, if it should, it would be to no purpose: she assured me it was not owing to any ill-will towards me, but to chance alone, that some little difficulties had been found in performing the agreements between his majesty and me; but that they should be observed with the utmost exactness. This letter is dated, March 7, 1611.

It was not long before I sent the queen another letter, of which I cannot dispense with myself from giving the reader some account, because what I there declared concerning the state of my private affairs, was exactly conformable to the situation I found myself in upon my retiring from public business. I began with recalling to her remembrance the open profession I had always made of attachment to her person, and the proofs I had given of it, as well before as since her

marriage; and here I mentioned certain particular circumstances, when I drew upon myself some reproaches from the late king for supporting her against him on occasions when I thought I was labouring equally for both their interests. This led me to an eulogium on the good qualities of the queen-regent, on which I founded the opinion I was, in this letter, to appear to have entertained, that she had no part in the persecutions raised against me at court.

This article I treated at great length, it being that for which the letter was chiefly written. I gave the queen to understand that I was well informed of the disadvantageous reports which were spread against me in court; of the obstacles my enemies were incessantly raising to hinder me from settling peaceably my private affairs; and, in a word, of the perquisites which their majesties proposed to allow me in the offices, of which I could not be deprived. I assumed a right from the good intentions which I supposed this princess had towards me, founded upon the repeated assurances she had given me of her esteem, to complain to her of those persons who rendered these intentions ineffectual. I insisted particularly upon the favour and protection I had reason to expect from their majesties while I was making that disposition of my affairs, to which, for the sake of peace, I had sacrificed my interest, when it would have been so much the easier to have disputed the ground with my adversaries, as the motives by which they acted being almost generally known, I had every advantage over them which I could desire. I here laid down concisely the principal points of my management, and my share of that wealth with which, by my labours

and economy, I had enriched the kingdom till the year 1610, when I saw all the measures I had taken to keep every thing in the same state of order and regularity at once overturned and destroyed; adding, that time would show whether the kingdom owed most obligations to my enemies or to me.

I took this opportunity to obviate some of their most specious accusations: I represented to the queen the great folly and absurdity they were guilty of in exclaiming against me for the vast riches they said I had acquired during the course of my favour with the late king, when, in their hearts, they despised me for not making greater advantages of so fair an opportunity, and were fully resolved not to follow my example. The narrow bounds of a letter would not permit me to say all I could in my own justification: I only observed to the queen, that it was easy for me to prove that I had acquired that wealth, which they imputed to me as a crime, either by frugality and economy, or by the bounty of a master too generous and too grateful to leave a minister unrewarded who devoted himself with an assiduity, rarely seen in a superintendant, to continual labours for the public good:* that it was sufficient for me that all the gratuities I had received from my master only, which he laid his commands upon me to accept; and this I could prove as clearly as the use to which I had applied them, which was more, I believed, than those who were going to suc-

* He retired loaded with riches, which the time he had been in "the "ministry had enabled him to acquire.—It may be said with great truth, "that the first years of his administration were very profitable to him; and "if any should say; the last were no less so, it must be allowed that, if they "were advantageous to him, they were greatly so to the public." Hist. de la Mere et du Fils, p. 123. One single proof from an enemy, such as the author of this history, will counterbalance a thousand others.

ceed me would be able to say at the close of their administration. I told the queen that I hoped I should not be charged either with vanity or malice, if I affirmed that the wrong they were now attempting to do me, was a real injury to the state: that I never desired to be continued in the direction of the finances, but for the king's advantage; and that having their majesties for judges of my actions, upon whose equity and goodness I relied to hinder my enemies from commencing a prosecution against me, the privacy I was going to enjoy would no longer appear dangerous to me: but, on the contrary, I should find it so much the more pleasing, as it began now to be suitable to my age, and would be interrupted with no reproaches, nor embittered by any remorse.

Towards the close of this letter, through which I had occasionally interspersed many offers of service, assurances of fidelity, and all those expressions of respect and obedience, which I thought I owed to the queen, I told her, that before I set out for my government, whither my affairs called me, I would give her notice of it, and receive her orders: and, if she thought I could be of any use to her in the assembly of the Protestants, to which I was summoned, I would go thither with the same disposition and readiness to serve her as the late king my master. Such was the purport of this long letter, which the queen answered by another, dated April 24. It was conceived almost in the same terms as her former letter: she left me at liberty to go to Poitou, or to the assembly of the Protestants, and to act there as I should judge proper, knowing better than any other (those were her words) how I could be most useful to the king in either of those places.

But what completely secured me against all reverses of fortune was, that her majesty being desirous to give a public proof of her esteem for me, and how little it was in the power of my enemies to hurt me, granted me an augmentation of my pension, for which the brevet was expedited in less than a month after the date of her last letter. This augmentation was twenty-four thousand livres; so that altogether my pensions at that time amounted to forty-eight thousand four hundred livres a year. It was expressed in the brevet, that this additional pension commenced on the first of January, 1611, although it was dated the 20th of May; and that her majesty thought herself under an obligation to grant it to me, as well in acknowledgment for my past services, of which the most honourable mention was made, as to enable me to continue them for the future.

Notwithstanding this, I do not think myself dispensed with from proving that article of the foregoing letter which regards my wealth. A superintendant of the finances, and any man to whom the management of the treasures of the kingdom has been entrusted, is accountable to the public for all his actions; nor would I refuse, if called upon, to lay before it my most secret thoughts, since it has been always my study to regulate them in such a manner, that they would, if known, not only subject me to no censure, for this is an indispensible obligation upon all men, but also that they might in some respect seem worthy to serve for a model to those who, succeeding to my place, would have the same engagements to fulfil. Happy if I could have reason to hope that this model would be effaced with one more perfect. I shall continue therefore to give the public such an ex-

act statement of my domestic affairs, following the method I began a few pages above, that any other person may be as well acquainted with them as I am myself. To spare my readers the trouble of collecting together at too great a distance the articles of a broken calculation, and that they may view the whole at one single glance, I shall here lay before them all that has been said on that subject in different parts of these Memoirs, beginning with a faithful account of my whole yearly revenue, according to the order of time when I was invested with those offices, from whence the greatest part of it arose.*

I was, in the first place, while Henry the great was yet but king of Navarre, preferred to the post of first gentleman of his bed-chamber, together with that of counsellor of Navarre: the salaries of both amounted to two thousand livres a year. When he became king of France, he made me counsellor of state, for which I had a like allowance, which, with a pension of three thousand six hundred livres, increased my income with the yearly sum of five thousand six hundred livres. My company of men at arms brought me in four thousand livres a year. The king giving me afterwards two brevets, one for

* The following memoir is an unanswerable refutation of a reflection cast on the duke of Sully by the Histoire de la Mere et du Fils, p. 130; and expressed in these words: "In fine, if during his administration, he had managed the king's affairs well, he had not forgot to take care of his own. This "appeared more evidently from his having come into office with only six "thousand livres a year, and going out with more than a hundred and fifty "thousand livres, which had obliged him to withdraw out of the exchequer "the rent-roll and inventory of his estate and effects, which had been re-"gistered there, when he came into the management of the finances, that "it might not appear against him, under his own hand and seal, how much "he had enriched himself out of the king's money."

counsellor of parliament, without salary, and the other for counsellor of the finances, three thousand six hundred livres were on this occasion added to my pensions. His majesty having thought proper to fix the gratuities, pensions, gifts, &c. which he designed to bestow upon me as superintendant of the finances, to a certain sum, which should be all comprehended in one article, this sum, which amounted to twenty thousand crowns, encreased my revenue with ten thousand eight hundred livres a year more: add to this the produce of all my other dignities and employments; the office of surveyor-general of the roads of France, and surveyor in particular of the isle of France, brought me in ten thousand livres a year; that of master-general of the ordnance, comprehending the salary, profits, and pensions annexed to it, twenty-four thousand livres. I always placed under one article the sums arising from the government of Poitou, the superintendance of the buildings, that of the fortifications, ports, &c. which altogether amounted to eighteen thousand livres a year. The government of Mante and Gergeau brought me in twelve thousand livres; the queen's company of gensdarmes, of which I was captain-lieutenant, five thousand livres; and the government of the bastile two thousand two hundred livres a year. All these articles put together make up the sum of ninety-seven thousand two hundred livres a year.

Each of these articles have been already mentioned in different parts of these Memoirs. What remains to be added to them are as follows: Forty-five thousand livres in church benefices, which his holiness was so well satisfied that I should enjoy under the borrowed name of some ecclesiastics, that he generally expedited the

bulls gratis, when he was told that the abbeys were for me. I lost no part of this income, when it was decreed that the ecclesiastics should withdraw all their benefices out of the hands of the Protestants, because, by the pope's bulls, in which this regulation was expressed, the ecclesiastics on whom they were bestowed were to give the full value of them to the first possessor. My own lands and possessions compose a second article, which, I believe, I estimate justly, by making them amount to sixty thousand livres a year These two last sums, added to that of ninety-seven thousand two hundred livres, make a total of two hundred and two thousand two hundred livres a year.

I shall anticipate the explanation which may be demanded of me, with respect to the article of twenty thousand crowns in lands; and, in the first place, I desire it may be remembered that there was a kind of agreement made between the king and myself in the year 1601, by which that prince, who did not think my labours in his service sufficiently rewarded by my ordinary gratuities and pensions, and who likewise was apprehensive as well as I that those sums, which his generosity led him to give me in extraordinary presents and gratuities, would produce bad consequences hereafter, by that appearance of profusion they might have, again settled his gifts and gratuities in a new sum of sixty thousand livres a year, which was to include all that I was to expect merely from his bounty. This donation was expedited by letters patent, that, being known to the whole kingdom, I might not be one day subjected to any dishonourable imputation on account of it. I enjoyed this extraordinary gratuity for eight years, which produced me the sum of four hundred

and twenty-four thousand livres, which I laid out, according to the king's desire, in making acquisitions in proportion. I made the same use of the sum of five hundred and thirty thousand livres arising from the following articles: From money which I have received, but which is subject to be repaid, on the marriage of my son, two hundred thousand livres; a hundred thousand livres which I received with my wife; a hundred thousand paid me by la Borde; as much by M. Schomberg; and thirty thousand which his majesty gave me for my son d'Orval.* These sums, I say, which, added to the above, make one million and ten thousand livres, I laid out in the following manner:

I purchased one half of the estate of Rosny with two hundred and ten thousand livres. The estate of Dourdan, which I bought of Sancy, who held it of the

* Francis de Bethune, the founder of the branch of the counts d'Orval, was knight of the king's orders, master of the horse to the queen, surveyor-general of France, superintendant of the royal buildings, governor of St. Maixant, camp-master of the regiment of Picardy lieutenant-general of the king's armies. After the death of Cæsar de Bethune, his brother of the whole blood, who died unmarried, the estates and lordships which the duke of Sully their father had settled upon the children of his second marriage (as we shall relate hereafter) became united in him. They were erected into a dutchy and peerage, under the title of de Bethune, which was done in consideration of his signal services to the crown and particularly in having raised, at his own expense, a considerable body of forces, both foot and horse, at a time when the king stood in great need of them, to carry on the war, in which he was then engaged, with the Spaniards, duke Charles of Lorraine, the prince of Condé, and others of his rebellious subjects. It is in these terms the letters patent for this purpose are expressed, which are dated at Melun in the month of June 1652. The dutchy of Sully devolved on this branch of the family, in 1730, on the death of Maximilian the fifth duke of Sully, in the person of Lewis Peter Maximilian de Bethune, grandson of this Francis count d'Orval, to whom it was adjudged by the council of state, he paying the value of it to the Abbé Armand de Bethune, his great uncle, afterwards count d'Orval.

Swiss cantons, cost me, beside the money he owed me, one hundred thousand livres. I had the lands of Sully from the duke de la Tremouille for a hundred and fifty thousand livres; and Villebon, by an ordinance, for one hundred thousand. The three contracts I made with the duke of Nevers amounted to two hundred and ten thousand livres: namely, for Montrond a hundred thousand; la Chapelle fifty-six thousand; and for Henrichemont fifty-four thousand. I bought the estate of Châtelet of the duke of Montpensier for sixty thousand livres; that of Culand, by an ordinance, for eight thousand; and des Is, in Beauce, for seventy-five thousand livres. The whole of these purchases, which amount to eleven hundred and ninety thousand livres, exceeding, as appears, that of the two sums received above by a hundred and nine thousand livres, this sum will be found charged in the articles of receipt, which are placed after; for I am desirous of giving the reader full satisfaction, by carrying this detail even farther than he has a right to expect, and for this purpose I must step a little aside from the subject I am treating of, and give an account of the several sums I received after the death of Henry the Great, as an equivalent for my charges, in gratuities from the young king, &c. even to the time that I resolved to dispose of almost all the employments with which I had been invested.

The three hundred thousand livres which his majesty granted me by letters patent, were at once a gift from this prince, and a kind of recompense for the superintendence of the finances, and government of the Bastile, which I resigned into his hands. He gave me sixty thousand livres for my company of gensdarmes, for which I had refused two hundred thousand. I agreed

with Fourcy to resign to him the superintendence of the buildings for fifty thousand livres, which was the price set upon it by his majesty: I refused to take more. I was offered three hundred thousand livres for the government of Poitou, which I yielded to Rohan, who obtained the king's consent that he should purchase it for two hundred thousand. I lost in the same manner one hundred thousand livres upon the offices of surveyor-general of the roads, and hereditary master of the canals and navigation of rivers. The treasurer of France paid me only a hundred and fifty thousand for them. His majesty likewise caused me to be paid again the sum of one hundred and fifty thousand livres for the estate of Dourdan, and I agreed with the prince of Condé to give him back the lands of Villebon for a hundred and fifty thousand livres, which he has since paid me. I destined these two last sums for the portion of my youngest daughter, for whom it was more difficult to procure an establishment than her eldest sister. To these sums I add those which arose from the sale of my benefices; for I thought it was equally allowable for me to take money for them, as for the ecclesiastics, by whom they were purchased, to give it me; or for the pope to permit it, as he did, by his bulls. I therefore took, without making any scruples, an allowance of eighty thousand livres of an abbé who was recommended to me by the prince of Condé, for my abbey of Coulon. Bethune, who, as well as his son, was the most scrupulous Roman Catholic I ever knew, purchased, under the sanction of these bulls, the abbey of Jard of me for forty thousand livres; an abbé, a friend of the duke of Rohan, bought that of l'Or at Poiters of me for seventy thousand: and l'Argentier Vaucemain, or rath-

er his son, that of l'Absie, for fifty thousand livres. All these sums together make a total of thirteen hundred thousand livres. Let us now see to what use it was applied.

I bought of M. de Lavardin the estate of Montricoux, and that of Caussade, from the sieur Palliers, both for a hundred and sixty thousand livres. My youngest daughter* having, on account of some personal disadvantages, as I observed before, occasion for a larger portion than her sister, to marry her suitable to her birth, I gave with her to M. de Mirepoix four hundred and fifty thousand livres in specie: the other expenses of this marriage, in jewels, furniture, &c. formed an article of fifty thousand livres more, which in all makes up the sum of five hundred thousand livres. I shall only slightly observe here, that such distinguishing proofs of paternal tenderness were repaid both by my daughter and her husband with the most striking instances of ingratitude. I lent to several cities, and to that of Rochelle in particular, more than two hundred and fifty thousand livres, which, by the siege and reduction of this city, and the wars raised against the Protestants, I have almost wholly lost. The money I lent, at different times, to the marquis of Rosny, and the debts I paid for him, amount at least to three hundred thousand livres; the yearly incomes which came to me from Languedoc and Guyenne, by the purchase I made of certain registries and rents there, cost me four hundred thousand livres; and the house I bought in Paris two hundred and twenty thousand livres. By calculating my accounts of the

* Louisa de Bethune. She was married on the 29th of May, 1620, to Alexander de Lévis, marquis of Mirepoix.

money I laid out in buildings and other works, in furniture, in journies, and other expenses of that kind, I find a capital of seven hundred thousand livres. The sum total of all these several articles, amounts to two millions five hundred and thirty thousand livres, which make it superior to the total of receipt, which preceeds it, by twelve hundred and thirty thousand livres.

The reader may have observed, from the beginning of these Memoirs, that my application to my domestic economy extended itself to things which it might be naturally expected would have been excepted from it; I mean in the military profits, arising either from prisoners I had taken, from ransoms, or at the sacking of towns taken by assault, and on other occasions of the same kind, which it is not necessary to give a minute account of here. When the peace of Vervins was concluded, I found that these profits, which, when considered separately, appear so slight that they scarce deserve to be mentioned, yet made a total of one hundred thousand livres, or thereabouts. The war of Savoy, which broke out afterwards, was worth as much more to me in cannon, arms, ammunition, &c. taken from the enemy, of which I had a large portion as master-general of the ordnance. Of all this I make an article of three hundred thousand livres. By calculating the value of all those presents that were made me on different occasions, I found the whole amount to a sum nearly equal to the former. It must be observed, that I mean only such presents as I received in the character of a public person, and in occurrences when it would not have been decent for me to have refused them, as in my embassies and negociations; upon the king's marriage, from the queen and the grand duke; on the marriage of the

princess Catherine with the duke of Lorrain; on every new-year's day from their majesties and queen Margaret. It would have been a ridiculous affectation to show myself as scrupulously nice about these presents, and others of the same nature, as I did when they were offered to me with interested views. However, I would not receive any thing in this manner without its being expressed in a brevet, which I entreated his majesty to grant me for each of these gifts, which, though in jewels and trinkets, composed a sum of one hundred thousand crowns. I sold again the lands of Dourdan for an hundred and fifty thousand livres, before my gratuities were settled of twenty thousand crowns, as I have already mentioned, and which did not happen till the year 1601. The late king listening only to the dictates of his own generous mind, and to the friendship with which he honoured me, obliged me to accept many other donations which have not been particularized here, and which, I believe, do not amount to less than two hundred thousand livres. Lastly, since my income was become so considerable as the reader has seen, it is not surprising that by strictly observing a maxim, which from my earliest years I had laid down as absolutely necessary for the advantage of my domestic affairs; namely, that one ought never to spend the whole extent of one's income, I should at the end of a certain number of years have laid by a very considerable sum. If we suppose this sum to amount to three hundred and fifty thousand livres, and add it to the four former ones, we shall find that it will, within a very little matter, make up the twelve hundred thousand livres, which is wanting to produce a perfect equality between the receipt and expense.

I think it unnecessary to repeat here what I have formerly said, with respect to the current expenses of my house.

What I am going to relate concerning my transactions with the prince of Condé, may appear as a matter of mere curiosity only; but I was not willing to omit it, as it has some connection with the subject I am on at present. When the war broke out against the Protestants under the new reign, the prince of Condé being solicitous to remove me from his governments, where I had several very fine estates, and some strong castles, proposed to me to sell them all to him. I was apprehensive that, if I refused to comply with this proposal, the war would furnish him with pretences to drive me from thence, which force would have rendered valid. I was sensible that his councils had not a little contributed to that resolution they had lately taken against us, and I was forewarned that he was meditating something worse with regard to me. I therefore agreed with him for the lands of Villebon, Montrond, Orval, Culand, and le Châtelet, and with the greater willingness, as he offered me more than they had cost me, and indeed more than they were worth. Accordingly a contract was signed by us both, in which the prince of Condé obliged himself to give me twelve hundred thousand livres for those estates: he did not pay me the money down indeed; but I readily consented to wait till it suited his own conveniency.

However, I did not expect that, at the expiration of a certain time, this prince would find out an easy method of discharging at once both the principal and interest, by demanding of the king that my estates should be

confiscated, a practice which the war made then very common. His majesty was so good as to remember me on this occasion, and rejected with a kind of horror so infamous a request. When the peace was concluded, the prince found himself obliged to come to an account with me. His inclination for the estate of Baugy increasing, there was a necessity for yielding him that likewise, as well as all the others, in order that I might not on any side be his neighbour. He took a dislike to the lands of Villebon, which, together with those of Muret, he restored to me as an equivalent for the estate which he so eagerly coveted. The exchange was not disadvantageous to me. This method of paying me being most convenient for this prince, he made over to me, one after the other, the lands of Nogent, Montigny, Chanrond, Vitrai, the marquisate of Conty, Breteuil, Francatel, and la Falaise, invested with the same rights as the lands that I had exchanged, the principal of which, in my eyes, was the liberty of calling them according to the king's patent, a possession which I held by the liberality and the immediate grant of the king my master.*

* Amongst the papers containing the proofs of what M. de Sully here relates of his disputes with the prince of Condé, which the present duke of Sully has done me the honour to communicate to me, I find two letters, which it may not be improper to insert here: one is from the prince of Condé to the first duke of Sully; the other from the prince of Conty to the marquis de Bethune (Maximilian Alpinus) grandfather of the duke of Sully now living.

Letter from the prince of CONDE to the then duke of SULLY.

"SIR,

"I hope to have the honour of seeing you soon, the bearer hereof will inform you from whence this comes, and explain the contents of it to you. You will find, from my actions, how much I have at heart the king's service, the public good, and your friendship in particular, which I passion-

Thus I got out of the dispute with the prince, who, it must be confessed, was guilty of a double injustice in endeavouring to get possession of my estates by procuring them to be confiscated.

I have been a witness of very miserable times since the death of the king my master. The war which I saw kindled against the Protestants filled me with grief: I was incited by a thousand different motives to take part in it; but I courageously resisted this snare: I never gave

ately covet. I beg you will assuredly rely on the truth of these professions. I am preparing, in performance of our mutual engagements, to conclude our bargain for Villebon, and will let you know (begging you will meet me for that purpose) in what place I can have the honour of conversing with you.

I am, Monsieur,
Your cousin, and
most humble servant,
HENRY de BOURBON."

Letter from the prince of CONTY to the marquis of BETHUNE.

"SIR,

"I am extremely pressed by the count d'Orval to consent to the agreement he is desirous of making with the viscount of Meaux, for the estate of Chanroud; and he even offers to give me security to indemnify me against the warranty my late father entered into. I would not however make him any promise, after having engaged to your mother-in-law not to do any thing in this affair without acquainting you with it; and, as it is for the benefit of all parties, that this matter should be settled, and made an end of as soon as possible, I am willing to refer my pretentions to the judgment of the count de Bethune your kinsman, and beg you will do so too, and submit to what he shall direct. The count d'Orval and the viscount of Meaux are content to submit their claims to him, and abide by his determination. I make no doubt of your consenting to this proposal, as otherwise I shall be obliged to do what is desired of me, and accept of the proposed security. I earnestly beseech you not to make any difficulty of coming into this agreement. In the mean time, I am

Your most affectionate servant,
ARMAND de BOURBON."

Toulouse, 19th of October, 1656.

the king the least reason to look upon me as a rebel, or an abettor of rebels. I have punctually obeyed all his majesty's commands: am always ready to present myself at court whenever he is pleased to require it: in a word, I have had the good fortune to continue as faithful in the performance of those promises I made to the king my benefactor, as in that of the duties of a good citizen.

BOOK XXX.

Discussion of the POLITICAL SCHEME commonly called,

THE GREAT DESIGN OF HENRY IV.

Preliminary considerations upon the Roman empire, the establishment of the French monarchy, the different governments of the three races of our kings, &c. The possibility of the great design proved: Henry with difficulty makes Sully approve of it: in what manner Elizabeth and this prince formed it. Favourable and unfavourable events. The advantage of this scheme to all Europe. That part of the political scheme which regards religion, consisting in peaceably maintaining the religions received in Europe, and in driving the infidels from thence. The political part, which consists in establishing fifteen equal monarchies; in reducing the power of the house of Austria: and dividing what it should be deprived of among the princes and republics of Europe. Means of indemnifying himself, and of proving the equity of his proceedings. The moderation and disinterestedness of France in this division. Establishment of a general council of the christian republics. Negociations and other means employed to induce the princes and states of Europe to engage in the great design. Account of the forces, and the expenses necessary for the execution of it. The march and disposition of the armies of the confederate princes: the probable result of it.

AS this part of these Memoirs will be entirely taken up with an account of the great design of Henry IV, or the political scheme, by which he proposed to govern, not only France, but all Europe, it may not be improper to begin it with some more general reflections on this monarchy, and on the Roman empire, upon whose ruins we know it has been formed, as well as all the other powers which at this day compose the christian world.

If we consider all those successive changes which Rome has suffered from the year of the world 3064.

which is that of its foundation,* its infancy, youth, and virility, its declension, fall, and final ruin; those vicissitudes, which it experienced in common with the great monarchies by which it was preceded would almost incline one to believe, that empires, like all other sublunary things, are subject to be the sport, and at last to sink under the pressure, of time. And if we extend this idea still farther, we shall perhaps perceive, that they are all liable to be disturbed or interrupted in their courses, by certain extraordinary incidents; which, for any thing that we can discover to the contrary, may be termed epidemical distempers, that very frequently hasten their destruction; and their cure by this discovery becoming easier, we may at least save some of them from those catastrophes which are so fatal to them.

But if we endeavour to discover more visible and natural causes of the ruin of this vast and formidable empire, we shall perhaps soon perceive they were produced by a deviation from those wise laws, and that simplicity of manners, which were the original of all its grandeur, into luxury, avarice, and ambition; yet there was, finally, another cause, the effect of which could hardly have been prevented or foreseen by the utmost human wisdom; I mean, the irruptions of those vast bodies of barbarous people, Goths, Vandals, Huns, Herulians, Rugians, Lombards, &c. from whom, both separately and united, the Roman empire received such violent shocks, that it was at last overthrown by them: Rome was three times sacked by these barbarians; in 414, under Honorius, by Alaric, chief of the Goths; in 455, by Genseric, king of

* The opinion now most generally received is that of Varro, who places the time of the foundation of Rome near 200 years later.

the Vandals, under Martian; and in 546, under Justinian, by Totila and the Goths.* Now, if it be true, that after this, the city retained the shadow of what she had been, if we must regard her as divested of the empire of the world, when her weakness and the abuses of her government made this event to be looked upon, not simply as inevitable, but as very near, and, in fact, already arrived; the epocha of her fall may then be marked long before the reign of Valentinian III, to whom it will be doing a favour, to call the last emperor of the West;† for several of those emperors whom he succeeded, were, in reality, no better than tyrants, by whom the empire was torn and divided, and the shattered remnants left to be the spoil of the barbarians, who, indeed, by their conquests, acquired an equal right to them.

Rome, nevertheless, still beheld, at intervals, some faint appearances of a revival; those of which she was most sensible were under the reign of the great Constantine, whose victories once more united this vast body under one head; but when he transported the seat of his empire from Rome to Constantinople, he, by that step, without being sensible of it, contributed more to the destruction of a work which had cost him so much labour, than all the ill conduct of his predecessors had been able to effect; and this even he rendered irremediable, by dividing his empire equally between his three sons.

* These three epochas are not quite just; the first was in 410, instead of 414; the second in 455, or 456; and the third in 524, under Tegas, successor of Totila, and the last king of the Goths; the sacking the city this last time lasted forty days.

† It would be unjust, surely, to refuse the title of emperors of the West to Valentinian III, to Honorius, &c. The expressions here used by our author should not be understood in their most rigorous sense, but only as meaning an empire weakening, and approaching to its final destruction.

Theodosius, who by his good fortune, or from an effect of his great valour, found himself in the same circumstances with Constantine, would not perhaps have committed the same fault, had he not been influenced by the force of Constantine's example; but this, in a manner, necessarily obliged him to divide his empire in two; Arcadius had the East, Honorius the West: and from that time there never was any hopes or opportunity of reuniting them.

According to the order of nature, by which the destruction of one thing contributes to the production of others; so, in proportion, as the most distant members of the empire of the West fell off from it, from thence there arose kingdoms; though indeed they did not at first bear that rank. The most ancient of these (its origin appearing to have been in the eighth year of the empire of Honorius) is, undobtedly, that which was founded in Gaul by the French, so called from Franconia, from whence they were invited by the Gauls, who inhabited the countries about the Moselle, to assist them in their deliverance from the oppression of the Roman armies. It being a custom among these Franks, or French, to confer the title of king upon whatever person they chose to be their leader; if the first or second of these chiefs did not bear it, it is certain, at least, that the third, which was Merovius, and more particularly Clovis, who was the fifth, were invested with it,*

* The whole of what is here said, may be allowed to be right: according to Petau and Sirmond, the chiefs of the French bore the title of kings from the reign of Valentinian II, which was long before the year 445, when Claudian, by the taking of Cambray, &c. first established himself on this side of the Rhine. They first established themselves on the other side of the Rhine about the middle of the third century, and extended themselves, nearly from the Texel, as far as Francfort. This revolt of a part of Gaul

and some of them supported it with so much glory; among others, Pepin and Charles Martel, to whom it would be doing an injustice to refuse them this dignity; that their worthy successor Charlemagne, revived in Gaul an imperfect image of the now extinguished empire in the West: this indeed was facilitated by those natural advantages France enjoys of numerous inhabitants trained to war; and a great plenty of all things serving the different necessities of life, joined to a very great conveniency for commerce, arising from its situation, which renders it the centre of four of the principal powers of Europe; Germany, Italy, Spain, and Britain, with the Low Countries.

Let us here just say one word upon the three races which compose the succession of our kings: in the first of them I find only Merovius, Clovis I, and Clotharius II, Charles Martel, Pepin le Bref, and Charlemagne, in the second, who have raised themselves above the common level of their race. Take away these six from the thirty-five, which we compute in these two races, and all the rest, from their vices or their incapacity, appear to have been either wicked kings, or but the shadow of kings; though among them we may distinguish some good qualities in Sigibert and Dagobert, and a very great devotion in Louis le Débonnaire, which, however, ended in his repenting the loss of empire and his kingdom, together with his liberty, in a cloister.

against the Romans, happened in 434, in the twelfth year of the reign of Valentinian III, and the author's opinion on the establishment of the French in Gaul, is confirmed by a learned academician, who has cleared up this critical point as much as it was possible (the late abbé Du Bois.) Hist. Crit. de l'Etab. de la Monarchie Franç. dans les Gaules. Tom. I. liv. i. ch. 17, liv. ii. ch. 7. 8.

The Carlovingian race having reigned obscurely, and ended so too, the crown then descended upon a third race; the four first kings of which, in my opinion, appear to have been perfect models of wise and good government. The kingdom which came under their dominion had lost much of its original splendour, for from its immense extent in the time of Charlemagne, it was reduced to very nearly the same bounds which it has at this day; with this difference, that though they might have been desirous to restore its ancient limits, the form of the government, which rendered the kings subject to the great men and people of the kingdom, who had a right to choose, and even to govern their sovereigns, left them no means by which they could succeed in such an attempt. The conduct, therefore, which they pursued was, to condemn arbitrary power to an absolute silence; and, in its place, to substitute equity itself; a kind of dominion which never excites envy. Nothing now was done without the consent of the great men and the principal cities, and almost always in consequence of the decision of an assembly of the states. A conduct so moderate and prudent put an end to all factions, and stifled all conspiracies, which are fatal to the state or the sovereign. Regularity, economy, a distinction of merit, strict observance of justice, all the virtues which we suppose necessary qualifications for the good of a family, were what characterized this new government, and produced what was never before beheld, and what, perhaps, we may never see again, an uninterrupted peace for one hundred and twenty-two years: what these princes gained by it for themselves in particular, and which all the authority of the Salique law could never have procured them, was, the advantage of introducing into this house an heredi-

tary right to the crown. But they, nevertheless, thought it a necessary precaution, not to declare their eldest sons their successors till they had modestly asked the consent of the people, preceded it by a kind of election, and usually by having them crowned in their own lifetime, and seated with them upon the throne.

Philip II, whom Lewis VII, his father, caused to be crowned, and to reign with him in this manner, was the first who neglected to observe this ceremony between the sovereign and his people: several victories, obtained over his neighbours and over his own subjects, which gained him the surname of Augustus, served to open him a passage to absolute power; and a notion of the fitness and legality of this power, by the assistance of favourites, ministers, and others, became afterwards so strongly imprinted in his successors, that they looked upon it as a mark of the most profound good policy, to act contrary to those maxims, the general and particular utility of which had been so effectually confirmed by experience. And this they did without any fear, or perhaps without any conception of the fatal consequences which such a proceeding, against a nation that adored its liberty, might, and even necessarily would, incur; of which they might easily have become sensible, from the means to which the people had immediate recourse, to shake off the yoke of tyranny with which they saw themselves menaced. The kings could never obtain of their people any other than that kind of constrained obedience, which always inclines them to embrace with eagerness, all opportunities of mutiny. This was the source of a thousand bloody wars: that by which almost all France was ravaged by the English; that which we carried on with Italy, Burgundy, and Spain; all of them

can be attributed to no other causes, than the civil dissentions by which they were preceded: and here the weakest side, stifling the voice of honour, and the interest of the nation, constantly called in foreigners to assist them in the support of their tottering liberties. These were shameful and fatal remedies; but from that time they were constantly employed, and even to our days by the house of Lorrain, in a league, for which religion was nothing more than the pretence. Another evil, which may at first appear to be of a different kind, but which, in my opinion, proceeds from the same source, was a general corruption of manners, a thirst for riches, and a most shameful degree of luxury: these, sometimes separately, and sometimes united, were alternate causes and effects of many of our miseries.

Thus, in a few words, I have exposed the various species of our bad policy, with respect both to the form of the government, successively subjected to the will of the people, the soldiers, the nobles, the states, and the kings; and in regard to the persons likewise of these last, whether dependant, elective, hereditary, or absolute.

From the picture here laid before us, we may be enabled to form our judgment upon the third race of our kings: we may find a thousand things to admire in Philip Augustus, Saint Louis, Philip le Bel, Charles le Sage, Charles VII, and Louis XII. But it is to be lamented, that so many virtues, or great qualities have been exercised upon no better principles; with what pleasure might we bestow upon them the titles of great kings, could we but conceal that their people were miserable: what might we not, in particular, say of Louis IX? of the forty-four years which he reigned, the first twenty of them exhibits a scene not unworthy to be compared

with the eleven last of Henry the Great. But I am afraid all their glory will appear to have been destroyed in the twenty-four following; wherein it appears, that the excessive taxes upon the subjects, to satisfy an ill-judged and destructive devotion; immense sums transported into the most distant countries, for the ransom of prisoners; so many thousand subjects sacrificed; so many illustrious houses extinguished: caused a universal mourning throughout France, and all together, a general calamity.

Let us for once, if it be possible, fix our principles; and being, from long experience, convinced, that the happiness of mankind can never arise from war, of which we ought to have been persuaded long ago; let us, upon this principle, take a cursory view of the history of our monarchy. We will pass by the wars of Clovis and his predecessors, because they seem to have been, in some degree, necessary to confirm the recent foundations of the monarchy: but what shall we say of those wars, in which the four sons of Clovis, the four sons of Clotharius II, and their descendants, were engaged, during the uninterrupted course of one hundred and sixty years? and of those also, by which, for the space of one hundred and seventy-two other years, commencing with Lewis le Debonnaire, the kingdom was harrassed and torn? What follows is still worse: the slightest knowledge of our history is sufficient to convince any one, that there was no real tranquillity in the kingdom from Henry VIII, to the peace of Vervins: and, in short, all this long period may be called a war of near four hundred years duration. After this examination, from whence it incontestably appears, that our kings have seldom thought of any thing but how to carry on

their wars, we cannot but be scrupulous in bestowing on them the title of truly great kings; though we shall, nevertheless, render them all the justice which appears to have been their due: for I confess (as indeed it would be unjust to attribute to them only, a crime which was properly that of all Europe) that several of these princes were sometimes in such circumstances as rendered the wars just, and even necessary; and from hence, when indeed there was no other means to obtain it, they acquired a true and lasting glory. For herein, from the manner in which several of these wars were foreseen, prepared for, and conducted, we may in their councils discover such master-strokes of policy, and in their persons such noble instances of courage, as are deserving of our highest praises. From whence then can proceed the error of so many exploits, in appearance so glorious, though the effect of them has generally been the devastation both of France and all Europe? I repeat it again, of all Europe, which even yet seems scarce sensible, that in her present situation, a situation in which she has been, for several centuries, every attempt which shall tend to her subjection, or only to the too considerably augmenting of any one of her principal monarchies, at the expense of the others, can never be any other than a chimerical and impossible enterprise. There are none of these monarchies, whose destruction will not require a concurrence of causes infinitely superior to all human force. The whole, therefore, of what seems proper and necessary to be done, is to support them all in a kind of equilibrium; and whatever prince thinks, and in consequence acts otherwise, may indeed cause torrents of blood to flow through all Europe, but he will never be able to change her form.

When I observed that the extent of France is not now so considerable as it was in the time of Charlemagne, my intention, most certainly, was, not that this diminution should be considered as a misfortune. In an age when we feel the sad effects of having had ambitious princes, from time to time, for our kings, were all to concur in flattering this fatal ambition, it would be the cause of still greater evils; and it may be generally observed, that the larger the extent of kingdoms, the more they are subject to great revolutions and misfortunes. The basis of the tranquillity of our own, in particular, depends upon preserving it within its present limits. A climate, laws, manners, and language, different from our own; seas, and chains of mountains almost inaccessible, are all so many barriers, which we may consider as fixed even by nature. Besides, what is it that France wants? will she not always be the richest and most powerful kingdom in Europe? It must be granted. All therefore which the French have to wish or desire is, that heaven may grant them pious, good, and wise kings; and that these king's may employ their power in preserving the peace of Europe; for no other enterprise can, truly, be to them either profitable or successful.

And this explains to us the nature of the design which Henry IV was on the point of putting in execution, when it pleased God to take him to himself, too soon by some years for the happiness of the world. From hence likewise we may perceive the motives for his pursuing a conduct so opposite to any thing that had hitherto been undertaken by crowned heads; and here we may behold what it was that acquired him the title of *Great*. His designs were not inspired by a mean and

despicable ambition, nor guided by base and partial interests: to render France happy for ever was his desire; and as she cannot perfectly enjoy this felicity, unless all Europe likewise partakes of it; so it was the happiness of Europe in general which he laboured to procure, and this in a manner so solid and durable, that nothing should afterwards be able to shake its foundations.

I must confess I am under some apprehensions, lest this scheme* should at first be considered as one of those

* The Memoirs of Sully are the only monument which has preserved to posterity an account of the great design of Henry IV. We find no traces of it in any of the historians, authors of memoirs, or other writers, who were cotemporary with that prince; their silence in this matter proceeded, no doubt, from their not knowing enough of it to say any thing with certainty about it. The world did not begin to descant upon it till the *Memoirs of Sully*, wherein it is so clearly described, were published; and among all those who have considered it ever since about the middle of the seventeenth century, I find scarce any who have questioned the possibility of executing it; doubtless, because they lived near enough to the times in which it was formed, to be convinced, even from the mouths of those who had been witnesses of the preparations and dispositions which were made, that all the measures had been taken precisely in the same manner as related by the duke of Sully; and consequently, that it would have had but few of those obstacles to encounter which have since been raised against it.

The author of a manuscript discourse in the king's library, which to me appears to be the most ancient memoir we have of that time, seems not in the least to have doubted of success in its execution. And M. de Perefixe, who in the third part of his history of Henry the Great, has given a short but very accurate account of the scheme, says positively that it would have succeeded; and farther confirms his assertion by proofs, which he gives, p. 388, and the following. The continuator of Thuanus, in what little he has said of it, anno 1609, 10, does not appear to have been of a different sentiment. The marshal de Bassompierre also, in his Journal, tom. I. seems to be in its favour. To these authorities we may also join that of the author of the life of the duke d'Epernon, and some others, who all seem to be of the same opinion. Indeed, till the beginning of the present century, all authors appear to have been unanimous in this point; and several of our modern historians have joined them herein.

darling chimeras, or idle political speculations, in which a mind susceptible of strange and singular ideas, may

Vittorio Siri (Mem. Recond. tom. I. p. 29, 514. tom. II. p. 45. &c.) is the first that I know of, by whom this great enterprize has been treated as absurd and impossible: but the ignorance which he shows in the whole affair, even in those points which are the least contested; his attachment to the Spanish politics, and his distance from the persons of Henry IV and his minister, which is every way apparent in all he says on the subject, render him, in this respect, very justly exceptionable; his sentiments have been adopted, by the author of the History of the Mother and Son, tom. I. p. 44. and for a similar reason of attachment to the queen, mother of Lewis XIII. But this writer, such as he is, producing no better authority for his opinion, than the age of Henry IV, who was then near sixty, appears also to have been so entirely unacquainted with the affair, that we may, without scruple, pronounce, he was ignorant of the disposition which had been made for the complete execution of it within the space of three years, and that he condemns the design without understanding it.

I have much greater reverence for the authority of some modern politicians, who consider it as a kind of impossibility, thus to change the face of all Europe, in the manner proposed by Henry IV, and who imagine, that in our days a much more happy expedient has been discovered, whereby to obtain the equilibrium of Europe, than by reviving the ancient council of the Amphyctions: what I mean, is the precaution now observed, of having all the principal powers of Europe accede to, and become the guarantees of every particular treaty. But all those calamities which we have suffered in consequence of war, do but too plainly evince its insufficiency. In regard to the main stress of the question, I agree with them, that Europe could not now, but with great difficulty, be constituted in the manner proposed by Henry the Great; nevertheless I believe, without pretending to subject any one to my opinion, that those who treat this prince's design as a chimera, do not pay all the necessary attention to the circumstances of those times, wherein Europe, from her frequent dangers of being subjected to the house of Austria, and by the bloody wars which a difference of religion had excited, and continued daily to excite, found herself in a manner compelled to have recourse to extraordinary means to put a period to her miseries.

I cannot finish this remark better, than in the words of M. l'Abbé de Saint-Pierre, in his Discours sur le Grand Homme: "From hence we may "perceive, that if Henry IV, king of France, had executed his celebrated "and well-projected design, whereby to render peace perpetual and uni-

be so easily engaged; those who shall thus think of it, must be of that sort of people on whom the first impressions upon a prejudiced imagination, have the force of truth; or those, who by their distance from the times, and their ignorance of the circumstances, confound the wisest and noblest enterprises that have ever been formed, with those chimerical projects which princes, intoxicated with their power, have in all ages amused themselves in forming. I confess, that if we attentively examine the designs which have been planned from motives of vanity, confidence in good fortune, ignorance, nay, from sloth, and even timidity itself, we must be surprised to behold sovereigns plunged blindly into schemes, specious perhaps in appearance, but which, at bottom, have not the least degree of possibility. The mind of man pursues with so much complacency, nay, even with so much ardour, whatever it fancies great or beautiful, that it is sorry to be made sensible, that these objects have

" versal among the sovereigns of Europe, he would have procured the " greatest possible benefit, not only to his own subjects, but to all the chris- " tian kingdoms: and even, by a necessary consequence, to the world in " general: a benefit of which all generations, present and to come, would " have participated down to the latest time: a benefit, by which we should " have been exempted from those terrible and numerous evils, which are " the effects of foreign and domestic wars; a benefit, which would have " been the source of all those sweets which naturally flow from an uninter- " rupted and universal tranquillity: if, I say, he had been so happy as to have " executed this great design, it would have rendered him, beyond all com- " parison, the greatest man the world ever has, or probably ever will pro- " duce." After some farther reflections upon the means still more practicable, this judicious author adds: " This prince, however, has always had " the honour of being considered as the author of the most important inven- " tion, and most useful discovery, for the benefit of mankind, that has yet " appeared in the world; the execution of which may, perhaps, be reserved " by Providence, for the greatest and most capable of his successors."

frequently nothing real or solid in them. But in this, as well as in other things, there is an opposite extreme to be avoided; which is, that as we usually fail in the execution of great designs, from not commencing and continuing them with sufficient vigour and spirit; so likewise we are defective in the knowledge of their true worth and tendency, because we do not thoroughly and properly consider them in all their dependencies and consequences. I have myself been more difficult to persuade in this matter, than perhaps any of those who shall read these Memoirs; and this I consider as an effect of that cold, cautious, and unenterprising temper, which makes so considerable a part of my character.

I remember the first time the king spoke to me of a political system, by which all Europe might be regulated and governed as one great family, I scarce paid any attention to what he said, imagining that he meant no more by it than merely to divert himself, or perhaps to show, that his thoughts on political subjects were greater, and penetrated deeper, than most others: my reply was a mixture of pleasantry and compliment. Henry said no more at that time. He often confessed to me afterwards, that he had long concealed from me what he meditated on this subject, from a principle of shame, which many labour under, lest they should disclose designs which might appear ridiculous or impossible. I was astonished when, some time after, he renewed our conversation on this head, and continued from year to year, to entertain me with new regulations and new improvements in his scheme.

I had been very far from thinking seriously about it. If by accident it came into my thoughts for a moment,

the first view of the design, which supposed a reunion of all the different states of Europe; immense expenses, at a time when France could scarcely supply her own necessities; a concatenation of events which to me appeared infinite: these were considerations which had always made me reject the thought as vain; I even apprehended there was some illusion in it: I recollected some of those enterprises in which we had endeavoured to engage Europe. I considered those in particular which had been formed by some of our kings, from much less considerable motives, and I felt myself disgusted with this, from the bad success of all the former. The disposition of the princes of Europe to take umbrage against France, when she would have assisted them to dissipate their fears from the too great power of Spain, this alone appeared to me an insurmountable obstacle.

Strongly prejudiced by this opinion, I used my utmost efforts to undeceive Henry, who, on his side, surprised not to find me of his opinion in any one point, immediately undertook and readily succeeded in convincing me, that my thus indiscriminately condemning all parts of his project, in which he was certain that every thing at least was not blameable, could proceed from nothing but strong prejudices. I could not refuse, at his solicitations, to use my endeavours to gain a thorough comprehension of it: I formed a clearer plan of it in my mind: I collected and united all its different branches: I studied all its proportions and dimensions, if I may say so; and I discovered in them a regularity and mutual dependance, of which, when I only considered the design in a confused and careless manner, I had not been at all sensible. The benefit which would manifestly arise

from it to all Europe, was what most immediately struck me, as being in effect the plainest and most evident; but the means to effect so good a design were, therefore, what I hesitated at the longest. The general situation of the affairs of Europe, and of our own in particular, appeared to me every way contrary to the execution: I did not consider that, as the execution of it might be deferred till a proper opportunity, we had all those resources whereby to prepare ourselves, which time affords those who know how to make the best use of it. I was at last convinced, that however disproportionate the means might appear to the effect, a course of years, during which every thing should as much as possible be made subservient to the great object in view, would surmount many difficulties. It is indeed somewhat extraordinary, that this point, which appeared to be, and really was, the most difficult of any, should at last become the most easy.

Having thus seen all parts of the design in their just points of view, having thoroughly considered and calculated, and from thence discovered and prepared for all events which might happen, I found myself confirmed in the opinion, that the design of Henry the Great was, upon the whole, just in its intention, possible, and even practicable in all its parts, and infinitely glorious in all its effects: so that, upon all occasions, I was the first to recall the king to his engagements, and sometimes to convince him by those very arguments which he himself had taught me.

The constant attention this prince paid to all affairs transacted around him, from an effect of those singularly unhappy circumstances, by which, in almost every

instant of his life, he found himself embarrassed, had been the cause of his forming this design, even from the time when, being called to the crown by the death of Henry III, he considered the humbling of the house of Austria as what was absolutely necessary for his security; yet, if he was not beholden to Elizabath* for his thought of the design, it is, however, certain that this great queen had herself conceived it long before, as a means to revenge Europe for the attempts of its common enemy. The troubles in which all the following years were engaged, the war which succeeded in 1595, and that against Savoy after the peace of Vervins, forced Henry into difficulties which obliged him to lay aside all thoughts of other affairs; and it was not till after his marriage, and the firm re-establishment of peace, that he renewed his thoughts upon his first design, to execute which, appeared then more impossible, or at least more improbable, than ever.

He, nevertheless, communicated it by letters to Elizabeth,† and this was what inspired them with so strong

* The present duke of Sully is possessed of the original of an excellent letter of Henry the Great, supposed to have been wrote by him to queen Elizabeth, though this princess is not named, neither in the body of the letter, nor in the superscription, which is in these words: *To her who merits immortal praise.* The terms in which Henry herein speaks of a certain political project, which he calls *The most excellent and rare enterprize that ever the human mind conceived—a thought rather divine than human:* the praises which he bestows upon *this discourse so well connected and demonstrative of what would be necessary for the government of empires and kingdoms*—on those *conceptions and resolutions* from which nothing less may be hoped than *most remarkable issues both of honour and glory.* All these passages can relate to none but Elizabeth, nor mean any other than the great design in question, concerning which it evidently appears, from hence that the queen of England had by letters disclosed her thoughts to Henry. The letter from which these extracts are taken, is dated from Paris, the 11th of July; but without the date of the year. Lettres d'Henry le Grand.

† Compare the above with what is said in vol. II. p. 432.

an inclination to confer together in 1601, when this princess came to Dover, and Henry to Calais. What the ceremony of an interview would not have permitted them to do, I at last begun by the voyage which I made to this princess. I found her deeply engaged in the means by which this great design might be successfully executed; and, notwithstanding the difficulties which she apprehended in its two principal points, namely, the agreement of religions, and the equality of the powers, she did not appear to me at all to doubt of its success, which she chiefly expected, for a reason the justness of which I have since been well convinced of; and this was, that, as the plan was really only contrary to the design of some princes, whose ambitious views were sufficiently known to Europe, this difficulty, from which the necessity of the design more evidently appeared, would rather promote than retard its success. She farther said, that its execution by any other means than that of arms would be very desirable, as this had always something odious in it: but she confessed that indeed it would be hardly possible to begin it any otherwise. A very great number of the articles, conditions, and different dispositions, is due to this queen; and sufficiently show, that, in respect of wisdom, penetration, and all the other perfections of the mind, she was not inferior to any king, the most truly deserving of that title.

It must indeed be considered as a very great misfortune, that Henry could not at this time second the intentions of the queen of England, who wished to have the design put in immediate execution; but when he thus laid the foundation of the edifice, he scarce hoped to see the time when the finishing hand would be put to

it. The recovery of his own kingdom from the various maladies by which it was afflicted, was a work of several years; and unhappily he had himself seen forty-eight when he began it; he pursued it, nevertheless, with the greatest vigour. The edict of Nantes had been published with this view, and every other means was used which might gain the respect and confidence of the princes of Europe. Henry and I, at the same time applied ourselves with indefatigable labour to regulate the interior affairs of the kingdom. We considered the death of the king of Spain as the most favourable event that could happen for our design; but it received so violent a shock by the death of Elizabeth, as had like to have made us abandon all our hopes. Henry had no expectation that the powers of the north, nor king James, the successor of Elizabeth, (when he was acquainted with his character,) would any of them so readily consent to support him in his design, as this princess had done. However, the new allies which he daily gained in Germany, and even in Italy, consoled him a little for the loss of Elizabeth. The truce between Spain and the Low Countries may also be numbered among incidents favourable to it.

Yet, if we consider all the obstacles which afterwards arose in his own kingdom, from the Protestants, the Catholics, the clergy, nay even from his own council, it will appear as if all things conspired against it. Will it be believed that Henry could not find in his whole council one person, besides myself, to whom he could, without danger, disclose the whole of his designs? and that the respect due to him, could scarce restrain those who appeared most devoted to his service, from treating as

wild and extravagant chimera what he had entrusted to them with the greatest circumspection. But nothing discouraged him: he was an abler politician and a better judge than all his council, and all his kingdom; and when he perceived that, notwithstanding all these obstacles, affairs began, both at home and abroad, to appear in a favourable situation, he then considered the success as infallible.

Nor will this his judgment, when thoroughly considered, be found so presumptuous as, from a slight examination, it may appear to some. For what did he hereby require of Europe? Nothing more than that it should promote the means by which he proposed to fix it in the position, towards which, by his efforts, it had for some time tended. These means he rendered so easy of execution that it would scarce require what many of the princes of Europe would voluntary sacrifice, for advantages much less real, less certain, and less durable. What they would gain by it, besides the inestimable benefits raising from peace, would greatly exceed all the expenses they would be at. What reason then could any of them have to oppose it? and if they did not oppose it, how could the house of Austria support itself against powers, in whom the desire and pleasure of depriving it of that strength which it had used only to oppress them, would have raised against it as many open as it had secret enemies? that is, the whole of Europe? Nor would these princes have any reason to be jealous of the restorer of their liberty; for he was so far from seeking to re-imburse himself for all the expenses which his generosity would hereby engage him in, that his intention was to relinquish voluntarily and

for ever all power of augmenting his dominions; not only by conquest, but by every other just and lawful means. By this he would have discovered the secret of convincing all his neighbours that his whole design was to save both himself and them those immense sums which the maintenance of so many thousand soldiers, so many fortified places, and so many military expenses require; to free them for ever from the fear of those bloody catastrophes so common in Europe: to procure them an uninterrupted repose; and finally, to unite them all in an indissoluble bond of security and friendship, after which they might live together like brethren, and reciprocally visit like good neighbours, without the trouble of ceremony, and without the expense of a train of attendants, which princes use at best only for ostentation, and frequently to conceal their misery. Does it not indeed reflect shame and reproach on a people who affect to be so polished and refined in their manners, that all their pretended wisdom has not yet (I will not say procured them tranquillity, but only) guarded them from those barbarities which they detest in nations the most savage and uncultivated? and to destroy these pernicious seeds of confusion and disorder, and to prevent the barbarities of which they are the cause, could any scheme have been more happily and perfectly contrived than that of Henry the great?

Here then is all that could be reasonably expected or required. It is only in the power of man to prepare and act; success is the work of a more mighty hand. Sensible people cannot be blamed for being prejudiced in favour of the scheme in question, from this circumstance only, that it was formed by the two potentates

whom posterity will always consider as the most perfect models of the art of governing. In regard to Henry in particular, I insist that it belongs only to princes, who, like him, have had a constant succession of obstacles to encounter, in all their designs. These, I say, are the princes who alone are privileged to judge what are real obstacles; and, when we behold them willing to lay down their lives in support of their opinions, surely we may abide by their sentiments, without fear of being deceived. For my own part, I shall always think with regret, that France, by the blow which it received by the loss of this great prince, was deprived of a glory far superior to that which his reign had acquired.* There remains only to explain the several parts of the design, and the manner in which they were to be executed. We will begin with what relates to religion.

Two religions principally prevail in Christendom, the Roman and the Reformed; but, as this latter has admitted of several modifications in its worship, which render it, if not as different from itself as from the Roman, at least as far from being reunited, it is therefore necessary to divide it into two, one of which may be called the reformed, and the other the Protestant religion. The manner in which these three religions prevail in Europe is extremely different. Italy and Spain remain in possession of the Roman religion, pure and without mixture of any other. The reformed religion

* From hence we may discover what credit should be given to Siri, when he says, that the sole passion of Henry the Great was to amass riches; that his minister forced him into the design against his inclination; and that the duke of Sully, whom he believes to be the sole author of it, was himself prepossessed in its favour only from mere obstinacy, or perhaps from motives of self-interest.

subsists in France with the Roman, only under favour of the edicts, and is the weakest. England, Denmark, Sweden, the Low Countries, and Switzerland, have also a mixture of the same kind, but with this difference, that in them the Protestant is the governing religion, the others are only tolerated. Germany unites all these, and even in several of its circles, as well as in Poland, shows them equal favour. I say nothing of Muscovy or Russia: these vast countries, which are not less than six hundred leagues in length, and four hundred in breadth, being in great part still idolaters, and in part schismatics, such as Greeks and Arminians, who have introduced so many superstitious practices in their worship, that there scarce remains any conformity with us among them; besides, that they belong to Asia at least as much as to Europe, we may indeed almost consider them as a barbarous country, and place them in the same class with Turkey, though for these five hundred years, we have ranked them among the Christian powers.

Each of these three religions being now established in Europe, in such a manner that there is not the least appearance that any of them can be destroyed, and experience having sufficiently demonstrated the inutility and danger of such an enterprise, the best therefore that can be done, is to preserve, and even strengthen all of them in such a manner, nevertheless, that this indulgence may not become an encouragement to the production of new sects or opinions, which should carefully be suppressed on their first appearance. God himself, by manifestly supporting what the Catholics were pleased to call the new religion, has taught us this conduct, which is not less conformable to the Holy Scriptures than confirmed by its examples; and, besides, the in-

surmountable difficulty of forcing the pope's authority to be received in those places where it is now no longer acknowledged, renders what is here proposed absolutely necessary. Several cardinals equally sagacious and zealous, and even some popes, as Clement VIII and Paul V, were of this opinion.

All, therefore, that remains now to be done, is to strengthen the nations, who have made choice of one of these religions, in the principles they profess, as there is nothing in all respects so pernicious as a liberty in belief; and those nations, whose inhabitants profess several, or all these religions, should be careful to observe those rules which they find necessary to remedy the ordinary inconveniences of a toleration, which, in other respects, they probably experience to be beneficial. Italy, therefore, professing the Roman religion, and being moreover the residence of the popes, should preserve this religion in all its purity, and there would be no hardship in obliging all its inhabitants, either to conform to it, or to quit the country. The same regulation, very nearly, might be observed in regard to Spain. In such states as that of France, where there is at least a governing religion, whoever should think the regulation too severe, by which Calvinism would be always subordinate to the religion of the prince, might be permitted to depart the country. No new regulation would be necessary in any of the other nations; no violence on this account, but liberty unrestrained, seeing this liberty is become even a fundamental principle in their governments.

Thus we may perceive that every thing on this head might be reduced to a very few maxims, so much the more certain and invariable, as they were not contrary

to the sentiments of any one. The Protestants are very far from pretending to force their religion upon any of their neighbours, by whom it is not voluntarily embraced. The Catholics, doubtless, are of the same sentiments, and the pope would receive no injury in being deprived of what he confesses himself not to have possessed for a long time. His sacrificing these chimerical rights would be abundantly compensated by the regal dignity with which it would be proper to invest him, and by the honour of being afterwards the common mediator between all the Christian princes, a dignity which he would then enjoy without jealousy, and for which it must be confessed this court, by its sagacious conduct, has shown itself the most proper of any.

Another point of the political scheme, which also concerns religion, relates to the infidel princes of Europe, and consists in forcing those entirely out of it who refuse to conform to any of the Christian doctrines of religion. Should the grand duke of Muscovy, or czar of Russia, who is believed to be the ancient khan of Scythia, refuse to enter into the association after it is proposed to him, he ought to be treated like the sultan of Turkey, deprived of his possessions in Europe, and confined to Asia only, where he might, as long as he pleased, without any interruption from us, continue the wars in which he is almost constantly engaged against the Turks and Persians.

To succeed in the execution of this, which will not appear difficult, if we suppose that all Christian princes unanimously concurred in it, it would only be necessary for each of them to contribute, in proportion to their several abilities, towards the support of the forces, and all the other incidental expenses, which the success of

such an enterprise might require. These respective quotas were to have been determined by a general council, of which we shall speak hereafter. The following is what Henry the Great had himself conceived on this head. The pope, for this expedition, should furnish eight thousand foot, twelve hundred horse, ten cannons, and ten gallies; the emperor and the circles of Germany, sixty thousand foot, twenty thousand horse, five large cannons, and ten gallies or other vessels; the king of France twenty thousand foot, four thousand horse, twenty cannons, and ten ships or gallies; Spain, Britain, Denmark, Sweden, and Poland, the like number with France, observing only, that these powers should together supply what belonged to the sea service in the manner most suitable to their respective conveniences and abilities therein; the king of Bohemia five thousand foot, fifteen hundred horse, and five cannons; the king of Hungary twelve thousand foot, five thousand horse, twenty cannons, and six ships; the duke of Savoy, or king of Lombardy, eight thousand foot, fifteen hundred horse, eight cannons, and six gallies; the republic of Venice ten thousand foot, twelve hundred horse, ten cannons, and twenty-five gallies; the republic of the Swiss cantons fifteen thousand foot, five thousand horse, and twelve cannons; the republic of Holland twelve thousand foot, twelve hundred horse, twelve cannons, and twelve ships; the Italian republics ten thousand foot, twelve hundred horse, ten cannons, and eight gallies; the whole together amounting to about two hundred and seventy thousand foot, fifty thousand horse, two hundred cannons, and one hundred and twenty ships or gallies, equipped and maintained at the expense of all those powers, each contributing according to his particular proportion.

This armament of the princes and states of Europe appears so inconsiderable and so little burdensome, when compared with the forces which they usually keep on foot to awe their neighbours, or perhaps their own subjects, that were it to have subsisted, even perpetually, it would not have occasioned any inconvenience, and would have been an excellent military academy: but, besides that the enterprises for which it was destined, would not always have continued; the number and expense of it might have been diminished in proportion to the necessities, which would always have been the same. Though I am persuaded such an armament would have been so highly approved of by all these princes, that, after they had conquered with it whatever they would not suffer any stranger should share with them in Europe, they would have sought to join to it such parts of Asia as were most commodiously situated, and particularly the whole coast of Africa, which is too near to our own territories for us not to be frequently incommoded by it. The only precaution to be observed in regard to these additional countries, would have been to form them into new kingdoms, declare them united with the rest of the Christian powers, and bestow them on different princes; carefully observing to exclude those who before bore rank among the sovereigns of Europe.

That part of the design which may be considered as purely political, turned almost entirely on a first preliminary, which, I think, would not have met with more difficulty than the preceding article. This was to divest the house of Austria of the empire, and of all the possessions in Germany, Italy, and the Low-Countries: in a word, to reduce it to the sole kingdom of Spain,

bounded by the ocean, the Mediterranean, and the Pyrenecan mountains. But that it might, nevertheless, be equally powerful with the other sovereignties of Europe, it should have Sardinia, Majorca, Minorca, and the other islands on its own coasts; the Canaries, the Azores, and Cape-Verd, with its possessions in Africa; Mexico, and the American islands which belong to it, countries which alone might suffice to found great kingdoms; finally, the Philippines, Goa, the Moluccas, and its other possessions in Asia.

From hence a method seems to present itself, by which the house of Austria might be indemnified for what it would be deprived of in Europe, which is to increase its dominions in the three other parts of the world, by assisting it to obtain, and by declaring it the sole proprietor, both of what we do know, and what we may hereafter discover in those parts. We may suppose, that on this occasion it would not have been necessary to use force to bring this house to concur in such a design; and, indeed, even on this supposition, it was not the prince of this house reigning in Spain, to whom these parts of the world were to be subjected, but to different princes of the same, or of different branches, who, in acknowledgment of their possessions, should only have rendered homage to the crown of Spain, or, at most, a tribute, as due to the original conquerors. This house, which is so very desirous of being the most powerful in the world, might hereby have continued to flatter itself with so pleasing a pre-eminence, without the other powers being endangered by its pretended grandeur.

The steps taken by the house of Austria to arrive at universal monarchy, which evidently appears from the whole conduct of Charles V and his son, have render-

ed this severity as just as it is necessary; and I will venture to say, that this house would not have had any reasonable cause to complain of it. It is true, it would be deprived of the empire: but when impartially considered, it will appear that all the other princes of Germany, and even of Europe, have an equal right to it. Were it necessary to prove this, we need only recollect on what conditions Charles V himself, the most powerful of them all, was acknowledged emperor; conditions which, at Smalkalde, he solemnly swore to observe, in presence of seven princes or electors, and the deputies of twenty-four Protestant towns; the landgrave of Hesse and the prince of Anhalt being speakers for all of them. He swore, I say, never to act contrary to the established laws of the empire, particularly the famous golden bull, obtain under Charles IV, unless it were to amplify them, and even that only with the express consent and advice of the sovereign princes of Germany: not to infringe nor deprive them of any of their priveleges; not to introduce foreigners into their council; not to make either war or peace without their consent; not to bestow honours and employments but on natives of Germany, not to use any other but the German language in all writings; not to levy any taxes by his own authority, nor apply any conquests which might be made, to his own particular profit. He, in particular, formally renounced all pretensions to hereditary right in his house to the imperial dignity; and, according to the second article of the golden bull he swore never in his lifetime to recognize a king of the Romans. When the Protestants of Germany, after they had in a manner driven Ferdinand out of it, consented that the imperial crown should be placed on his head, they were careful to make him renew his engagements in regard to all these arti-

cles, and to all these new regulations relative to the free exercise of their religion.

As to the possessions of the house of Austria in Germany, Italy, and the Low Countries, of which it was to be deprived, not to mention here how much it is indebted for them to a tyrannical usurpation, it would, after all, be only depriving it of territories which it keeps at so prodigious an expense (I speak, in particular, of Italy and the Low Countries) as all its treasures of the Indies have not been able to defray; and besides, by investing it with the exclusive privilege above mentioned, of gaining new establishments, and appropriating to its own use the mines and treasures of the three other parts of the world it would be abundantly indemnified; for these new acquisitions would be at least as considerable, and undoubtedly far more rich, than those. But what is here proposed must not be understood as if the other nations of Europe were excluded from all commerce to those countries; on the contrary, it should be free and open to every one, and the house of Austria, instead of considering this stipulation, which is of the greatest consequence, as an infringement of its privileges, would rather have reason to regard it as a farther advantage.

From a farther examination and consideration of these dispositions, I do not doubt but the house of Austria would have accepted the proposed conditions without being forced to it: but, supposing the contrary, what would a resistance have signified? The promise made to all the princes of Europe, of enriching themselves by the territories of which this house was to be divested, would deprive it of all hopes of assistance from any of them.

Upon the whole then it appears, that all parties would have been gainers by it, and this was what assured Hen-

ry the Great of the success of his design: the empire would again become a dignity to which all princes, but particularly those of Germany, might aspire: and this dignity would be so much the more desirable, though, according to its original institution, no revenues would be annexed to it, as the emperor would be declared the first and chief magistrate of the whole Christian republic; as we may suppose this honour would afterwards be conferred only on the most worthy, all his privileges in this respect, instead of being diminished, would be enlarged, his authority over the Belgic and Helvetic republics would be more considerable, and upon every new election they would be obliged to render him a respectful homage. The electors would still continue to enjoy the right of electing the emperor, as well as of nominating the king of the Romans; with this restriction only, That the election should not be made twice successively, out of the same family. The first to have been elected in this manner, was the elector of Bavaria, who was also, in consequence of the partition, to have had those territories possessed by the house of Austria which joined to his own on the side of Italy.

The rest of these territories were to have been divided and equally distributed by the kings of France, England, Denmark, and Sweden, among the Venetians, the Grisons, the duke of Wirtemberg, and the marquis of Baden, Anspach, and Dourlach. Bohemia was to have been constituted an elective kingdom, by annexing it to Moravia, Silesia, and Lusatia. Hungary was also to have been an elective kingdom, and the pope, the emperor, the kings of France, England, Denmark, Sweden, and Lombardy, were to have had the right of nomination to it: and because this kingdom may

be considered as the barrier of Christendom against the infidels, it was to have been rendered the most powerful and able to resist them; and this was to have been done by immediately adding to it the archdutchy of Austria, Styria, Carinthia, and Carniola; and by afterwards incorporating with it whatever might be acquired in Transilvania, Bosnia, Sclavonia, and Croatia. The same electors were to have obliged themselves, by oath, to assist it upon all occasions; and they were to have been particularly careful never to grant their suffrages from partiality, artifice, or intrigue; but always to confer the dignity on a prince, who, by his great qualifications, particularly for war, should be generally acknowledged as most proper. Poland being, from its nearness to Turkey, Muscovy, and Tartary, in the same situation with Hungary, was also to have been an elective kingdom, by the same eight potentates; and its power was to have been augmented, by annexing to it whatever should be conquered from the infidels adjoining to its own frontiers, and by determining in its favour those disputes which it had with all its other neighbours. Switzerland, when augmented by Franche-comté, Alsace, the Tirol, and other territories, was to have been united into a sovereign republic, governed by a council or senate, of which the emperor, the princes of Germany, and the Venetians, were to have been umpires.

The changes to be made in Italy were, that the pope should be declared a secular prince, and bear rank among the monarchs of Europe, and under this title should possess Naples, Apulia, Calabria, and all their dependencies, which should be indissolubly united to St. Peter's patrimony; but in case the holy father had opposed this, which indeed could scarce have been sup-

posed, the disposition must then have been changed, and the kingdom of Naples would have been divided and disposed of as the electoral kings should have determined. Sicily was to have been ceded to the republic of Venice, by letters from the same eight principal potentates, upon condition that it should render homage for it to every pope, who should bear the title of Immediate Chief of the whole Italian republic; otherwise, for this reason, called the Republic of the Church. The other members of this republic were to have been Genoa, Florence, Mantua, Modena, Parma, and Lucca, without any alterations in their government: Bologna and Ferrara were to have been made free cities; and all these governments were every twenty years to have rendered homage to the pope their chief, by the gift of a crucifix of the value of ten thousand crowns.

Of the three great republics of Europe, it appears, upon the first glance, that this would have been the most brilliant and the richest. Nevertheless, it would not have been so; for what belonged to the duke of Savoy was not comprised herein. His territories were to have been constituted one of the great monarchies of Europe, hereditary to males and females, and to have borne the title of the kingdom of Lombardy; wherein, beside the territory so called, the Milanese and Montferrat would also have been comprised; and the duke of Mantua, in exchange for these, was to have the dutchy of Cremona. An authentic testimony of the institution would have been given by the pope, the emperor, and the other sovereigns of the Christian republic.

Among all these different dismemberings, we may observe that France received nothing for itself, but the glory of distributing them with equity. Henry had de-

clared this to be his intention long before. He even sometimes said, with equal moderation and good sense, that were these dispositions once firmly established, he would have voluntarily consented to have the extent of France determined by a majority of suffrages.* Nevertheless, as the districts of Artois, Hainault, Cambray, Cambresis, Tournay, Namur, and Luxembourg, might more suitably be annexed to France than to any other nation, they were to have been ceded to Henry; but to have been divided into ten distinct governments, and bestowed on so many French princes or lords, all of them bearing rank as sovereigns.

In regard to England it was precisely the same: this was a determined point between Elizabeth and Henry, the two princes who were authors of the scheme, probably from an observation made by this queen, that the Britannic isles, in all the different states through which they had passed, whether under one or several monarchs, elective or hereditary, as well in the male as female line, and in all the variations of their laws and policy, had never experienced any great disappointments or misfortunes, but when their sovereigns had meddled in affairs out of their little continent. It seems, indeed, as if they were concentred in it even by nature, and their happiness appears to depend entirely on themselves, without having any concerns with their neighbours, provided that they seek only to maintain peace in the three nations subject to them, by governing each

* What then does Sirı mean, when he entertains us with the design which he falsely affirms Henry the Great had to join Lorrain to France? (Tom. I. p. 555,) and to get Savoy ceded to him? (Tom. II. p. 61.) What he says of the dispositions, in regard to the Pope and the Venetians, &c. (Tom. II. p. 180.) is equally false. This writer seems indeed to have been in the pay of the house of Austria.

according to its own laws and customs. To render every thing equal between France and England, Brabant from the dutchy of Limbourg, the jurisdiction of Malines, and the other dependencies on Flemish Flanders, Gallican or imperial, were to have been formed into eight sovereign fiefs, to be given to so many princes or lords of this nation.

These two parts excepted, all the rest of the seventeen United Provinces, whether belonging to Spain or not, were to have been erected into a free and independent state, under the title of the Belgic republic; though there was one other fief to be formed from them, bearing the title of a principality, to be granted to the prince of Orange; also some other inconsiderable indemnities for three or four other persons. The succession of Cleves was to have been divided among those princes whom the emperor would have deprived of it, as the means of gratifying them at the expense of the house of Austria, as well as some other princes of the same district, to whom the imperial towns situated therein, would have been granted. Even Sweden and Denmark, though they were to be considered as under the influence of the same law which England and France had imposed on themselves, would, by this distribution, have enlarged their territories, and acquired other considerable advantages. An end would have been put to the perpetual troubles which agitated these two kingdoms; and this, I think, would have been rendering them no inconsiderable service. All these cessions, exchanges, and transpositions towards the north of Germany, were to have been determined by the kings of France, England, and Lombardy, and the republic of Venice.

And now, perhaps, the purport of the design may be perceived, which was to divide Europe equally among a certain number of powers, in such a manner that none of them might have cause either of envy or fear, from the possessions or power of the others. The number of them was reduced to fifteen; and they were of three kinds: six great hereditary monarchies, five elective monarchies, and four sovereign republics. The six hereditary monarchies were France, Spain, England or Britain, Denmark, Sweden, and Lombardy; the five elective monarchies were the Empire, the Papacy or Pontificate, Poland, Hungary, and Bohemia; the four republics were the Venetian, the Italian, or what, from its dukes, may be called the Ducal, the Swiss, Helvetic, or Confederate, and the Belgic, or Provincial republic.

The laws and ordinances proper to cement an union between all these princes, and to maintain that harmony which should be once established among them, the reciprocal oaths and engagements in regard both to religion and policy, the mutual assurances in respect to the freedom of commerce, and the measures to be taken to make all these partitions with equity and to the general content and satisfaction of the parties: all these matters are to be understood; nor is it necessary to say any thing of the precaution taken by Henry in regard to them. The most that could have happened would have been some trifling difficulties, which would easily have been obviated in the general council, representing all the states of Europe; the establishment of which was certainly the happiest invention that could have been conceived, to prevent those innovations which time often introduces in the wisest and most useful institutions.

The model of this general council of Europe had been formed on that of the ancient Amphyctions of Greece, with such alterations only as rendered it suitable to our customs, climate, and policy. It consisted of a certain number of commissioners, ministers, or plenipotentiaries from all the governments of the Christian republic, who were to be constantly assembled as a senate, to deliberate on any affairs which might occur; to discuss the different interests, pacify the quarrels, clear up and determine all the civil, political, and religious affairs of Europe, whether within itself or with its neighbours. The form and manner of proceeding in the senate would have been more particularly determined by the suffrages of the senate itself. Henry was of opinion that it should be composed of four commissioners from each of the following potentates: the emperor, the pope, the kings of France, Spain, England, Denmark, Sweden, Lombardy, Poland, and the republic of Venice; and of two only from the other republics and inferior powers, which altogether would have composed a senate of about sixty-six persons, who should have been re-chosen every three years.

In regard to the place of meeting, it remained to be determined, whether it would be better for the council to be fixed or ambulatory, divided into three, or united in one. If it were divided into three, each containing twenty-two magistrates, then each of them must have been fixed in such a centre as should appear to be most commodious, as Paris or Bourges for one, and somewhere about Trente and Cracovia for the two others. If it were judged more expedient not to divide their assembly, whether fixed or ambulatory, it must have been nearly in the centre of Europe, and would consequently have been fixed in some one of the fourteen cities fol-

lowing: Metz, Luxembourg, Nancy, Cologne, Mayence, Treves, Franckfort, Wirtzbourg, Heidelberg, Spire, Worms, Strasbourg, Basle, or Besançon.

Besides this general council, it would perhaps have been proper to have constituted some others, of an inferior degree, for the particular convenience of different districts. For example, were six such created they might have been placed at Dantzick, Nuremberg, Vienna, Bologna, Constance; and the last, wherever it should be judged most convenient for the kingdoms of France, Spain, England and the Belgic republic. But whatever the number or form of these particular councils might have been, it would have been absolutely necessary, that they should be subordinate, and recur, by appeal, to the great general council, whose decisions, when considered as proceeding from the united authority of all the sovereigns pronounced in a manner equally free and absolute, must have been regarded as so many final and irrevocable decrees.

But let us quit these speculative designs, in which practice and experience would perhaps have caused many alterations: and let us come to the means actually employed by Henry to facilitate the execution of his great design.

To gain one of the most powerful princes of Europe, with whom to concert all his designs, was what Henry always considered as of the utmost consequence: and this was the reason, that after the death of Elizabeth, who had indissolubly united the interests of the two crowns of France and England, every means was used which might inspire her successor, king James, with all her sentiments. Had I but succeeded in the solemn embassy, the particulars of which I have related already,

so far as to have gained this prince's consent to have his name appear openly with Henry's, this military confederacy, especially if it had, in like manner, been strengthened with the names of the kings of Denmark and Sweden, would have prevented the troubles and difficulties of many negociations: but nothing farther could be obtained of the king of England than the same promises which were required of the other courts; namely, that he would not only not oppose the confederacy, but, when Henry had made his designs public, would declare himself in his favour, and contribute towards it in the same manner as the other powers interested therein. A means was, indeed, afterwards found to obtain the execution of this promise, in a manner so much the more easy, as it did not disturb the natural indolence of this prince; and this was, by getting what he hesitated to undertake in his own name, executed by his son, the prince of Wales, who, as soon as he had obtained his father's promise, that he would at least not obstruct his proceedings, anticipated Henry's utmost wishes; being animated with a thirst of glory, and desire to render himself worthy the esteem and alliance of Henry; for he was to marry the eldest of the daughters of France. He wrote me several letters upon this subject, and expressed himself in the manner I have mentioned. He also farther said, that the king of France might depend upon having six thousand foot and fifteen hundred horse, which he would oblige himself to bring into his service whenever they should be required: and this number was afterwards augmented by two thousand more foot, and eight cannons, maintained in all respects at the expense of England for three years at least. The king of Sweden did not show himself less zealous for the common cause;

and the king of Denmark also appeared to be equally well disposed in its favour.

In the mean time we were indefatigable in our negociations in the different courts of Europe, particularly in the circles of Germany and the United Provinces, where the king, for this purpose, had sent Boissise, Fresne-Canaye, Baugy, Ancel, and Bongars. The council of the States were very soon unanimous in their determinations: the prince of Orange sent the sieurs Malderet and Brederode from them to offer the king fifteen thousand foot, and three thousand horse. They were soon followed by the landgrave of Hesse, and the prince of Anhalt, to whom, as well as to the prince of Orange, the confederacy was obliged for being increased by the duke of Savoy; by all of the reformed religion in Hungary, Bohemia, and Lower Austria; by many Protestant princes and towns in Germany; in fine, by all the Swiss Cantons of this religion. And when the succession of Cleves, which the emperor showed himself disposed to usurp, became another incentive to the confederacy, there was then scarce any part of Germany that was not for us; which evidently appeared from the result of the general assembly at Hall. The elector of Saxony, who perhaps remained alone of the opposite party, might have been embarrassed in an affair, out of which he would probably have found it difficult to extricate himself; and this was to have been done, by suggesting to him the branch of John Frederic, deprived of this electorate by Charles V.

There were several of these powers, in regard to whom I am persuaded nothing would have been risked, by disclosing to them the whole intent and scope of the design. On the contrary, they would probably have se-

conded it with the greater ardour, when they found the destruction of the Austrian grandeur was a determined point. These powers were, more particularly, the Venetians, the United Provinces, almost all the Protestants, and especially the Evangelics of Germany. But as too many precautions could not be taken, to prevent the Catholic powers from being prejudiced against the new alliance in which they were to be engaged, a too hasty discovery, either of the true motives, or the whole intent of the design, was therefore cautiously avoided. It was at first concealed from all without exception, and afterwards revealed but to a few persons of approved discretion, and those only such as were absolutely necessary to engage others to join the confederacy. The association was for a long time spoke of to others only as a kind of general treaty of peace, wherein such methods would be projected, as the public benefit, and the general service of Europe, might suggest as necessary to stop the progress of the excessive powers of the house of Austria. Our ambassadors and agents had orders only to demand of these princes a renewal or commencement of alliance, in order more effectually to succeed in the projected peace: to consult with them upon the means whereby to effect it; to appear as if they were sent only, in conjunction with them, to endeavour the discovery of these means; but yet to second them, and according to the disposition in which they were, to insinuate, as if by accidental conjecture, some notion of a new method more proper to maintain the equilibrium of Europe, and to secure to each religion a more undisturbed repose than they had hitherto enjoyed. The proposals made to the kings of England and Sweden, and the dukes of Savoy and Lorrain, for alliances by mar-

riage proved very successful; it was absolutely determined, that the dauphin should espouse the heiress of Lorrain, which dutchy still continued, as before, to depend on the empire.

But no precaution appeared so necessary, nor was more strongly recommended to our negociators, than to convince all the princes of Europe of the disinterestedness with which Henry was resolved to act on this occasion. This point was indefatigably laboured, and they were convinced of it, when, on the supposition that it would be necessary to have recourse to arms, we strongly protested, that the forces, the treasures, and even the person of Henry, might be depended on; and this in a manner so generous on his side, that, instead of expecting to be rewarded, or even indemnified for them, he was voluntarily inclined to give the most positive assurances, not to reserve to himself a single town, nor the smallest district. This moderation, of which at last no one doubted, made a suitable impression, especially when it was perceived to be so much the more generous, as there was sufficient to excite and satisfy the desires of all. And, in the interim, before the solemn publication of this absolute renunciation, which was to have been made in the manifestos that were preparing, Henry gave a proof of it, that was an absolute demonstration to the pope.

No one being ignorant that as it was, at least, intended to deprive Spain of those of its usurpations which were the most manifestly unjust, Navarre and Rousillon would infallibly revert to France: the king therefore voluntarily offered to exchange them for the two kingdoms of Naples and Sicily; and at the same time to make a present of both to the pope and the republic of Venice.

This, certainly, was renouncing the most incontestible right he could have to any of the territories of which this crown was to be deprived; and by submitting this affair, as he did, to the determination of the pope and the Venetians, he the more sensibly obliged them, as both the honour and profit which might arise therefrom would be in their favour. The pope, therefore, on the first proposition made to him, even anticipated Henry's intentions: he immediately demanded, whether, as affairs were then situated, the several powers would approve his taking upon him the office of common mediator, to establish peace in Europe, and convert the continual wars among its several princes into a perpetual war against the Infidels, which was a part of the design he had been very careful to acquaint him with: and the pope sufficiently showed, that he was desirous nothing should be done without his participation, and that he was still less disposed to refuse the advantage offered to him.

Paul V, when a favourable opportunity offered, explained himself more openly on this head. Ubaldini, his nuncio, told the king, that his holiness, for the confederacy against the house of Austria, would, on various pretences, engage to raise ten thousand foot, fifteen hundred horse, and ten cannons; provided his majesty would promise to defray the necessary expenses of their subsistence for three years; would give all possible security for the cession of Naples, and the other rights of homage according to promise; and would sincerely consent to the other conditions, in regard to the treaty which he should think necessary to impose. These conditions at least the principal of them, were, that only Catholics should be elected emperors; that the Roman religion

should be maintained in all its rights, and the ecclesiastics in all their priveleges and immunities; and the protestants should not be permitted to establish themselves in places where they were not established before the treaty. The king promised Ubaldini, that he would religiously observe all these conditions; and farther, he relinquished to the Pope the honour of being the arbitrator of all those regulations to be made in the establishment of the new republic.

The removing of these difficulties in regard to the Pope was of no inconsiderable consequence; for his example would not fail to be of great force in determining the other Catholic powers, especially those of Italy. Nothing was neglected which might promote the favourable dispositions in which they appeared to be, by punctually paying the cardinals and petty princes of Italy their pensions, and even by adding to them several other gratuities. The establishment of a new monarchy in Italy was the only pretence these petty courts had for not joining the confederacy; but this vain apprehension would be easily dissipated. The particular advantages which each would acquire, might alone have satisfied them in this respect; but if not, all opposers might have been threatened with being declared, after a certain time, divested of all right to the proposed advantages, and even of all pretensions to the empire, or the elective kingdoms; and that the republics amongst them should be converted into sovereignties, and sovereignties into republics. There is but little probability that any of them would even have hesitated what to do. The punishment of the first offender would have compelled the submission of all these petty states, who were besides sufficiently sensible of their impotence. But this method was not to be used but on failure of all others; and even

then, no opportunity would have been neglected of showing them favour.

And now we are arrived at the point to which every thing was advanced, at the fatal moment of the death of Henry the Great; and the following is a circumstantial detail of the forces for the war, which all the parties concerned had, in conjunction with him, agreed to furnish: The contingents of the kings of England, Sweden, and Denmark, were each eight thousand foot, fifteen hundred horse, and eight cannons; to be raised and maintained, in all respects, at their expense, at least for three years; and this expense, reckoning ten livres a month for each foot soldier, thirty livres for each trooper, the pay of the officers included, and the year to be composed of ten months, would amount, for each of these states, to three millions three hundred and seventy thousand livres for three years; the expense of the artillery, fifteen hundred livres a month for each piece, being also included. The princes of Germany, beforementioned, were to furnish twenty-five thousand foot, ten thousand horse, and forty cannons: they had themselves computed the expense at nine or ten millions for three years. The United Provinces, twelve thousand foot, two thousand horse, and ten cannons: the expense twelve millions. Hungary, Bohemia, and the other Evangelics of Germany, the same number, and nearly at the same expense. The Pope, ten thousand foot, fifteen hundred horse, and eight cannons. The duke of Savoy, eighteen thousand foot, two thousand horse, and twelve cannons. The Venetians, twelve thousand foot, two thousand horse, and twelve cannons. The expense of these last mentioned armaments the king himself had engaged to defray. The total of all these foreign for-

ces, allowing for deficiencies, which might probably have happened, would always have been, at least, one hundred thousand foot, from twenty to twenty-five thousand horse, and about one hundred and twenty cannons.

The king, on his side, had actually on foot two good and well furnished armies; the first, which he was to have commanded in person, consisted of twenty thousand foot, all native French, eight thousand Switzers, four thousand lansquenets or Walloons, five thousand horse, and twenty cannons. The second, to be commanded by Lesdiguieres, in the neighbourhood of the Alps, consisted of ten thousand foot, one thousand horse, and ten cannons; beside a flying camp, of four thousand foot, six hundred horse, and ten cannons; and a reserve of two thousand foot, to garrison those places where they might be necessary.* We will here make a general calculation of all these troops.

The twenty thousand foot, at twenty-one livres a month to each man, including the appointments of generals and officers, would, by the month, require four hundred and twenty thousand livres, and by the year, five millions, and forty thousand livres; the eight thousand Switzers and four thousand lansquenets, three millions; the five thousand horse, at sixty livres a month to each, by the month, would require two hundred and forty thousand livres, and by the year, two millions eight hundred

* There are some variations in our Memoirs in regard to the number of men, both in the royal grand army, which, in different places, is said to be composed of thirty, thirty-two, and thirty-six thousand foot, of four, five, six, and eight thousand horse, and from thirty to fifty cannons; and in that of the confederate princes of Germany, sometimes computed even at forty thousand foot, and twelve thousand horse; similar differences often occur in regard to those of Italy, and the other confederate princes: neither are the calculations of the expense always the same, nor quite just in their estimates.

and forty thousand livres: this computation is made so high as sixty livres a month to each, because the pay of the officers, and particularly of the king's white troops, composed of a thousand men of the first rank in the kingdom, who served as volunteers, was therein included. The expense of the twenty large cannons, six culverins, and four demi-culverins, supposing all necessary furniture for them provided, would amount to three thousand six hundred livres a month for each piece; the thirty together would consequently require one hundred and eight thousand livres. Extraordinary expenses and losses, in regard to the provisions and ammunition for this army, might be computed at one hundred and fifty thousand livres.

Next, for expenses, whether ordinary or extraordinary, in spies, for the sick and wounded, and other unforeseen contingencies, computing at the highest, a like sum of one million eight hundred thousand livres. To supply the deficiencies which might happen in the armies of the confederate princes, to pay the pensions, and to answer other particular exigencies which might arise in the kingdom, three hundred thousand livres a month; for the year, three millions six hundred thousand livres. The army of Lesdiguieres would require three millions a year; and as much for each of the armies of the Pope, the Venetians, and the duke of Savoy. These four last articles together, make twelve millions a year, which, added to the preceding sums, amount in the whole to about thirty millions one hundred and sixty thousand livres a year.

It remains only to triple this total for the three years, during which it was supposed there might be occasion for the forces, and the whole amount will appear to be

between ninety and ninety-one millions, which might nearly be necessary to defray the expenses of the intended war; I say nearly, for in this calculation I have not included the flying camp, nor the two thousand men for garrisons: the first of these two articles, at the rate of eighteen livres a month to each foot soldier, and fifty livres to each trooper, would require a further sum of about one hundred and thirty thousand livres a month; which, for a year, would be one million five hundred thousand livres, and four millions five hundred thousand livres for three years: the second article for the three years, would require about twelve hundred thousand livres.

On a supposition that the expense of France, on this occasion, would not have amounted to more than between ninety and ninety-five millions; which supposition is far from being hazardous, because we have here computed every thing at the highest it would bear; it is easy to show, that at the expiration of the three years, Henry would have remaining in his coffers thirty millions, over and above what would be expended. The total amount of all the receipts from the several funds, formed and to be formed for these three years, being one hundred and twenty-one millions five hundred and forty thousand livres, as appears from the three estimates which I drew up and presented to his majesty.

The first of these estimates, which contained only a list of the sums actually deposited in the Bastile, amounted to twenty-two millions four hundred and sixty thousand livres, in several coffers, marked Phelipeaux, Puget, and Bouhier: the second was another list, of the sums actually due from the farmers, partisans, and receivers-general; which might be considered as in possession, and produced another total of eighteen millions

six hundred and thirteen thousand livres; these two totals together made forty-one millions seventy-three thousand livres, which the king would immediately have at his disposal: to acquire the rest of these hundred and twenty-one millions, I had recourse, in the third estimate, to no new taxations: the whole remainder would arise solely from the offers of augmentation upon the several royal revenues which the farmers and partisans had made for a lease of three years, and from what the officers of justice and the finances had voluntarily engaged to furnish, provided they might be permitted the free enjoyment of certain privileges: so that in these one hundred and twenty-one millions, I had not comprehended the three years receipts of the other royal revenues. And in case it were afterwards necessary to have recourse to means somewhat more burthensome, I had given the king another estimate, whereby, instead of these one hundred and twenty-one millions, it appeared that one hundred and seventy-five millions might have been raised. I also demonstrated, that upon any pressing emergency, this kingdom could open itself resources of treasure that are almost innumerable.

It was very much to be wished, that the sums of money and the numbers of men to be furnished by the other confederates, would be equally well secured by such estimates: but whatever deficiences might have happened, having forty-one millions to distribute wherever it might be found necessary, what obstacles could Henry have to fear from a power who was known to be destitute of money, and even of troops? no one being ignorant, that the best and most numerous forces which Spain had in its service were drawn from Sicily, Na-

ples, and Lombardy; or else were Germans, Switzers, and Walloons.

Every thing therefore concurring to promote success, and good magazines being placed in proper parts of the passage, the king was on the point of marching, at the head of his army, directly to Mezières; from whence taking his rout by Clinchamp, Orchimont, Beauraign, Offais, Longpré, &c. after having caused five forts to be erected in these quarters, and therein placed his two thousand men destined for that purpose, with the necessary provisions and ammunition, he would, near Duren and Stavelo, have joined the two armies, which the princes of Germany and the United Provinces would have caused to march thither; and then beginning by occupying all those passages through which the enemy might find entrance into the territories of Juliers and Cleves, these principalities, which were a pretext for the armament, would consequently have immediately submitted to him, and would have been sequestrated, till it should appear how the emperor and the king of Spain would act, in regard to the designs of the confederate princes.

This was the moment fixed on to publish and make known throughout Europe, the declarations, in form of manifestos, which were to open the eyes of all in regard to their true interests, and the real motives which had caused Henry and the confederate princes thus to take up arms. These manifestos were composed with the greatest care; a spirit of justice, honesty, and good faith, of disinterestedness and good policy, were every where apparent in them: and, without wholly discovering the several changes intended to be made in Europe, it was intimated, that their common interest had thus compel-

led its princes to arm themselves; and not only to prevent the house of Austria from getting possession of Cleves, but also to divest her of the United Provinces, and of whatever else she unjustly possessed; that their intentions were to distribute these territories among such princes and states as were the weakest and that the design was such, as could not surely give occasion to a war in Europe; that, though armed, the kings of France and the North rather choose to be mediators in the causes of complaint which Europe, through them, made against the house of Austria, and only sought to determine amicably all differences subsisting among the several princes; and that whatever was done on this occasion, should be not only, with the unanimous consent of all these powers, but even of all their people, who were hereby invited to give in their opinions to the confederate princes: such also would have been the substance of the circular letters which Henry and the associated princes would at the same time have sent to all places subject to them; that so the people being informed, and joining their suffrages, an universal cry from all parts of Christendom would have been raised against the house of Austria.

As it was determined to avoid with the utmost caution, whatever might give umbrage to any one, and Henry being desirous to give still more convincing proofs to his confederates, that to promote their true interests was his sole study and design; to the letters already mentioned he would have added others to be written to different courts, particularly to the electors of Cologne and Treves, the bishops of Munster, Liege, and Paderborn; and the duke and dutchess of Lorrain; and this conduct would have been pursued, in regard even to our enemies,

in the letters which were to be written to the archduke, and the infanta his wife, to the Emperor himself, and to all the Austrian princes, requesting them, from the strongest and most pressing motives, to embrace the only right and reasonable party; in all places, nothing would have been neglected, to instruct, convince, and gain confidence; the execution of all engagements, and the distribution or sequestration of whatever territories might require to be so disposed, would have been strictly, and even scrupulously, observed; force would never have been employed, till arguments, intreaties, embassies, and negociations, should have failed: finally, even in the use of arms, it would have been not as enemies, but pacifiers: the queen would have advanced as far as Metz, accompanied by the whole court, and attended by such pomp and equipages as were suitable only to peace.

Henry had projected a new method of discipline in his camp, which, very propably, would have produced the good effects intended by it, especially if his example had been imitated by the other princes his allies; he intended to have created four marshals of France, or at least four camp marshals, whose sole care should have been to maintain universal order, discipline, and subordination: the first of these would have had the inspection of the cavalry, the second of the French infantry, the third of the foreign forces, and the fourth of whatever concerned the artillery, ammunition, and provisions; and the king would have required an exact and regular account from these four officers, of whatever was transacted by them in their respective divisions. He applied himself with equal ardour to cause all military virtues

to be revered and honoured in his army, by granting all employs and places of trust to merit only, by preferring good officers, by rewarding the soldiers, by punishing blasphemies and other impious language, by showing a regard both for his own troops and those of his confederates, by stifling a spirit of discord, caused by a difference of religions; and, finally, by uniting emulation with that harmony of sentiments which contributes more than all the rest to obtain victory.

The consequence of this enterprise, with regard to war, would have depended on the manner in which the emperor and the king of Spain should receive the propositions and reply to the manifestos of the confederate princes; it seems probable that the emperor, submitting to force, would have consented to every thing: I am even persuaded he would have been the first to demand an amicable interview with the king of France, that he might at least extricate himself with honour out of the difficulties in which he would have been involved; and he would probably have been satisfied with assurances, that the imperial dignity, with all its rights and prerogatives, should be secured to him for his life. The archdukes had made great advances; they engaged to permit the king, with all his troops, to enter their territories and towns, provided they committed no hostilities in them, and paid punctually, in all places, for whatever they required: if these appearances were not deceitful, Spain, being abandoned by all, must, though unwillingly, have submitted to the will of its conquerors.

But it may be supposed, that all the branches of the house of Austria would, on this occasion, have united, and, in defence of their common interests, would have used all the efforts of which they were capable. In this

case, Henry and the confederate princes, by declaring war in form against their enemies, and depriving the Spaniards of all communications, especially with the Low Countries; and having, as we have said, united all their forces, given audience to the princes of Germany, promised assistance to the people of Hungary and Bohemia who should come to implore it of them; and finally, secured the territory of Cleves; these princes, I say, would then have caused their three armies to advance towards Basle and Strasbourg to support the Switzers, who after having, for form's sake, asked leave of the emperor, would have declared for the union. The United Provinces, though at a considerable distance from these armies, would yet have been sufficiently defended by the flying camp, which Henry would have caused to advance towards them: by the arms of England and the North, to whose protection they would be entrusted: by the care which at first would have been taken to get possession of Charlemont, Maestrich, Namur, and other places near the Meuse; and finally, by the naval forces of these provinces, which, in conjunction with those of England, would have reigned absolute masters at sea.

These measures being taken, the war could have fallen only in Italy or Germany: and supposing it to have happened in the former, the three armies of Henry, the prince of Orange, and the princes of Germany, quitting Franche-Comté, after having fortified it in the same manner as the Low-Countries, by a small body of troops, would have marched with their forces towards the Alps, where they would have been joined by those of Lesdiguieres, the pope, the Venetians, and the duke of Savoy; who then would have declared themselves openly; the duke of Savoy, by requiring a portion for his dutchess,

equal to what had been given to the infanta Isabella; and the other powers, by demanding the execution of the agreement in regard to Navarre, Naples, and Sicily: and thus, from all parts of Europe, war would be declared against Spain. If the enemy should appear inclined to draw the war into Germany, then the confederates, having left a considerable number of troops in Italy, would have penetrated even into the heart of Germany, where, from Hungary and Bohemia, they would have been strengthened by those powerful succours which were there preparing.

The other events, in consequence of these dispositions, can only be conjectured, because they would greatly depend on the degree of alacrity with which the enemy should oppose the rapidity of our conquests, and on the readiness with which the confederates, especially those at the extremity of Germany, should make good their engagements. Nevertheless, I am persuaded, that from the dispositions as here laid down, there are none but must regard the house of Austria as struck by the blow whose force was for ever to annihilate its power, and open a passage to the execution of the other projected designs, to which this attack could only be considered as the preliminary: I will add too (and here the voice of all Europe will vindicate me from the imputation of partiality) that if the force necessary to render such an enterprise successful does always depend on the person of the chief who conducts it, this could not have been better conferred, than upon Henry the Great. With a valour alone capable of surmounting the greatest difficulties: and a presence of mind, which neither neglected nor lost any opportunities of advantage; with a prudence which, without precipitating any thing, or attempting too

many things at a time, could regularly connect them together, and perfectly knew what might and what might not be the result of time; with a consummate experience, and finally, with all those other great qualifications, whether as a warrior or politician, which were so remarkable in this prince; what is there which might not have been obtained? This was the meaning of that modest device which this great king caused to be inscribed on some of the last medals that were struck under his reign, *Nil sine concilio.*

SUPPLEMENT

TO THE

LIFE OF THE DUKE OF SULLY,

AFTER HIS RETREAT.

Conduct of the duke of Sully in the assembly of the Protestants at Châtelleraut; and of this assembly with regard to the personal affairs of Sully: the part he has in the duke of Rohan's disputes with the queen-regent on account of St. Jean-d'Angely. The queen-regent's reliance upon him; and the letters which she writes to him during the rebellion of the princes and the Protestants. Councils which he gives her; and the services he performs on this occasion. He is made marshal of France. His discontent with his son and grandson. State of his family; and the disposition which he makes of his estates among his children. His death. Honours paid him by the dutchess of Sully. His tomb and epitaph. An account of his domestic conduct, and of his private life. Occupations of the dutchess his wife. The duke of Sully's sentiments upon religion. His public and private buildings.

THE first time we find the duke of Sully mentioned by the historians, after his retreat, is upon his appearance at the assembly of Protestants, held at Châtelleraut, in the year 1611. His mind was still embittered by the treatment he had met with at court; he was well informed that the duke of Bouillon, who, contrary to his real interest and character, was preparing to go thither to support the queen's rights against the Protestants, had put himself at the head of his enemies, and was endeavouring to deprive him of the government of Poitou, and of his post of master-general of the ordnance, which the queen regent had promised to bestow upon him, in re-

ward for the services she expected from him upon this occasion; it is not, therefore, surprising that, in such a conjuncture, the duke of Sully should act there with vigour and spirit. Those who favour the duke of Bouillon have, through resentment that he failed in his attempt, accused the dukes of Sully and Rohan of seeking to rekindle the war between the Protestants and the Catholics; but they are the only persons who speak in this manner. All the other writers agree that the conduct of M. de Sully was wholly free from blame; and indeed his enemies acted with so much heat and malignity against him, that the author of the French Mercury,* whom I shall follow in this period of the duke of Sully's history, condemns him for not taking the only measures that remained to secure his repose. Here follows a short account of what passed, with regard to the duke of Sully, at the assembly of Châtelleraut, or of Samur: for his enemies, being apprehensive that he would be too powerful if it was held at Châtelleraut, caused it to be transferred to Samur.

The duke of Bouillon making no secret of his intentions to reduce the Calvinists his brethren, and the duke of Sully in particular, to the last extremity, the common interest reunited the latter with du Plessis Mornay and the principal Protestant ministers, who, till then, as has been seen through the course of these Memoirs, had acted with great reserve towards him, and great distrust of his sentiments. They began by refusing the dignity of president of their assembly to the duke of Bouillon, and conferred it on du Plessis; and made him sensible how much they were offended at the part he had acted,

* Anno 1611, p. 75.

by continually opposing him: so that he could not obtain any of those demands which might probably have been granted to an agent of the Catholic religion, which was a convincing proof that the queen-regent committed a great error when she made choice of the duke of Bouillon to serve her on this occasion. However, a kind of reconciliation was made between him and the duke of Sully, through the interposition of du Plessis: and from that time the duke found no more obstacles to hinder him from interesting the Protestant body in his particular cause, which became one of the chief subjects of their deliberations.

The assembly addressed him, entreated, and enjoined him (these are the terms made use of by the French Mercury) not to resign his employments, promised to support him, &c.; to which the duke of Sully answered by a speech, in which he asked the advice of the assembly upon four things. 1st, If he ought to take no notice of the proceedings of his enemies with respect to him? 2d, If, on the contrary, he ought himself to make a demand of being again restored to his places? 3d, If it was more eligible to accept of a recompense for them; and, lastly, If this recompense ought to be honour and security rather than profit? for it was to conceal the design they had of ruining him entirely, that the court made a proposal to him to receive a marshal's staff, or a considerable sum of money in exchange for his post of master-general of the ordnance, and his government of Poitou. M. de Sully concluded this discourse, in which he could not forbear mingling some complaints of the rigour which the council of the queen-regent used towards him, with excusing himself for not having sooner laid before them the hardships he suffered on account of the great difficulty he found to persuade him-

self that there were really such plots formed against him, as well as of his fears of displeasing some persons to whom he owed all imaginable respect.

This discourse was as agreeable to the Protestants as it was displeasing to Bullion and the rest of the queen's agents. In their answer they indeed bestowed very high praises on the duke of Sully's administration; but they taxed him with being ungenerous, and of having entertained a design to force the queen to restore him to his place in the ministry. M. de Sully answered this accusation by another remonstrance, in which he referred his interests to the assembly. The duke of Bouillon perceiving what was likely to be the event, took off the mask a second time, and began to cabal with all the Protestants, whom he thought there was a possibility of gaining. In effect, he drew over some; but all his endeavours to gain the duke of Rohan were fruitless: and having neither been able, with all his address, to hinder, the greater number from adhering to the party of his adversary, or to suspend the conclusion, they passed on to their deliberations, the result of which was, that they would assist M. de Sully, if his administration was enquired into, *by unlawful ways.*

Bullion, and the rest of the queen's creatures, put every thing in motion to obtain a recantation or restriction. As for the duke of Bouillon, he broke out into rage and exclamation: he gave the most violent counsels to the queen, who contented herself, however, with sending letters in the king's name to the assembly, which du Plessis, for fear of the consequences they might produce, thought proper to suppress. They now had recourse to mediums and modifications. All the other articles were amicably settled, and that which regarded

M. de Sully was suffered to rest, because it was apparent to the whole world that they could not, with any shadow of justice, accuse him of being an unfaitful minister, much less an enemy to the state; and because the duke of Bouillon, being disgusted with the queen for disappointing him in his expectations of reward, ceased on a sudden to act with the same heat and animosity. The duke of Sully, therefore, remained in the same situation as when he retired from court.

The following year (1612,) the war between the two religions was upon the point of being resumed, by an incident for which our Memoirs seem to prepare us.* Brassac, whom his majesty had appointed to be king's lieutenant of St. Jean-d'Angely, after the death of Des-Ageaux, was driven out of that city by the duke of Rohan, whose whole conduct, from that time, sufficiently declared that his sentiments were very different from those of his father-in-law. Although the regent was then in a condition to give him law, and all the Protestants were greatly in fear of her, yet this affair was terminated wholly to the duke's advantage, who obtained all that he demanded. M. de Sully signed the agreement, which was made in the synod of Privas, between the duke of Rohan on one side, and the queen's agents on the other. This was all the share he had in this great rupture.

The two following letters, which I have transcribed from the originals, in the cabinet of the present duke of Sully, prove that the queen-mother had recourse to Maximilian on many occasions, and that he laboured with great diligence to prevent or appease the troubles which afterwards arose between the princes and the grandees of the kingdom.

* See vol. III. p. 402.

A letter from the queen-mother to the duke of SULLY.

"COUSIN,

"I have sent the sieur de Bethune your brother to "confer with you concerning the present occurrences,* "and have charged him to assure you of my affection, "and of my reliance on the continuance of yours, for "the service of the king, monsieur my son. You may "give absolute credit to what he shall say to you on both

* These occurrences were the discontent, and retreat from the court, of the prince of Condé, the dukes of Nevers, Maienne, Vendome, and Longueville, the marquis de Cœuvres and others, his partisans, being disgusted with the conduct of the queen-regent and her favourite Conchini (now marquis d'Ancre.) The prince retired to Mezieres, which was held by the duke of Nevers, while the others repaired to the different places over which their influence or power extended, where they began to collect forces together. From Mezieres the prince wrote a letter to the queen, in which he remonstrated against the disorders committed in the government under her authority, and complained that the princes of the blood, and the chief nobles of the kingdom were excluded from all share in the administration of affairs, which were confided to three or four persons, who, to maintain themselves in their authority, were constantly sowing divisions amongst the nobility, while they wasted the treasures of the state, and placed the arsenals and frontier c ties in the hands of foreigners unworthy of such employments; and concluded with a demand that an assembly of the states should be convened, as was usual during every minority, in order to confirm the different edicts, and to provide against disorders in the kingdom. He also wrote to the Parliament at Paris, and to all the nobles who had not already joined him, exhorting them to unite with him, and to the deputies-general of the Protestants, whom he took care to inform he had not forgot in his remonstrances. The queen-regent, however, by acceding to the demands of the malecontents, prevented, for the present, any further hostile proceeding; a treaty was concluded at St. Menhoult on the 15th of May, by which Amboise was placed in the hands of the prince, St. Menhoult given to the duke of Nevers, a sum of money granted to the duke of Bouillon (who had been the secret abettor of this cabal,) and an assembly of the states promised. The duke of Vendome, who refused to accede to this treaty, was soon after obliged to submit to the king, who advanced into Brittany against him at the head of an army.

" these subjects, as you would do to the person of your
" good cousin,

"MARY."

Paris, Feb. 12, 1614.

It is superscribed, " To my cousin, the duke of Sully,
" peer, and master-general of the ordnance of France."

Another letter from the queen to M. de SULLY.

" COUSIN,

" Having received your letter of the 1st instant on the
" 9th, I delayed answering it till my arrival in this pro-
" vince, to the end that, being better informed of the
" particular things which happened, and the state af-
" fairs are in at present, I might tell you with more cer-
" tainty my opinion of them all in general; but I have
" found here so much confusion and tumult, so many
" complaints and infringements of the agreement of St.
" Menhoult, that I confess I know not where to begin,
" or what to desire you to do for me upon this occasion.
" Declarations are every where made, and assurances
" given me of zeal and fidelity for the service of the king
" my son, and the public good, which are indeed very
" acceptable; but I find effects so contrary to all this,
" that I no sooner entertain any favourable hopes, than
" they vanish in an instant. I do not write this upon
" your own particular account; for I depend upon your
" affection to the good of your country and our own hap-
" piness, in proportion to the experience I have had of
" it, and the assurance you have given me; but I write
" to condole with you upon the changeableness and un-
" certainty of such proceedings. I have within these

"two days received your last letter here; the bearer of "this will tell you what I think of it.

"I do not doubt but that you have, with a freedom "and zeal becoming a good subject and an honest man, "made those remonstrances to my nephew, the prince "of Condé, which you have given me an account of in "your letter, and I am rejoiced to hear that he has tak- "en them well of you; but, if he approves of your ad- "vice, what hinders him from following it? By so doing "he will get rid of those perplexities in which you tell "me he is involved; he will receive of me every reasona- "ble proof he can desire of my good will, and all the "respect and deference due to his quality. If to assure "him of this, any thing depends upon me, I shall be "glad to know it, and to have your opinion: but I have "not yet received those letters, which he told you he "wrote to me upon that subject. I wish they may be "such as may give me that satisfaction, both with re- "spect to him and his friends, for the service of the king "my son, as he has often made me hope for, and even "request; and, this done, I shall make him such returns "as he shall have just reason to be contented with: as "likewise all those who shall follow his example.

"I have not yet seen the duke of Vendome; so that "I know not what I ought to hope from his obedience; "for I have advice that he continues to fortify Lamballe, "and has engaged a great number of soldiers, who have "served, or rather disserved him during these last com- "motions, and especially since the contract of St. Men- "hoult, to which the king my son and myself are en- "deavouring to apply the necessary remedies, by the "advice of the states of the country, which we are to

"propose to-morrow. As I promise myself that you will "always continue faithful to the interests of the king "my son, and that you will readily embrace every op- "portunity of serving him, you may make what use you "think proper of this for that purpose; and I beseech "God, cousin, &c. Written at Nantes, August 18, 1614.

"Your good cousin,

"MARY."

In the year 1616 the revolt of the Protestants broke out.* On this occasion the duke of Sully gave a con-

* Notwithstanding the stipulations of the treaty of St. Menhoult, mentioned in the preceding note, the prince of Condé was deprived of Amboise: this, with other infractions of that treaty, gave rise to the events alluded to in this and the following pages. The prince again retired from the court; issued a very severe manifesto against the queen, and the government, and proceeded to raise troops both in France and Germany. The duke of Rohan also, and his brother, were likewise in arms, and joined their forces to those of the prince. In this extremity the court had recourse to the dukes of Bouillon and Maienne, the two most considerable persons in the prince's party, whom it so far gained over, that through their persuasions the prince consented to a cessation of arms, and a conference to be held at Loudon: the duke of Sully was present at this conference, which produced another treaty of peace, equally favourable to the prince and the Huguenots. It was not, however, followed by any good consequences; for, through the persuasions of the marquis d'Ancre, the queen-regent soon after caused the prince of Condé to be arrested on a charge of still continuing his intrigues, and sent him to the bastile, from whence he was conducted to Vincennes. This violent proceeding, which, we see above, excited Sully's indignation, roused likewise that of all the prince's friends, who immediately withdrew from the court, and prepared for war. The queen, on her part, ordered three armies to take the field, under the command of the duke of Guise, marshal Montigny, and the count d'Auvergne, who had been freed from his long confinement in the bastile, through d'Ancre's influence. These commanders were every where successful. Montigny took Bourges, and the castle of Chinon, which had been granted to the orince by the treaty of Loudon: and in the beginning of 1617 the duke of Guise gained, without much resistance, all the places held by the duke of Nevers, and prepared to besiege

vincing proof that he preferred the welfare of the state to the interest of his party, and even to his own particular interest; for when it was proposed to him to reunite the party of the prince of Condé with that of the Protestants, a design which, according to all appearance, would have ruined the kingdom, the duke of Sully, whose suffrage was of the utmost consequence, refused absolutely to give it, and remained constantly attached to the king. Let us see what marshal Bassompierre says on this subject in his Memoirs: "M. de Sully, ever solicitous for the good of the state, maintained himself in the esteem and respect of both parties, and endeavoured to set them right, as long as they could subsist

Mezieres, while d'Auvergne took Pierrefonds and laid siege to Soissons. The duke of Bouillon had retired to Sedan, where he endeavoured to raise some foreign troops for the defence of that place.

In the midst of these reverses of the prince's adherents an event occurred, which not only extricated them from total ruin, and put an end to the war, but likewise gave a new turn to the whole of the affairs of the kingdom; this was the death of the marquis d'Ancre, on the 24th of April, 1617. This ambitious and worthless favourite, who had governed France for seven years, was now become the object of universal hatred, and fell at last a victim to the intrigues of M. de Luines, a favourite likewise, but of the young king, on whom he prevailed to order the marquis to be arrested; but Vitry, the captain of the guards, to whom this commission was intrusted, attempting to execute it as the marquis entered the Louvre, the latter making some resistance was killed on the spot. His wife, who, as well as himself, has been so often mentioned in these Memoirs, was immediately arrested, and shortly after beheaded by a decree of the parliament; and the chancellor Sillery, du Vair, Villeroy, and Jeannin, who had been lately displaced by d'Ancre, were restored to their several posts. The queen-mother was, at the same time, deprived of her guards, confined to her apartments, and afterwards exiled to Blois, where she continued till 1619, when she made her escape to Angouleme, through the assistance of the duke d'Epernon; here she came to an agreement with the king her son, which was confirmed by a treaty. In this year also the prince of Condé was set at liberty, and continued ever after a faithful adherent to the king.

in the state they were, by sending informations sometimes to the queen-mother, and sometimes to the prince; and, on August the 26th, the duke of Sully demanded an audience of the queen. He then told her, that matters were brought to such extremity, that it was not possible they could continue eight days longer in the same situation; that as the balance was now held, the whole authority must necessarily fall into the hands of the prince; that it was still in her own choice whether to keep or suffer herself to be dispossessed of her's. He declared that she was not secure in Paris, and that she and her children would be safer in the field, with a thousand horse, than in the Louvre, while the minds of the nobles and people were thus enraged. He said, that his duty, and the obligations he had to the deceased king, required that he should make her these remonstrances: and that, if there was no other remedy for the present evils but the loss of his life, he would sacrifice it willingly for the preservation of the king, herself, and the state; then, taking leave of her, he implored her to consider well what he had said; and added, that, if she did not apply the only fit and reasonable remedy to these commotions, she would be answerable for all the consequences of them, since she had been warned beforehand of what was likely to happen."

The author of the History of the Mother and Son* renders, in spite of himself, this justice to the duke of Sully: "M. de Sully," says he, "demanded an audience "of the queen, that he might confer with her upon an "affair, which, he said, was of no less importance than "the preservation of the king's life and her's. The

* Tom. II. p. 61, 62.

"queen had taken physic that day; but, upon a matter "of such consequence, she thought she could not dis- "pense with herself from seeing him. The king hap- "pened, by chance, to be present; as were likewise the "sieurs Mangot and Barbin. The duke of Sully then "made a speech, in which he expatiated upon the bad "designs of the princes, and the inevitable dangers "which he foresaw for the king. The sieurs Mangot "and Barbin told him, that it was not enough to disco- "ver an evil; he ought likewise to propose some proper "remedies to obviate it. To this he only added, that "the attempt was hazardous, and that they must ex- "pect to see very fatal consequences; then, quitting the "queen's closet, he said, 'Sire,' and you, madam, I en- "treat your majesties to think well on what I have said: "I have discharged my conscience; would to God you "were in the midst of twelve hundred horse! I see no "other remedy." Saying this he went away.

It must be confessed, that to the hatred which this writer bore the duke of Sully, is owing the following recital:* "This prince of Condé being arrested, the "ministers told the queen, that, unless she released him "all was lost. M. de Sully, whose vehemence of tem- "per would not allow him time for reflection, nor to "give his advice in the present exigence on what might "be apprehended for the future, without blaming past "proceedings, said, that whoever had counselled the "queen to arrest the prince, had ruined the state. The "queen replied, that she was astonished to hear him "speak in that manner; and that he must certainly have "lost his reason, since he did not remember what he

* Tom. II. p. 94.

"himself had said to the king and her but three days "before. These words threw him into such confusion "that he withdrew immediately, to the great astonish- "ment of all the lords who were present. His wife "endeavoured afterwards to excuse him, by alleging "that it was the terrors he laboured under at that time, "which had forced him to speak so, having been in- "formed that the princes and nobles of the prince of "Condé's party had resolved to murder him, through a "suspicion that he was the cause of the prince's deten- "sion, by the discoveries he had made of their designs."

Without examining here whether the duke of Sully contradicted himself in the advice he gave the queen at these two different times, we shall grant that the resolution they had taken to arrest the prince of Condé, was both prudent and necessary; and the inference I shall draw from these circumstances is, that this minister never swerved from his attachment to the interest of the king and the public good, on an occasion so favourable to the Protestant party, where he himself ran great risks.

He observed the same conduct during the rest of his life. He was invested with the king's authority in the assemblies of Rouen and Loudun: he supported, like a good citizen and a loyal subject, his majesty's party against the Protestants, when the war was declared under the administration of cardinal Richelieu: he was present at the siege of Monttauban,* and other encoun-

* This was in 1621, in the first war with the Huguenots in Louis the Thirteenth's reign. The garrison was commanded by the marquis de la Force, and the royal army by the king in person, attended by six marshals, and all the chief nobility of the kingdom. The king, however, was obliged to raise the siege, during which the duke of Maienne was killed. EDIT.

ters: he even performed all the functions of master-general of the ordnance at the siege of St. Jean-d'Angely, and the train of artillery there was furnished and conducted with the greatest care. He kept this office till his death, although the writer of the duke of Bouillon's life says that it was taken from him. Louis XIII gave him a marshal's staff, September 18, 1634. The preceding year Pope Urban VIII wrote him a letter in Latin, to which M. de Sully sent an answer by his grandson, the prince of Henrichemont, and which produced a second brief from the Pope, in Latin likewise, dated July 16, 1633.

In the same year he lost the marquis de Rosny, his eldest son, whose conduct had been a continual source of affliction to him, not only because the marquis followed none of the wise counsels he gave him, and joined himself to the enemies of the state, but because the duke of Sully felt, in more ways than one, the extreme disorder of his son's affairs. And here it is necessary we should give some account of the duke of Sully's domestic concerns, which will serve to explain several parts of these Memoirs where the marquis of Rosny is mentioned, and particularly what is said of him in the twenty-ninth book.

The duke of Sully, besides two daughters, the eldest of whom was married to the duke of Rohan, and the youngest to the marquis of Mirepoix, had three sons: Maximilian de Bethune, marquis de Rosny, he had by his first wife Anne de Courtenay; and Cæsar and Francis de Bethune, by his second, Rachael de Cochefilet. The great estates he was possessed of having been acquired since his second marriage, the children by that

marriage seemed entitled to the largest share of them; nevertheless, the duke of Sully thinking himself obliged to secure to the marquis of Rosny such an estate as might enable him to support the grandeur of his house, of which he was the eldest; to the posts of master-general of the ordnance, superintendant of the fortifications, and to the governments of Mante and Gergeau, the reversion of which he obtained for him, and which he estimated at sixty thousand livres a year, he added, among other gifts, a donation of lands, producing a yearly revenue of fifty thousand livres, consisting of the dutchy of Sully, the marquisate of Rosny, the principality of Henrichemont and Boisbelle, with all their dependencies, the property of which, however, he reserved to himself during his life. The deed of entail, which is dated March 16, 1609, has in it this singular clause: "That on the supposition that none of those, whether "male or female, chose to fulfil the aforesaid terms and "conditions, the said lord, who makes this settlement, "gives, by the present writing, the abovesaid lands to "the king or his descendants, according to their seni-"ority, on condition that the said lands shall never be "disunited from the crown: and that he who shall pos-"sess them, if he be not the king, or the king's eldest "son, shall, be obliged, and his descendants after him, "to bear, together with his own name and arms, the "surname and arms of Bethune."

But afterwards being solicitous to prevent any occasion for disunion in his family, M. de Sully the following year made two other donations and conveyances of his other possessions in the same form, and by an act of the same kind, in favour of Cæsar and Francis de

Bethune, his youngest sons: namely, of the land and lordship of Villebon to Cæsar; and to Francis de Bethune, called count d'Orval, of the lands of Montrond, Orval, Bruyeres, Epineuil, Beauchesal, La-Roche-Guiliebaut, and Le-Châtelet, in Berry. The value of each of these donations is estimated at ten thousand livres a year. It is there stipulated that the fortifications, arms, ammunition, and furniture, as well those which were in all these castles when the donation was made, as those which should be found there at the death of the duke of Sully, should be comprehended in the donation: and if either of his two sons, to whom they were made over, should die without heirs, his portion was to go entire to the survivor. This happened four years after; for, Cæsar de Bethune dying unmarried in 1614, the count d'Orval reunited in himself the two articles of conveyance. In 1620 his father married him to Jacqueline de Caumont, daughter of the grand-marshal de la Force, and granddaughter of the first marshal Biron; and he confirmed, by the marriage contract, the act of entail, made in the year 1610.

Before and after the duke of Sully had made these dispositions of his estates, the marquis de Rosny continued to hold his possessions jointly with his father. This community of goods was wholly to the advantage of the son, his mother's estate alone not being sufficient to supply his expenses: but it exposed the duke of Sully to the prosecution of his son's creditors. The duke paid his debts several times; but they became so considerable, by the prodigality and bad management of the marquis de Rosny, that he took a resolution, at length, to leave

him to himself. Such was the beginning of his domestic troubles.

This was soon followed by others more considerable; for after the death of the marquis de Rosny, his creditors taking the advantage of the community of goods, made an attempt to seize upon some of the possessions of the duke of Sully. The prince of Henrichemont,* his grandson, joined with them to annul these conveyances, in which he was greatly assisted by the circumstances the duke of Sully was then in, who, to get himself clear of the prince of Condé, had been obliged to do and undo many establishments, and had gained, and sold, and regained, at several times, a great part of the lands contained in those conveyances; such as, Villebon, Montrond, &c. This kept the duke of Sully in continual perplexity with disputes and law-suits, part of which, however, were amicably settled by the marriage of the prince of Henrichemont with the daughter of the chancellor Seguier,† in the year 1639: upon which, the duke of Sully, who was then upon good terms with the prince of Condé, having Villebon restored, and all his other acquisitions secured to him, made over again, in the year 1640, a new conveyance, confirming the former, by which he gave other lands, in the place of those that might be alienated.

The discontent of the prince of Henrichemont broke out again upon this new conveyance, and set on foot a

* Maximilian-Francis de Bethune, the third of that name, duke of Sully, prince of Henrichemont and Boisbelle, marquis de Rosny, lieutenant-general for the government of Dauphiny and the Pais-Vexin, governor of Mante and Meulan; he died in 1661.

† Charlotte Seguier, daughter of the chancellor Seguier.

law-suit, of which Lewis XIII, and his first minister took the cognizance to themselves, and which continued during the years 1640 and 1641; the petitions and principal pieces of this suit have been printed: the duke of Sully complains there bitterly, that his grandson and the chancellor Seguier, who supported him, sought to take advantage of some failures in the formalities of the settlements, unavoidable perhaps in affairs so long and so complicated. But it would be improper here to enter into a discussion of this point of law. Supposing that all possible right was not on the side of the duke of Sully, yet it must be confessed, that the voice of nature, and a principle of gratitude, ought to have carried it in favour of a man who had raised his family to such a degree of splendor: however that may be, the duke of Sully had the mortification to find himself, by a decree of council given in December, 1641, obliged to revoke his conveyance of four of those estates which had been given in the room of the former that had been alienated. He was then eighty-two years old, and it is probable that, jealous as he was of the paternal authority, and convinced in his own mind, that in all he had done he had exactly followed the laws of equity, this stroke affected him so sensibly, that it contributed to shorten his life: he died eight days afterwards at Villebon, December 22, 1641.

His bowels were put into a kind of leaden urn, and deposited in the vault of the collegiate church of Saint-Anne in Villebon, and upon the vault over it this inscription was placed:

Here lie the bowels of the most high, most puissant, and most illustrious lord, Maximilian de Bethune, duke of Sully, peer and marshal of France.

His body was to be carried to Aumône, or Hotel Dieu of Nogent, but the mausoleum which was erecting for him there not being finished, it was laid in a leaden coffin, and placed in the duke of Sully's chamber in the castle of Villebon, where he died. The ceilings, the floors, and walls of this apartment, were hung with black cloth: it was left there exposed to view, under a canopy of black velvet, with bands of silver stuff, and the arms of Bethune at the four corners.

In the mean time, the dutchess of Sully caused a closet to be built in the lower gallery of the castle of Villebon, in order to place a statue in it, which she designed to erect to the memory of her husband; and for this purpose she bought a block of white marble, the finest that could be procured, and sent for one of the most excellent sculptors of that time from Italy. In the front of this closet is written, in large characters, the ten commandments, as they stand in the book of Exodus; on one of the sides, the epitaph of the deceased; upon the other, his coat of arms, with all the ensigns of his office; the top, and all the rest of the closet, is filled with pictures, emblems, and mottos, which is not necessary to describe here: it is lighted by a long window which occupies the farther end. The statue is placed in the midst of the closet, upon a pedestal of white marble likewise; it is a little larger than the life, and represents the duke of Sully, armed from his neck to his feet, with a crown of laurel upon his head, and the ducal mantle on his shoulders; in his right hand, stretched out he holds the marshal's staff; and his left is leaning upon his coat of arms: the marshal's staff, as well as his casque, adorned with the plume of feathers, which lies at the left side of the statue, are cut out of the same

block. This whole piece is so beautiful and so highly finished, that it may vie with the ancient monuments of Greece and Rome. Over the door of the closet is written, in cartouche:

Rachel de Cochefilet, Dutchess Dowager of Sully, after the death of Maximilian de Bethune, Duke of Sully, her husband, with whom she lived forty-nine years in marriage, to honour his memory, and in testimony of her grief for his loss, has erected this statue, in the year 1642.

The body of this lady being, after her death deposited by that of her husband, the mausoleum, which we are going to describe, was common to them both: it is a round chapel, built on the side of that of Saint James de l'Aumône, or the Hospital of Nogent, called from their name Nogent le Bethune; it has no communication with the church, because the duke and dutchess of Sully were so unhappy as to die in the principles of the pretended reformed religion.* Under this chapel is a vault, where both their bodies are interred. The walls on the inside of the chapel are adorned with the coats of arms and alliances of the house of Bethune; the dome is only coloured with a plain blue, sprinkled with flowers de luce: the effigies of the duke and dutchess are of white marble, as large as the life; they are kneeling upon a pedestal, three feet in height, with their fa-

* This is in the genuine spirit of Roman Catholic bigotry. How little could this writer conceive, while thus foolishly affecting to deplore the "unhappiness" as he terms it, of the duke of Sully, that the days were fast approaching in which his "pretended" true "religion" was to be degraded, and virtually destroyed, not only in France but in almost every part of Europe where it was professed, by an usurper of the throne of the Bourbons.

ces turned towards the east: by an inscription upon the pedestal we are told, that this work, which is very well executed, was the performance of B. Boudin, in the year 1642. Behind the statue of the duke of Sully, is this inscription:

Here lies the body of the most high; most puissant, and most illustrious, Lord, Maximilian de Bethune, Marquis of Rosny, who shared in all the fortunes of king Henry the Great, among which was that memorable battle which gave the crown to the Victor; where, by his valour, he gained the white standard, and took several prisoners of distinction. He was by that Great Monarch, in reward of his many virtues and distinguished merit, honoured with the dignities of Duke, Peer, and Marshal of France, with the governments of the Upper and Lower Poitou, with the office of Master-general of the Ordnance, in which, bearing the thunder of his Jupiter, he took the castle of Montmelian, till then believed impregnable, and many other fortresses of Savoy; he was likewise made Superintendant of the Finances, which office he discharged singly with a wise and prudent economy, and continued his faithful services till that unfortunate day when the Caesar of the French nation lost his life by the hand of a parricide. After the lamented death of that Great King, he retired from publick affairs, and passed the remainder of his life in ease and tranquillity. He died at the castle of Villebon, December 22, 1641, aged eighty-two years.—Here also lies the most high, most puissant, and most illustrious lady, Madam Rachel de Cochefilet, his wife, who died at Paris, in the ninety-seventh year of her age, in the year 1659.

The way to this chapel is through a long court, planted on each side with elms; at the entrance of which is a portal, of very beautiful architecture, with the arms of the house of Bethune in high-relief, and all the additions belonging to the arms of the duke of Sully. The house of Bethune bears, *d'argent, face de gueules,* supported by two savages armed with clubs.

Before Villebon was restored to the duke of Sully he divided his residence between Sully, La Chapelle-d'Angillon, which is a very fine house and barony dependant on the dutchy of Sully, and Rosny, which of all his houses, he most embellished, as he reckoned upon this being always kept in his family: he was building the wings when he had the misfortune to lose the king his benefactor; and, as a witness of his grief for that loss, he left those wings imperfect, and in the same condition they were in at the time of that sad event. But when he became again possessed of Villebon, the beauty of that castle, its situation in a most agreeable country, its contiguity to Paris, for it is not more than twenty leagues distant from that city, and the advantage of being in the centre of several great estates which he had purchased with the money arising from the sale of those he had been obliged to part with to the prince of Condé; all these considerations determined him to fix his stay there during six whole months of the year, which were the autumn and the winter: he used, in the spring to make some short journeys to Sully; but that place was become very disagreeable to him, on account of the conduct of his eldest son: the rest of the year he passed at La-Chapelle-d'Angillon; at Rosny, and his other estates.

The life he led in his retreat was accompanied with decency, grandeur, and even majesty; such as might be expected from a character so grave and so full of dignity as his. Besides a great many gentlemen and pages, by whom he was attended, and ladies and maids of honour about the person of the dutchess of Sully, he had one company of guards, with their officers, and another of Swiss; and so great a number of domestics; that there are but few examples of subjects who have kept so grand and so numerous an household. The present duke of Sully has conversed with the son of an old surgeon, belonging to his ancestor, the duke of Sully, the last of this branch, who died at the age of eighty-eight years, and who was about fourteen when the duke of Sully, of whom we are speaking, died; this man told him, that he had accompanied his father in his visits to the sick in the castle Villebon; and had reckoned fourscore of them, without perceiving that the service of the house suffered the least disorder or delay upon that account.

M. de Sully always continued his custom of rising very early in the morning; after some time spent in prayers and reading, he set himself to work with his four secretaries; this work consisted in putting his papers in order, in digesting his Memoirs, in answering the several letters he received, in regulating his domestic affairs, and lastly, in taking cognizance of those which related either to his government or his posts; for he continued till his death, governor of the Upper and Lower Poitou and of Rochelle, master-general of the ordnance, surveyor-general of France, and superintendant of the fortifications. He usually passed the whole morning in these occupations; except that he sometimes went out take the air half an hour or an hour before

dinner; they then rung a great bell which was upon the bridge to give notice that he was going out; the greatest part of his household ranged themselves on each side, from the bottom of the stair-case to the door of his apartment; his equerries, gentlemen, and officers, walked before him, preceded by two Swiss with their halberts; the duke came next, with some of his friends and relations on each side of him, with whom he conversed; then followed the officers of his French and Swiss guards; and the procession was always closed by four Swiss.

At his return, he went into the hall, where he dined· this was a very large room, in which he had caused the most memorable actions of his own life, together with those of Henry the Great, to be painted; at the upper end of the table two armed chairs were placed for the duke and dutchess; all his children, married as well as unmarried, of whatever rank or dignity, had only stools; for at that time the subordination between parents and their children was so great, that they were not permitted to sit in their presence, without being commanded to do so. His table was served with taste and magnificence; he admitted to it none but the nobility in his neighbourhood, some of the principal gentlemen, and the ladies and maids of honour who belonged to the dutchess of Sully: except his guests, all the company retired as soon as the desert was brought in. After dinner they withdrew in a cabinet adjoining the hall where they dined: this was called the cabinet of illustrious men, because it was adorned with the portraits of popes, kings, princes, and other great and celebrated persons, from whom he had received them; many of these portraits are still to be seen at Villebon.

In another adjoining hall, magnificently furnished, the captain of his guards had a second table, served with almost as much grandeur as the first; here sat the younger sort, and indeed those only whom, on account of the disproportion of age, he chose not to receive at his own table. The present duke of Sully has been told by several persons of quality, that when they have accompanied their fathers in the visits they made to his ancestor, he kept only them at his own table, saying to the young men, *You are not old enough to eat with us, we should grow weary of one another.*

When he had stayed some time with the company, he retired to his own apartment, where for two or three hours he employed himself in the same manner as in the morning. If the season and the weather permitted it, he took a walk in the afternoon, attended with the same train as before: he often went into his gardens, and passing through a little covered alley, which separated the flower from the kitchen garden, ascended by a stone stair-case (which the present duke of Sully has caused to be destroyed) into a large walk of linden trees, upon a terrace on the other side of the garden. It was then the taste to have a great number of narrow walks, very closely shaded with four or five rows of trees or palisadoes: here he used to sit upon a settee painted green, and large enough to hold two persons, and leaning his elbows upon a large grated window, which has been lately taken away likewise, amused himself with beholding, on the one side, an agreeable landscape; and on the other a second alley, on a terrace, extremely beautiful, which surrounded a large piece of water, called the New Pond, and terminated by a wood of lofty trees, called the Great

Park. In this park also he used sometimes to walk, and often was drove about it in his chariot or coach, with the dutchess his wife. The interval between these airings and supper, he spent in the same occupations as in the morning: at supper, the same form was observed as at dinner: after which, every one retired to their respective apartments.

The duke of Sully, on account of his religion, could not be admitted into any order: he therefore made one for himself. In the inventory of his effects there were several diamond rings for that use. He wore about his neck, and more especially after the death of Henry IV, a chain of gold or diamonds, to which hung a large gold medal which had in relievo the figure of that great prince. He used often to take this medal out of his bosom, stop, and contemplate it, and then kiss it with the utmost reverence and affection: he never would quit it, not even when he went to court, any more than his ancient dress, which he always preserved; for he would not subject himself to the change of fashions. It is well known what happened to him one day when he went to court in consequence of a message from Louis XIII. "Monsieur de Sully," said this young prince to him, "I sent for you, as being one of the chief ministers of the king my father, and a man in whom he placed great confidence, to ask your advice, and to confer with you upon some affairs of importance." The duke of Sully seeing none but young courtiers about the king, who, to make their court to the constable de Launes, ridiculed his dress and the gravity of his manners, made this answer: "Sire, I am too old to change my habits, but for some good cause. When the late king your father, of glorious memory, did me

"the honour to send for me to confer with me upon "matters of importance, the first thing he did was to "send away the buffoons." The young king seemed not to disapprove of this freedom: he ordered every one to withdraw, and remained alone with M. de Sully.

The most exact order, subordination, and peace, reigned throughout his numerous household: no person knew better how to make himself be served, respected, and obeyed, than the duke of Sully. The Catholics in his service saw no difference between his treatment of them and his Protestant domestics, except the great care he took to oblige the former to an exact performance of all the duties of good Roman Catholics. This was one effect of that esteem, and even inclination, which, in the course of these Memoirs, he has always shewn for the true religion, and which would probably have led him to embrace it, but for the considerations he there mentions. The misfortune was, that, being persuaded he could work out his salvation in either of the two religions, he was too much governed by his own delicacy, which would not suffer him to have the appearance of being swayed either by ambition or interest, in taking a resolution which would have gratified both in so high a degree. All his children, except the dutchess of Rohan, died in the bosom of the Roman Church.

The dutchess his wife, although brought up in the principles of the Roman Catholic religion, quitted it after the death of M. de Châteaupers her first husband, to marry the duke of Sully. The lords of Villebon had, in the church of that parish, which is a collegiate, a chapel on the side next the castle, which they caused to be demolished, and built in its place two galleries, of

which the lower one was so inclosed, that those who were within could not be seen by the congregation; and the one above, to which the ascent is by a little staircase of wood, is also obscured by a grate. It is publicly known, that the two dutchesses, of Sully and Rohan, came often in the lower gallery to hear the psalms during the canonical hours. They washed with their own hands all the linen that was used in the service of the altar. The present duke of Sully heard this circumstance from Catherine de la Porte, one of his ancestors. This lady, who lived a long time with the dutchess of Rohan, her aunt, heard from her an anecdote which no one at that time was ignorant of, namely, that the duke of Sully always gave a most gracious reception to the Capuchins that visited him, and had so great an esteem for them, that during his last sickness, and a few days before he died, he desired to confer with some of these religious; but that, when they presented themselves for that purpose upon the bridge of the castle, the dutchess of Sully gave orders that they should not be admitted, and threatened to have them thrown into the moat.

This lady employed her time in regulating the interior of her household; in having leases drawn out, and the accounts of the farmers and receivers given in; and always visited the several estates of her husband, when necessary. In her leisure hours she amused herself with working tapestry and embroidery with her ladies and maids of honour. The beauty and elegance of her work is still admired in some pieces of tapestry that remain in the possession of the duke of Sully, out of a great number which have been either lost or carried into other families.

The works of the duke of Sully are more durable. Besides all the other monuments of his liberality, of which we have had occasion to speak, he has immortalized his memory by a great number of fine buildings in several parts of the kingdom, particularly in his government of Poitou. He would, if he had continued in the administration till his death, have procured all the roads in that province to have been made easy and commodious for travelling. It was he who caused that magnificent bridge and causeway to be built at Châtelleraut, which is still to be seen there.

There was scarce one of his estates, those especially which had castles on them, where he did not leave marks of his magnificence, to which he was chiefly incited by a principle of charity, and a regard to public good. He built most part of the Hôtel Dieu of Nogent. This city and lordship, which was distinguished by the surname of Nogent le Rotrou, was by the prince of Condé's erecting it into a dutchy, called d'Enguien; but, when it came into the possession of the duke of Sully, it lost both these names, and was called the earldom of Nogent le Bethune. He at first designed to carry on very considerable buildings in the castle of this city, but he met with so many obstacles from the religious of St. Denis, that he was determined to turn all his views upon Villebon Messieurs d'Estouteville, to whom that house had formerly belonged, had left it built only up to the first story: he raised it and completed it after the model of the Bastile, of which he was governor, but with more beauty. The front presents three sets of chambers, covered with slates between the towers. The towers have flat roofs, covered with lead, with pinnacles, and the battlements alternately

round and pointed; the spouts are of the same metal with cast cannon, and the inner spouts which receive those of the corners of the house, are likewise of cast metal, eight feet high, terminating in dolphins' heads. The grand staircase is extremely large and luminous. At the first story is a large room, with the beams and joints gilt; as likewise the chimney, which is of beautiful workmanship. The apartments are very numerous, and have their chimneys gilt, and the greatest part of their pannels. The park is enclosed with stone walls, and contains a great number of pools and reservoirs. The gardens, which join the house on three sides, the courts, and court-yards, are all the work of the duke of Sully.

To give employment to the poor, who offered themselves during a famine, and whom he thought it no real charity to support in idleness, he made a pond about seven hundred and twenty yards long, and a hundred and twenty broad. This he called Chapel Pond. The earth which was dug out, he threw up into four terraces parallel to the canal, which reach to the New Pond, another piece of water above the Chapel Pond. Between these terraces and the canal, were two levels of turf, which the present duke of Sully has cut into squares, grass plats, and bowling-greens. All those who offered were set to work indifferently, even to little children, some of whom did not carry, at a time, more than half a pound of earth: and for this purpose an infinite number of hand-carriages of all sizes had been provided. To each of these poor people was given in the morning a piece of bread; at dinner-time a dish of soup; and at supper-time another piece of bread; together with wages in money in proportion to their age

and labour. This work which the duke of Sully never would have undertaken merely for the decoration of his house, cost him four score thousand livres.

Every body knows that he built the castle of Rosny completely, surrounded it with dry ditches extremely wide, where, when batteries were placed, the shot crossed each other in a surprising manner; a thing very rare at that time. He raised that fine terrace which runs across the sea to a prodigious extent, and those great gardens filled with groves, and grottos with water-works.

He embellished Sully with gardens, of which the plants are the finest in the world; and with a very long and broad canal, which is supplied with fresh water by the little river Sangle, which he turned that way, and which is afterwards lost in the Loire. He erected a machine to convey the water to all the basons and fountains, of which the gardens were full. The machine is yet in being; but the water-works have been suffered to go to ruin. With regard to the castle, he had it covered with slates: he wainscoted, painted, and gilt, almost all the apartments, and worked in the walls the galleries which pass from the little lodges at the gate, to the main castle. The court-yard, and a second court-yard, which was formerly called the Little Park, are likewise his work. There are, in this second court, several eminences, or enormous heaps of earth, which appear plainly to be the work of men. This expense, which produced no good, and of which the effect is even disagreeable, might surprise those who do not know that the duke of Sully had no other way of supporting a multitude of poor people, who demanded

work in a time of scarcity. St. Ithier was anciently a little church; almost close to the castle: he removed it to the middle of a city, where he built, at his own cost, a very fine church covered with slate I shall not mention several other works for which this city is obliged to him: among others, an hospital, which he founded there.

The principal apartment of this castle, is that which he fitted up in memory of Henry the Great, and which is called, for that reason, the king's apartment. He determined to leave another monument of his gratitude to this great prince, in the great hall of Sully. This hall, which, next to that of Montargis, is the largest in France, has a prospect of the Loire. Henry IV is there painted, in a picture of the first size, upon a very fine sorrel horse. This is the most perfect, and the most like of all the pictures of that prince. It is hung over the chimney, which is uncommonly large, adorned with carved work, and covered, both on the front and sides, with squares of painting, containing each an emblem or a device relating either to the king or the duke of Sully. One of these pieces has something singular: it is in the front, where the sun is represented casting a weak and pale light, with the moon below it, shining with extraordinary brightness; and lower yet, the earth, which seems obscured by the great brightness of the moon. This is the only emblem that has no motto; and may be therefore supposed to contain something mysterious.

The duke of Sully likewise repaired and enlarged the castle of la Chapelle d'Angillon, built by mademoiselle d'Albert: he embellished it with gardens and ter-

races, and a park about two hundred and thirty acres, surrounded with stone walls, which, though strongly built, are now almost ruined by the negligence of his successors. Facing the meadow is a great terrace, remarkable for its height and length, all faced with hewn stone, with pilasters of brick and stone from space to space, which contributed at once to the strength and beauty of the work. At the foot of this terrace was a mean church, which the duke of Sully pulled down and rebuilt, with great expense and magnificence, at the foot of the citadel of la Chapelle, of which he is considered not only as the lord, but as the founder.

The castle of Montigny is indebted to him, among other embellishments, for a fine avenue of trees; and, behind the house, a wall or kind of court, very agreeable, with four rows of elms.

To conclude, it was he that built, and cut in the rock, the famous castle of Montrond, which was long considered as impregnable. The way to it was by a very broad winding path, cut likewise in the rock; as were also the outworks of the palace, within which there was a well never dry, and sheltered against all violence from without. The prince of Condé, as has been already shewn, obliged the duke of Sully to give him up Montrond, which, in the times of confusion, was his* principal fortress against the king, whose army was stopped by it eighteen months, and at last took it only

* Not his, but his son's; Henry prince of Condé, who obtained Montrond from Sully, and of whom such frequent mention has been made in the latter part of these Memoirs, died in 1646, five years after the duke of Sully, and was succeeded by his son Lewis. The times of confusion alluded to in the text were those after the accession of Louis XIV. Montrond was taken in 1652. Edit.

by stratagem; after which the fortifications were blown up, and the place destroyed.

As the different characters of the duke of Sully which occur in various parts of the preceding Memoirs are all drawn by his countrymen, the following one, by sir George Carew, ambassador to France from James the First, written after his return to England in 1609, may not be considered altogether out of place here, or uninteresting to the reader. It is extracted from Carew's "Present State of France," first printed by Dr. Birch at the end of his "Negotiations."

"The duke of Sully, as himself told me, was born the 6th of January 1560, and by many is held to be of a Scottish extraction, of the family of the Betons, though he himself will not acknowledge it, but pretendeth to be descended from the lords of Bethune in Flanders. He hath been from his youth brought up with the king, and in thirty-three years never from him. Of his manners and fashions, I need not speak, having himself been so lately in England; but some resemble them to a great furnace, which, out of a strong and vigorous heat of understanding and courage, casts also a great smoke of vaunting and rigorous arrogancy. In his negotiating I have found him open, substantial, and ingenious, despising the affectation of seeming wise by petty subtilities, and close retiredness.

"Though he holdeth great offices, yet it seemeth the worth of his own person hath rather made his places great, than they have exalted him. His first greatness

is said to have grown out of this occasion. The duke d'Espernon propounded, in council, a certain levy to be made upon the people of his government. Rosny being newly come to the place of intendant *des finances*, spake bitterly before d'Espernon's face against it, terming it a shameful proposition and a robbery; and withal tore the memorial, which d'Espernon had delivered concerning the same. That indignity exasperated d'Espernon so much, as reproaching Rosny's baseness and arrogancy, he set his hand to his sword. Rosny answered with as great fierceness, and used the like demonstration of force, adding, that in their birth there was small odds; or, if there were any, it was on his side; and that when it pleased this king to do as much for him, as the last had done for d'Espernon, he should be every way his equal. The king hearing of this disorder, reproved d'Espernon, bidding him to gourmand his own valets, and not his officers. And that Rosny had answered him well, which he should see by effect, and thereupon promised to make Rosny duke and peer of France. Since that time, the king supported Sully in all his rough courses, which he hath taken for the encreasing the revenues of his crown, he hath found great profit thereby himself. But Sully hath thereby made himself extremely odious to great and small, and especially to the count Soissons, which happened in this sort. Sully delaying to make payment of a certain sum which the king had granted to the count, and the count's solicitor willing and pressing him to consider, that it was a prince of the blood whom he delayed; Sully made answer, It were well with the realm, if the king had no more cousins than he had brethren. Whereupon the count pretending to use forcible means to of-

fend Sully, the king caused it to be notified, that whosoever should attempt Sully, should find the king's own person for his second; since that time Sully hath ever been accompanied with troops of gentlemen, where before he made it his glory to be followed only with one servant and a couple of lacquies. But he ever carried out the matter bravely, and told myself once or twice, that the count threatened many, but hurt none; and in the end, both the count of Soissons, and duke d'Espernon, are become his great and obsequious friends.

"When Sully came first to the managing of the revenues, he found (as he himself told me) all things out of order, full of robbery of officers, full of confusion, no treasure, no munition, no furniture for the king's houses, and the crown indebted three hundred millions; that is, three millions of pounds sterling. Since that time, that in February 1608, he had acquitted one hundred and thirty millions of that debt, redeeming the most part of the revenues of the crown that were mortgaged; that he had brought good store of treasure into the Bastille, filled most of the arsenals with munition, furnished most of the king's houses with rich tapestry, and other moveables; and where the farms of the whole realm, amounted then but to 800000l. sterling, this year 1609, he had let them out for 1000000l. and that without exacting any more upon the people than was paid before, but only by reducing that to the king's coffers, which was embezzled by under-officers.

"Whether the prosecution of the Romish faction will at length remove him from the court, is somewhat doubtful. But if it should happen, I suppose it would prove for your majesty's advantage, and that king's de-

triment. For not only the affairs of the revenues, might perchance fall into disorders again; but the Protestants, both in that kingdom and abroad, would then fall into diffidence of the proceeding of that court, when the council should be altogether Romish (whereas now they suppose nothing will be propounded to their subversion all the while he is there) and seek to fortify themselves by new intelligences, and associations; the which happening, must necessarily make them fall (in regard of foreign forces) to a dependence upon your majesty, and like enough would make them choose also a new head to depend upon in that realm, such as this king himself was in his predecessor's time. Besides he is ever hammering upon building a navy for the sea, which if he should effect, might prove an evil neighbour to your majesty's dominions. Again, upon colour of the project of the treaty, that was made at his being in England, he is more opposite to the paying your majesty's debt (stretching the same treaty beyond all reasonable construction, because he made it himself) than any other, who should come in his place, would be.

"Touching the Protestants of France, they have no great aid or support from him, but he is as harsh and rough to them, as to any others; and stoppeth little that supplanting of particulars which the king useth, but rather serveth among their body altogether for the king's ends. And touching his persisting so constantly in the profession of the reformed religion, many doubt it proceedeth rather out of policy, than out of conscience, seeing his life is nothing answerable to his profession; but full of incontinency, of oppression, and rapine for his own particular, as well as for his master's profit. His speech is full of immodesty and filthiness, even at

his own table publicly; a scoffer and contemner of all respects of justice, which terms he both used to myself, and, as I hear, to many others of that king's subjects, telling them, his master had placed him in his office to encrease his revenue, and not to deliver justice. But because that he doubteth, that upon the king's death, the count of Soissons, or other of his enemies might persecute him, as, after Philip le Bel's death, Enguerrand de Marigny, who had the like power in France, and money matters, and the like opposition with great men, was persecuted by Charles de Valois, who ceased not, till he had caused En Juerrand, upon forged accusations, to be hanged in the place of the Greve at Paris: therefore for his own safety, it behoveth him so to carry himself in the mean time, as he may then shroud himself among the party of the religion. Besides, he knoweth the king's timorous and suspicious nature so well, and hath such a predominant genius over his, as he shall better maintain his reputation and power with him, in standing stiff upon his own terms, than in making demonstration of fear or yielding.

"But talking with de Sully of this point myself, he attributed this his constancy to his own natural resolution, saying, *Je ne demords jamais ce que j'ay une fois resolu pour bon.* One great difference I observe between the chancellor and Mons. de Sully, the first having many good words, and deeds nothing answerable; and the other's deeds are rather better than worse than his words. De Sully is not void of learning, both of knowledge of Latin, and other studies of humanity; but chiefly in arguing points of religion, wherein he is very ready and confident. But he most prizeth himself for his military ableness, being offended, when men ascribe the

chiefest part of his sufficiency to the managing of the matters of the king's revenues and treasures. He hath sought heretofore, to fortify himself in court, by means of the queen and the house of Guise. But the chancellor growing more potent with the queen, he hath of late fallen in with the marquise of Verneuil to terms of friendship, from that bitter opposition, which was long between them. He hath also entertained intelligence long with the house of Guise; but their unthriftiness being like to ruin him, he by degrees falleth off from them. By alliances he hath strengthened himself with the two houses of Rohan and Ventadour, where he hath placed two daughters, and his son is bestowed with Mons. de Crequy's daughter, who shall have all the wealth of Lesdiguieres, being very great. So that by that marriage, and his father's purchases, young Rosny is like to prove one of the chiefest subjects of France."

OBSERVATIONS

ON THE

ASSASSINATION OF HENRY IV.

ONE would imagine, that upon a fact so public and so recent as the assassination of Henry IV, there would be found a perfect conformity in the histories and memoirs of that time; yet many of the cotemporary writers do not agree either as to the number of the persons who were in the coach with this prince when he was assassinated, the wounds he received, nor many other circumstances no less essential. In order therefore to make this recital in a manner equally faithful and complete, it is necessary to collect and join together what has been said on this subject by messieurs de Perefixe, Matthieu, l'Etoile, the continuator of de Thou, and the French Mercury for the year 1610.

" The night before this most unhappy day his majes-
" ty could take no rest, and was in continual uneasiness.
" In the morning he told those about him, that he had
" not slept and that he was very much disordered.
" Thereupon M. de Vendome entreated his majesty to
" take care of himself that day, and not to go out; for
" that day was fatal to him. ' I see,' answered the king,
" ' that you have consulted the almanac, and have heard
" of the prediction of la Brosse, from my cousin the
" count of Soissons; he is an old fool, and you, who are
" young, have still less wisdom.' The duke of Vendome

"then went to the queen, who likewise begged the king "not to go out of the Louvre that day, but he made her "the same answer." P. de l'Etoile.

"His majesty afterwards went to hear mass at the "convent of the Barnardine monks, whither the infa- "mous parricide followed him with an intention to mur- "der him; and, as he has since confessed, would have "given him the stroke in the chapel, but M. de Ven- "dome coming unexpectedly between, he was prevent- "ed." Ibid.

"It was observed, that the king was more fervent "than usual in his devotions, and continued longer in "prayer that very day than he was accustomed to do: "even in the night preceding it, when his attendants "thought he was asleep, he was upon his knees in bed "at prayer; and, as soon as he rose, retiring to his closet "for the same purpose, they, thinking he staid longer "than usual, interrupting him, he was angry. 'Why "will these men,' said he, 'always oppose what is for "my good?'" Ibid.

"After dinner the king lay down upon his bed, to try "if he could sleep; but, not being able to rest, he got up "again, pensive, melancholy, and disturbed. He walk- "ed a little about his chamber, and again threw himself "upon his bed: still restless and unquiet, he rose and "asked the exempt of the guard what hour of the day "it was. The exempt told him the clock had struck "four; and added, 'Sire, I perceive your majesty is pen- "sive and uneasy: you would be better if you would "take the air.' The king seemed pleased at this motion, "and replied, "You have advised well: order my coach "to be got ready; I will go to the Arsenal to see the duke "of Sully, who is indisposed, and bathes to-day." Ibid.

Matthieu, recounting his discourse, both before and after dinner, adds, "He could not stay one moment in "any place, nor conceal his irresolution and disorder: "and, in the midst of those agitations, he said to the "queen, 'I know not what to do: I have no great incli- "nation to go to the arsenal, because I shall put myself "into a passion.' 'Do not go then, sir,' said the queen: "send some other thither; you are now in a good hu- "mour, why should you go to make yourself uneasy?' "He went towards the window, and striking his fore- "head with his hand, 'My God!' said he, 'there is some- "thing here which strangely troubles me: I know not "what is the matter: I cannot go from hence.' Ravail- "lac, hearing that he inquired if his coach was ready, "muttered to himself; *I have thee; thou art lost.*" P. Matthieu.

"As he was going into his coach, M. de Vitry ap- "proached, and asked his majesty if it was his pleasure "that he should attend him. 'No,' replied the king; "'but go whither I have ordered you.' 'Permit me, "Sire,' said Vitry, 'to send the guards with your ma- "jesty.' 'No,' returned the king, 'I will neither have "you nor your guards; I will have none about me.' Then "entering his coach, and reflecting, as it is supposed, "upon the fatal predictions of the day, which they had "put into his head, he asked what day of the month it "was. 'Sire, said one, it is the 13th.' 'No,' said an- "other, 'it is the 14th.' 'You are right,' said the king: "'you know your almanac better than he:' and laugh- "ing, 'Between the 13th and 14th,' said he, and then or- "dered the coach to go on." L'Etoile.

"He said to the coachman, carry me but from hence. "When he came over against the Hôtel de Longueville, "he sent back all his attendants: and, being asked

"where the coach should go, he said to the Croix du "Tiroir; and, when there, he ordered it to drive to the "church-yard of St. Innocent. Ravaillac staid a long "time at the Louvre, sitting upon the stones at the gate, "where the footmen wait for their masters. He design- "ed to have given the blow between the two gates, the "place where he stood affording him some advantage; "but he found the duke d'Epernon on that side where "he expected the king would have been." Matthieu.

"This prince was seated on the back part of the coach, and unfortunately (the weather being very fine) would have all the curtains drawn up, that he might see, as he passed, the preparations which were making all over the city for the queen's public entry. On his right hand sat the duke d'Epernon: the marshals de Lavardin and Roquelaure were near the right boot of the coach; the duke of Montbazon and the marquis de La-Force on his left hand, and near the left boot, opposite to him, sat the marquis de Mirebeau, and du Plessis-Liancourt, his first master of the horse. Vitry, the captain of his guards, had, by the king's order, gone to the palace to hasten the preparations for the queen's entry, and had left all the guards at the Louvre; so that his majesty was attended only by a small number of gentlemen on horseback, and some of his footmen." Perefixe, Matthieu, l'Etoile, N. Rigault, ibid.

The coach turned from the street St. Honoré into that called Féronnerie, which was then very narrow, and made more so by the little shops erected against the wall of the church-yard of St. Innocent. A little embarrassment was occasioned by the meeting of two carts, one loaden with wine the other with hay; so that the coach was obliged to stop in a corner of the street, over against the study of a certain notary whose name was

Poutrain. The footmen took a nearer way, that they might with less difficulty come up with the coach at the end of the street: so that there were only two which followed the coach, and one of these went to make way for it to go on, while the other in the mean time took that opportunity to fasten his garter. Ibid.

Ravaillac, who had followed the coach from the Louvre, perceiving that it stopped, and that there was no person near it, advanced to that side where he observed the king sat. His cloak being wrapt round his left arm, served to conceal the knife, which he held in his hand; and sliding between the shops and the coach, as if he was attempting to pass by, like others, he supported one foot upon one of the spokes of the wheel, and the other upon a stone, and, drawing a knife edged on both sides, gave the king a wound a little above the heart, between the third and fourth rib. His majesty had just then turned towards the duke d'Epernon, and was reading a letter: or, as others say, leaning towards the marshal Lavardin, to whom he was whispering. Henry, feeling himself struck, cried out, "I am wounded;" and in the same instant, the assassin perceiving that the point of his knife had been stopped by a rib, he repeated the blow with such quickness that not one of those who were in the coach had time to oppose, nor even to perceive it. Henry, by raising his arm, gave a fairer aim for the second blow, which, according to Perefixe and l'Etoile, went directly to his heart; and, according to Rigault and the French Mercury, near the auricle of the heart; so that the blood gushing out of his mouth, and from his wound, the unhappy prince expired, breathing a deep sigh; or, as Matthieu asserts, pronouncing, with a faint and dying voice, these words: "It is

" nothing." The murderer aimed a third stroke at him, which the duke d'Epernon received in his sleeve. Ibid.

It is the opinion of the author of the French Mercury, that Henry IV died at the first blow, " which," he says, " entering between the fifth and sixth rib, pierced " the vein within, round the auricle of the heart, and " reached to the vena cava, which being cut, that great " prince was in an instant deprived of speech and life. " The first stroke only grazed the skin, and made no " impression." French Mercury.

The writer who has given us the life of the duke d'Epernon, thinks, it must be confessed, in a manner very singular. He asserts, but without any proof to support his assertion, that the duke d'Epernon, who saw the second blow aimed at the king, raised his arm to parry it, and received it, in part, upon the sleeve of his coat, which was cut. He doubtless meant to exalt his hero, by relating this circumstance; but certainly he judged ill to add, that the assassin, after this second blow, had time to strike a third, more dangerous than the second; and that the king received it full. Strange! that the duke d'Epernon should so plainly perceive the first of these blows, as to be able to parry it in part, from himself, and the rest who were in the coach, and yet could not prevent the following blow. The historian here has proved too much, and but that, happily for him, it is easy to convict him of his error, his account might well be turned into an accusation of the duke d'Epernon. Life of the duke d'Epernon, part 2d, p. 238.

" It is a most amazing thing, that not one of the " lords, who were in the coach with the king, should " have seen the assassin give the blow; and, if that " infernal monster had thrown away his knife, they

"would not have known whom to charge with it: but "he still held it in his hand, as if to shew it, and gloried "in the greatest and most horrid of all assassinations "that ever was perpetrated." Perefixe says the same; and this conduct of Ravaillac is more conformable to the character we have of him, than what the continuator of de Thou relates: That it was the extreme agitation and disorder of his mind, which prevented his flying, or dropping the poniard. "He confessed," says Matthieu, "that he struck his knife into the king's body, "as into a bottle of hay." L'Etoile, ibid.

"The six lords, who were in the coach, got out im- "mediately with such precipitation, that they hindred "each other from seizing the parricide. One of them "perceiving that the king spoke no more, and that the "blood came gushing from his mouth, cried out, 'The "king is dead!' These words immediately occasioned "a great tumult. The people, who were in the streets, "threw themselves into the nearest shops, one upon "another, with such terror and dismay, as if the city "had been taken. The duke d'Epernon suddenly be- "thought himself of saying, that the king was only "wounded, and had fallen into a swoon. They desired "some wine; and, while some of the inhabitants ran "eagerly to get it, they shut up the coach doors, and "told the people, that the king was only wounded; and "that they were carrying him in haste to the Louvre "to get his wounds dressed." French Mercury. Ibid.

"I ran like one deprived of reason, and mounting "the first horse I found, galloped to the Louvre. When "I came to the Hotel de Longueville, I met M. de Be- "lancourt returning from the Louvre, who said to me, "'He is dead.' I rode on as far as the rails, where the

"French and Swiss guards were then placed: their "pikes lowered. M. Le-Grand and I got through, and "ran to the king's closet, and saw him extended on his "bed. M. de Vic, counsellor of state, was sitting by "him on the same bed, and had laid his cross of the "order upon his mouth, putting him in mind of God. "Milon, his first physician, was sitting near the bed-"side weeping, and the surgeons who attended to dress "his wound: but he was already dead. We fancied we "heard him sigh, but it was only wind; upon which the "first physician cried out, 'Ah! it is over: he is gone!' "M. Le Grand, as soon as he entered, kneeled at the "side of the bed, and held one of his hands, which he "kissed. As for me, I threw myself at his feet, which "I held embraced, weeping bitterly. M. de Guise came "in also, and embraced him," &c. Memoirs of Bassompierre, Vol. I. p. 297.

"The queen was in her closet when this sad news "was brought to her, and, wild with grief, came out "immediately to see him whom she honoured most in "the world, deprived of life; but the chancellor, who "was then in council, and had heard the news there, "going up to her apartment, met her as she was com-"ing out, and stopped her. 'Alas!' said she, as soon as "she saw him, 'the king is dead.' He, without betray-"ing any emotion, replied, 'Your majesty must pardon "me, the kings of France never die.'" Then entreating her to return to her closet, "We must take care," said he to her, "that our tears do not ruin our affairs: we "must reserve them for another time: we have need of "remedies and not of grief." French Mercury, ibid.

"At five o'clock in the evening it was no where cer-"tainly known, except at the Louvre, that the king

"was dead, not even in the quarter de La Féronnerie,
"where he was killed: they thought he had been wound-
"ed only. The report reached the Augustins before
"audience was over; the noise and confused murmurs
"of the persons who came into the court opposite to
"the hall of the great chamber, encreased every mo-
"ment; and at length reached the ears of M. de Blanc-
"mesnil, second president of the great chamber, who
"was at that time hearing a cause pleaded in the hall;
"struck with this noise, he rose up as if to collect the
"opinions of the judges upon it; but instead of speak-
"ing to them on this subject, he went back to the great
"chamber: the rest, persuaded that this noise was oc-
"casioned by some fatal accident, rose from their
"seats, and broke off the pleadings. Immediately they
"sent for the king's councellors of parliament, and de-
"puted them to the Louvre to know the state of af-
"fairs, and the will of his majesty: in the mean time,
"the princes, dukes, and great lords, who were at Pa-
"ris, hastened to the Louvre to attend the king as usual.
"The sieur de Vitry was ordered to assemble all the
"deceased king's children in a chamber, particularly
"the young king; and to suffer no one to approach
"them. The dukes of Guise and Epernon were direct-
"ed to get as many of the nobility as they could find,
"to mount their horses, and ride through the city; and
"tell the people, that the king was not dead, but only
"wounded. Le-Jay, lieutenant civil, and Sanguin, the
"lord mayor, had orders to shut all the city gates; to
"possess themselves of the keys: raise all their officers;
"and to prevent all commotions and mobs in the city.
"The guards which were in the suburbs received or-
"ders to come and post themselves upon the Pont

"Neuf, in the street Dauphiné, and near the Augustins, "in order to surround the parliament, and to force "them, if necessary, to declare the queen regent. The "king's councellors of the parliament, returning from "the Louvre to the Arsenal, found the first president "there, who had been brought in a chair, to whom, "and to the chambers assembled, having confirmed "the report of the king's death, they began to consult "upon the request brought them by the king's coun- "sellors. M. de Guise and M. d'Epernon came after- "wards into the great chamber, being sent by the "queen to see what was doing there," &c. L'Etoile, Perefixe, ibid.

"About nine o'clock the same night, a great num- "ber of the lords rode through the city, and, as they "passed, said to the people, The king is coming; he is "well, God be thankful for it! It being night, the peo- "ple thought the king was in that company, and cried "aloud, *Vive le roi!* This cry spreading from one quar- "ter to another, the whole city resounded with, *Vive le "roi!* It was only in the quarter of the Louvre, and "that of the Augustins, where the truth was known." Ibid.

"At night they drest the king's body, and washed "him with the same ceremony as if he had been alive. "M. du Maine gave him his shirt. M. le Grand served "him, and I likewise was ordered to serve him, and to "represent M. de Bouillon." M. Bassompierre, ibid.

"Saturday, May the 15th, the king's body was open- "ed in the presence of six and twenty physicians and "surgeons; all the parts of which were found to be in "so good a state, that, according to the course of na- "ture, they judged that he might have lived thirty

"years longer. His heart was small, but thick, and of "a close texture, and surprisingly sound: his stomach, "as the physicians and surgeons said, was the strongest "that had been ever seen: his lungs were grown a little "to his left side." Bassompierre, ibid.

"His entrails were sent immediately to St. Dennis, "without any pomp. The Jesuits demanded the heart, "which they interred in their chapel of la Flèche; the "body embalmed and laid in a leaden coffin, inclosed "in another of wood, and covered with cloth of gold, "was placed under a canopy in the king's chamber, "with two altars on each side, at which mass was said "during eighteen days successively, after which it was "carried to St. Denis," &c. Perefixe, ibid.

See in the same historians several other interesting particulars, as well with respect to what passed in the parliament, and in different parts of Paris, as upon the funeral ceremony observed on the occasion. Upon this last article, consult also the royal MSS. vol. 9361.

The memoirs of that time afford a great number of observations, and curious particulars, relating to the assassination of Henry IV, which we cannot dispense with ourselves from annexing to these Memoirs. The number and diversity of them is all that perplexes us; for with respect to the persons who are concerned in them; namely, the Jesuits, the duke d'Epernon, and several of the principal lords of the kingdom, the marchioness de Verneuil, and the party supposed to be headed by her, the officers of the queen's household, and many others; these circumstances are so far from doing any injury to their memories, that it will be readily granted their interest requires that they should neither be suppressed or disguised; for, since all the

malignity of their enemies have never been able to prove one single fact against them, it necessarily follows, that what has been said was mere calumny, invented by wicked and designing persons.

One general remark, and which is equally applicable to all, is sufficient to prove what I have asserted, that those accusations were founded on calumny only; and this is, that Ravaillac never accused, or gave the least room for suspecting that any of those persons were concerned in the king's assassination. He constantly maintained, that no one was privy to his design, which he had conceived upon being told, that the king was going to make war upon the pope. He never varied from this declaration, and, when he was put to the torture, he said the same as he had done at his trial. The most dreadful pains could not force him to alter his deposition: he protested, and repeated this protestation upon the scaffold, that he never had either an accomplice or confidant. "When he was ready to ex-"pire, he turned to his confessor, and desired he would "give him absolution; for he had no more to say. This "the priest refused, telling him, that it was forbid to "those who, like him, had been guilty of high treason, "unless he disclosed his accomplices." 'Give it me,' "said Ravaillac, 'upon condition that the declaration I "have made, that I had no accomplices, be true.' 'I "will give it you upon that condition,' replied the con-"fessor; 'but assure yourself, if you tell a lie in these "moments, your soul, at its separation from your body, "will be carried directly to hell.' 'I accept and receive "it upon that condition,' said Ravaillac. And these "were the last words he spoke to messieurs de Fille-"sac and Gamache, two men of great candour and

" honesty, and the most able doctors of the Sorbonne." Words which deserve great notice, since they are recorded by him, who, of all the writers on this subject, has shewn most prejudice and malice. Memoirs for a History of France, page 323.

After this decisive remark I shall begin with what relates to the Jesuits, who have been less spared than any of the others, and whom our author, in his Memoirs, attacks the first, though he does not name them. But here I think myself obliged to relate what appears a very singular confession in a great critic, who professes that he does not fear the society, and will spare no one whatever. " I had the curiosity," says he, " to read the " answer made by the Jesuits to the accusations of their " enemies, their reply to that, and the Jesuits' farther " vindication of themselves; and it appeared to me, that " in many cases their accusers were at a loss, which " persuades me that many things have been charged " upon them for which there were no proofs, but easily " believed at the instigation of prejudiced persons." In effect, there is nothing more solid, or better founded, in the declamations of Morizot, and a great number of anonymous writers. Bayle's Select Letters, vol. I, letter 230.

I shall now proceed to the examination of some words, attributed to a Jesuit in a conference with Ravaillac: *My friend, do not accuse good men.* " Father " Cotton went likewise to Ravaillac, and bid him take " care of accusing the innocent; words which did not " pass unnoticed. He afterwards would have persuaded " him, if he could, that he was a Protestant, saying, " that he could never believe that a Roman Catholic " was capable of committing so horrid an action: but " Ravaillac derided father Cotton, though a Jesuit, as " well as the rest, whom he sent away with jests and

"pleasantry. 'You would be astonished,' said he to "some of them who were questioning him, if I should tell you that it was you yourself who set me on." He "did not say this to father Cotton; for, wicked as he "was, he had some scruples of conscience remaining "that would not suffer him to slander the brothers of "the society." Journal of the Reign of Henry IV, anno 1610.

Peter Matthieu, in his particular History of the Death of Henry IV, p. 116, says, "that the queen, believing, "if the inhuman parricide could be led to repent of his "crime, he would more freely own who they were that "urged him to commit it, thought it necessary that he "should be visited by the doctors and clergy, who might "put his mind into such a frame, that he would have "greater fears of eternal than temporal torments." Father Cotton therefore might be of the number of these ecclesiastics; but the author does not mention him in particular, and is wholly silent with respect to the words which have been attributed to him. He does not tell us that this father, when he accosted Ravaillac, called him *my friend.* The prior of Orleans, says not a word of this fact in his Life of Father Cotton, where it was natural for him to mention it, and where he has been as particular, with respect to this father, as Matthieu has been in every thing relating to the death of Henry the Great.

"Two circumstances," says Mezerai, "were observ- "ed, of which the reader may judge as he pleases; one "was, that, when Ravaillac was seized, seven or eight "men come up to him with swords in their hands, and "said loudly that he ought to be slain directly; but they "immediately concealed themselves in the crowd: the "other, that the parricide was not carried to prison at

"first, but was put into the hands of Montigny, and re-
"mained two days in the Hôtel de Rais, where he was
"so carelessly guarded, that all sorts of people were al-
"lowed to speak to him: among others, an ecclesiastic
"who had received great obligations from the deceased
"king, accosted him, called him *friend*, and bid him
"take care not to accuse good men." Mezerai, it is plain, has copied the first of these observations from P. Matthieu, who says that it was the baron de Courtaumar, who, drawing his sword against these men, forced them to shelter themselves in the crowd: but I do not see what inference is to be drawn from the former of these two facts related by Mezerai, except that those men, transported with rage and grief for the death of the best of kings, were eager to punish the impious assassin; and as for the other fact, after what has been just said in the foregoing remark, it must be allowed to be very doubtful and hazardous, upon a supposition, that by the ecclesiastic, who had great obligations to the king, the author means father Cotton: but indeed, if this father did go to see Ravaillac, and if he really said those words, *My friend, do not accuse good men*, what ought to be inferred from an expression of gentleness and Christian charity, which neither directly nor indirectly presents any thing criminal to the mind? Abr. Hist. and Chron. vol. III. p. 1450.

Here follows, what is still, in different writings, to be found against the Jesuits on this occasion: "Father "d'Aubigny, who had confessed Ravaillac, was privately interrogated by the first president upon the secret "confession, but he could draw nothing from him except this; that God, who to some men had given the "gift of languages, to others the gift of prophecy, revelation, &c. had on him bestowed the gift of forgetful-

"ness of confessions. Moreover, added he, we, who "are ecclesiastics know nothing of the world; we do "not mix in its affairs, nor heed what passes in it." "Rather," replied the first president, "you know too "much, and are too far concerned in its business, and, "if you were not more so than you own you are, things "had gone better." Memoirs for a History of France, ib. p. 320, 321.

These last circumstances relating to father d'Aubigny, are certainly the most severe of all that have been urged against the Jesuits. It was well known, that Ravaillac, in his depositions, acknowledged that he was acquainted with the Jesuit; that he had been present when he said mass; that he had imparted to him his visions, the trouble of his mind, &c. He was confronted with this father, who maintained to Ravaillac himself, that he had never seen him, and that all he had said concerning him was false. The French Mercury, far more deserving to be credited than any of the writers I have quoted, because the author speaks so fully and with so much clearness of this affair, that one sees, in a manner, the whole proceedings of the trial; he, after giving a minute account of every circumstance of their examination, adds, "Father d'Aubigny said to Ravaillac, that "he was very wicked; and that, after perpetrating so "horrid a fact, he ought not to accuse any one falsely, "nor add to the number of his sins. Ravaillac being told "that, if he had any charge to bring against father d' "Aubigny, he must do it then, replied, that he had not "any; that he looked upon him to be an honest man, "and a good priest; and that he would believe him. In "like manner the said d'Aubigny having notice given "him to make his objections against the witness, and

"that according to the ordinance, he would not be ad-
"mitted to make them, if not immediately, he said he
"had no more to say, but that he was a wicked man,
"and a most audacious liar." French Mercury, anno 1610.

Ravaillac's silence to these reproaches may well pass for a conviction of the calumny. This circumstance of the trial may be seen at large in the book itself. Matthieu says it was Servin, the king's advocate, who interrogated father d'Aubigny, and that this was the answer: "That ever since he had, by the order of his superiors, "quitted preaching to apply himself wholly to hearing "confessions, God had bestowed the singular grace up-"on him of effacing immediately from his memory "whatever was said to him under the seal of confes-"sion." But this writer, though an enemy to the Jesuits, does not mention the first president's malicious reply to him; and doubtless he is more deserving of belief, than the Memoirs for the History of France; because he was living at that time, and was most particularly interested in the memory of Henry IV, who had honoured him with his favour. Pasquier, the great enemy of the Jesuits, by not accusing them of any thing, shews plainly enough, that he believed them innocent. History of Henry IV, ib. Letters of Nicholas Pasquier.

"On Sunday, May 23, father Portugais, a Cordelier; "and some curates of Paris; among others, the curates "of the parishes of St. Bartholomew and St. Paul, in "dark ambiguous words, and hints scarcely intelligible, "taxed the Jesuits with being accomplices in the "king's assassination, arguing against them from their "own books and writings; namely, those of Mariana "and Becanus. It was also proposed," says the same

author whom I now quote, "to forbid the Jesuits the "public pulpit. "However, they went no farther than "to order Mariana's book to be burnt by the hands of "the common hangman, which was done accordingly, "June 8, before the church of Notre Dame. This book "openly defended the deed of brother Clément, and has "been twice printed; the first time in folio, the second "in octavo. In the first edition, he calls this brother, "*aeternum Galliae decus;* but these three words are "left out in the second edition, which I have before "me." Memoirs for the History of France, ib. p. 325.

If all the authors who have written upon the same principles with those of Mariana and Becanus were to be accused of having contributed to the king's murder, "a criminal process might be entered against "John Petit, a doctor of the Sorbonne, whose opinions "were rejected by the council of Constance; likewise "against the celebrated John Gerson, James Almain, "Richer, John Boucher of the same college and soci- "ety. Can they be ignorant that an extraordinary as- "sembly was held among the doctors of the Sorbonne, "to proceed to the apothesis of James Clément, the "assassinator of Henry III; and that, among that great "number of doctors which composed the assembly, "only one, named John Poitevin, was against it? In "those miserable times, a furious hatred and mis- "guided zeal extinguished the natural lights of reason; "and however revolting that doctrine might be, which "teaches that it is sometimes lawful to murder kings, "however opposite to Scripture and reason, yet, to the "shame of humanity, and the disgrace of religion, that "doctrine prevailed. Mariana, a Spanish Jesuit, in a "book entitled De Rege et Regis Institutione, held, in

"effect that it was sometimes allowable to murder ty-
"rants, though elsewhere he teaches, that a lawful
"prince cannot be killed, or deprived of his authority
"by an individual. The enemies of the Jesuits advance,
"that it was from this book that Ravaillac had taken
"his first lesson, which he practised but too well. It is
"certain, however, that he never read the book, knew
"nothing of it, and did not understand Latin well enough
"to read it: but these reasonings are the effects of pas-
"sion and prejudice Father Aquaviva, to hinder the
"rashness of some writers from raising such calumnies
"against the Jesuits, for the future, on the 8th of Ju-
"ly forbad all the subjects of the society, upon pain of
"being excommunicated and suspended from exercising
"any of the sacred functions, to speak or write any
"thing which could authorise, in any manner, or under
"any pretence, the parricide of kings, whom, by the law
"of God, says he, we are commanded to honour and re-
"spect, as sacred persons placed by his hands upon the
"throne." Chronol. and Dogm. vol. I, p. 115, and following.

What is here said of Mariana may with equal justice be applied to Becanus; but, among all these accusations, I see only one in which there is any probability; which is that drawn from the book of this Spanish Jesuit, condemned by the parliament as being capable of arming subjects against their sovereign; but in reality what ought to be inferred from thence to the prejudice of the French Jesuits? what proofs could a book furnish against them, which was written by a foreigner, and in the year 1606 publicly condemned as a most pernicious piece, and even rejected by the Jesuits themselves?

"The queen, who was desirous that father Cotton
"and the abbé du Bois, the declared enemy of that fa-

"ther, and the whole society, should be reconciled, "permitted him to have a conference with that abbé, "which lasted four hours, at the house of the lieute- "nant-civil; but, not being able to agree, father Cotton, "to take him at some disadvantage, at length asked "him if he thought the Jesuits had been the cause of "the late king's assassination, and if he believed that he "had killed him. 'No,' replied the abbé du Bois, 'for, if I "thought so, I would this instant,' said he, swearing a "great oath, 'hoist you up by the throat and strangle "you, and then throw you out of the window.' Father "Cotton afterwards asked him if the Jesuits were not "Catholics. 'Oh yes,' answered he, 'such Catholics as "the devil is.'" Journal of the Reign of Henry IV, by P. l'Etoile, p. 233.

"On Tuesday, May 25, there was a quarrel betwixt "M. de Loménie and father Cotton, in full council. "Loménie told him, that it was he and his secretary "who had murdered the king, whereupon, the mem- "bers of the council representing to him that he ought "to be more moderate in his expressions, he said, that "his grief for the death of his good master might force "him into some intemperance of language, but that he "spoke only in the queen's presence. At the same time "Beringhen quarrelled with De-Lorme, first physician "to the queen, who supported the Jesuits, and said "things as severe to him as Loménie had done to father "Cotton." Ibid, p. 260,

Is it surprising that persons under the influence of passion, and in those moments when they suffer themselves to be carried away by their conjectures, prejudices, and particular enmites, should utter invectives, and make reproaches which they cannot prove? At such times they often say things which they do not believe, and

which, when their reason is less clouded, they inwardly disavow.

John du Bois, abbé of Beaulieu, being a short time after obliged to quit the kingdom, was arrested at Rome, and put into the prisons of the inquisition, either at the suit of the Jesuits or of the procurator-general of the Celestin monks; for he had formerly been of that order, and quitted it without giving an account of the money which had been deposited in his hands. He had afterwards borne arms and distinguished himself in the service of Henry III, who used to call him the emperor of the monks: after that, he resumed the ecclesiastic habit, and was celebrated for his preaching. Whatever was the cause, he was detained in those prisons till 1626, in which year he died, a few days after he was restored to his liberty by pope Gregory XV. Memoirs for a History of France, French Mercury, and Moreri.

In l'Etoile, la Varenne makes a very singular speech to the Jesuits at his return from la Fléche, whether he had accompanied them in the ceremony of bearing the king's heart to their chapel. Having entertained them all, to the number of twenty-four, at dinner, he continued his discourse to them (the former part of which had been pretty severe) in this manner: "I will not "scruple to tell you," said he, "that there is a very bad "report concerning you circulated in this city, which "has come to my ears; that there are among you some "who were abettors of, and accomplices in, the wicked assassination of the deceased king. Hitherto I have "not believed it; but if I should ever happen to discover "any thing against you, I declare that I will have you "all seized, and hang you, one after the other, in my "stables." Such was la Varenne's harangue to the

Jesuits; but it was time, say they, to shut the stable-door when the steed was stolen. Ibid. p. 176.

As this speech of la Varenne is not mentioned in any of the best authors of his time, there is good reason to think it one of those idle and ridiculous tales fit to amuse the populace, and gratify the malice and prejudice of an enemy who finds reason and probability in every thing that is conformable to his passion.

The same author, speaking of the provost-marshal of Pluviers, says, that he had two sons who were both Jesuits, and endeavours to prove that they were accessory to the king's assassination; but it is evident that nothing could be more unjust than the reasonings of this writer, or more false than his conclusions, with respect to the provost of Pluviers: for why indeed should it be asserted, that the Jesuits were in a combination with that provost, because he had two sons in the society? It would not follow from thence that they had contributed to Ravaillac's crime, unless it could be proved, which it is impossible to do, that the provost hanged himself through his fear of falling into the hands of justice, for having, in concert with the Jesuits, endeavoured to inspire Ravaillac with a resolution to complete his horrid design: but this base calumny is refuted by the French Mercury, which, after observing that all that had been said against the Jesuits had been taken from l'Anti-cotton, the Thanks of the Butterwoman, and such-like writings, says, "They ought surely, to agree in their "satires, since they all proceed from the same mouth. "Of these two books, the first was not printed till the "middle of September, and the other towards the end "of October; and it was always thought that this pro-"vost hanged himself because instruments for coining

"had been found upon him, he having practised the "art of coining, and been guilty of other crimes in his "office, for which he knew he could not avoid death; and not for the above mentioned accusation, which was raised against him at the instigation of his enemies." French Mercury, anno 1610.

That very observation, that nothing was alleged against the Jesuits, at that time, which was not taken from the most contemptible libels, is alone a sufficient answer to all other calumnies of that nature; and after some words which escaped one of the most furious enemies this society ever had, it ought no longer to be doubted. The Anti-jesuit, says he, appeared about that time, and, except low abuse, it will be found to contain nothing. The author was a young man named Bonestat. The factor of Guillemot was imprisoned for it. The Catholicon of Saumur appeared likewise; a work made up of bad and good. Letter, ibid.

La Barilliere, who is a free-speaker, meeting two Jesuits some days after the king's assassination, "Gen- "tlemen," said he, "I think you are Jesuits: there is a "merchant of Châtelleraut who has very good knives "to sell; perhaps you may find some that will suit you." This is not a proof, but a witticism which pleases not on account of the truth there is in it, but for its malicious and satirical turn. Memoirs for a History of France, ib. 353.

"Divray, a clerk of the court, told one of my friends "the next day, that as they were conducting mademoi- "selle Coman, the same who has been formerly men- "tioned, before the council, she said to him; 'I reveal- "ed to the Jesuits, in confession, all I knew of this "conspiracy, and they entreated me not to mention it.'" Certainly the Jesuits were greatly concerned, in what

this girl alleged: how comes it then that the writers of those times, who have been so particular in their relations, have taken no notice of this circumstance? Ibid. p. 358.

Nor is it less easy to refute the following citations against the several persons we have named; indeed they carry their refutation along with them, by comprehending, in the same accusation, persons who were not only without connexion of friendship or interest, but were declared enemies, and publickly known to be such: I mean the queen and the marchioness de Verneuil, and their partizans: for the same reason, therefore, we think ourselves dispensed with from joining to each quotation reflections which would greatly swell these Observations, and which must necessarily occur to every judicious reader.

"The Sunday before the Friday on which the king "was murdered, being the 9th of May, this soldier, a "wicked, lewd fellow, and who, (says the author a few "lines above,) had formerly been a priest, met the widow "of captain St. Matthieu, a Huguenot, a little beyond "the gate St. Antony, on the road from Charenton, and "knowing her, he accosted her, and, after some dis-"course, asked her if she still lived at Paris. She told "him she did. 'And what are you doing there so long?' "said the soldier. 'Doing?' she replied, 'I have a great "deal of business to transact.' 'Faith,' returned he, "if I was in your place, no law-suit or business what-"ever should keep me there: and it is because I wish "you well that I advise you to get out of Paris.' 'But "why do you wish me out of Paris?' said she. 'Be-"cause,' resumed the soldier, 'before eight days are "past, it is in danger of suffering so great a disaster, "that happy will it be for them who are at a distance

"from it. I therefore advise you, as a friend, to quit "Paris as soon as possible, and believe what I say to "you.' When they came to the entry of the church, "where the sermon was not yet begun, the soldier said "he would not hear the sermon 'But,' said he, laugh- "ing, 'I will go and examine the disposition of your "guards, who are a multitude of poor miserable wretch- "es, ranged on each side like two hedges.' Then look- "ing at them, 'Behold those lame stragglers,' said he to "this woman, 'which we are accustomed to see in "Paris at the entrance of our churches; do you not ob- "serve those soldiers who are amongst them? I know "them every one; they are all robbers: four of them in "particular, whom I see there, are destined for four "terrible exploits: but the wickedest, and most deter- "mined of them all, I do not see.' Saying this, he took "leave of the woman, and went away. Upon the Fri- "day following, when the king was assassinated, she "began to reflect upon what the soldier had said to her, "and the Sunday after, being in doubt whether she "ought to go to Charenton, hearing that others had set "the example, she resolved to follow it, and upon the "road again met the soldier, to whom, in great surprise, "she said, 'I think you are a prophet; I shall believe "you another time: but I hope we shall suffer no more.' "'This is nothing yet,' said the soldier; 'all is not over; "there are other strokes to follow this, equally wicked, "and much more dangerous, and, since you are resol- "ved to believe me for the future, take my counsel, "and leave your abode as soon as possible.'

"Upon giving immediate information of this dis- "course to the ministers of the church, among others "to M. Durand, he procured her, by means of one of

" his friends, access to M. Defunctis, who having heard " what she had to say, and got intelligence from her " where this soldier dwelt, and at what hour he might " be spoke with, he went to his lodgings at ten o'clock " at night, and seizing him without any difficulty, lodg- " ed him in a place of security. The great probability " there was in this story made many persons hope that " at length there would be a full discovery of this de- " plored and most abominable enterprise, if the vile me- " thods of proceeding used in the affair, had not de- " stroyed all the good effects that might have been ex- " pected from the discoveries already made; but such " was the conduct observed in it, that one would ima- " gine we were afraid of shewing ourselves too severe and " exact, in searching into a crime the most barbarous " and most wicked that has ever been perpetrated in " Europe for upwards of a thousand years." L'Etoile's Journal, page 150, and following.

" Tuesday, May 18, the court being assembled, de- " liberated upon the forms and proceedings to be used " in the trial and condemnation of that most detestable " parricide, and assassin of his king, Francis Ravaillac; " but it was more especially considered in this assem- " bly what tortures should be used to extort a confes- " sion from this miserable wretch. It was resolved " that he should be put to extraordinary tortures, and " those of the most cruel kind, even foreign ones were " proposed, and, among others that of Geneva, which " was called the *barathe*, or *beurriere*, a torture so vio- " lent that it is said none on whom it was tried, but " was forced by it to confess. Upon this the opinions " of the assembly were divided; the oldest and the best " approved of its being tried, the others wavering be- " tween both, and apt to change their opinions every

"moment, resolved upon nothing; therefore most of "those who were only determined by gain, having given "their votes, *in mitiorem (seu deteriorum)* carried the "vote that day by a great majority." Ibid. p. 154

"According to the said arret, he was put to the tor- "ture in order to oblige him to reveal his accomplices: "what passed is still a secret to all but the court." French Mercury, anno 1610, fol. 454.

"A certain infamous fellow, having publicly railed "at the deceased king, and praised Ravaillac, saying "that he had performed a noble act, was siezed and "brought prisoner to Paris. The informations against "him, as those against Maçon, were laid before the "chancellor, but have still remained a secret; nor has "there been any mention made of bringing them to jus- "tice." Memoirs for the History of France, Vol. II. p. 324.

"When the assassin was brought to the place of pun- "ishment, and upon the point of being torn in pieces "by the horses, observing that a certain man, who was "near the scaffold, had alighted from his horse to put "it in the place of one which had been tired with drag- "ging him: 'They deceived me,' said he, 'when they "told me, that the action I was going to commit would "be pleasing to the people, since they themselves fur- "nish horses to tear me in pieces.' A proof, (adds the "author in the margin,) that he had been incited by "some persons to commit that execrable fact, and that "he had accomplices." Ib. p. 322.

Here follows what relates to the provost of Pluviers: "The provost of Pluviers, or Pétiviers, a city in Beauce, "distant about two days journey from Paris, was ac- "cused of having said, the same day that the king was "murdered; *this day the king is either slain or wounded.*

"Being brought prisoner to Paris, he was found dead "in the prison, strangled with the strings of his draw- "ers. He was hanged by the feet in the Gréve, on the "19th of June." French Mercury, anno 1610.

L'Etoile, after relating the same fact, adds the following circumstances: "This infamous man, whose "wickedness was publicly known, and who had two "sons of the order of the Jesuits, *quod notandum*, ac- "knowledged by every one to be a very bad subject to "the king, but a good servant to the family of En- "tragues and the marchioness de Verneuil, and known "to be a rogue and extortioner, was accused of having "said, in Pluviers, while he was playing, or looking "upon others who were playing, at bowls, in a garden, "at the very time the king was murdered, *The king is "just now murdered; he is dead; depend upon it;* and, "some days before, he had used words to the same pur- "pose, or very near it, which were not taken notice of "till the thing happened, which made them believe that "the old villain knew something of the enterprise, and "was one of the accomplices of that vile assassin: so "that, being carefully watched, and eagerly pursued, "he was at length taken and brought to Paris, where "he was confined in the Conciergerie du Palais, where, "a short time afterwards, to their great astonishment, "they found him dead, being strangled with the strings "of his drawers. The parliament had him tried, though "dead, and found him guilty of the crime of high trea- "son: but, after all, *dead men tell no tales*, which was "what they wanted; for, if he had spoke, he might have "said too much for the honour and advantage of many "persons whom they had no inclination to hurt. This "was what was believed by all the people about Plu-

"viers, who used to exclaim, *Good God, how fortunate "is the death of this wicked man for M. d'Entragues, "the marchioness de Verneuil his daughter, and the "whole family.* Upon this miserable wretch was found "a tool and an instrument made use of in coining, cal- "led a mold. It was said, that he had been guilty of "that practice; but this instrument was found to be a "tool for breaking iron gates, and bars of iron, even of "the largest size, like those in the Bastile, in order to "get the count d'Auvergne from thence." Journal of the Reign of Henry IV, p. 183.

"The queen sent for Durat the physician, a man "whom the king detested, and would never suffer in "his presence, end even forbid the queen to employ; "she, however, retained him for her physician, made "him one of her council, with large appointments, and "all to oblige Conchini, who, it was said, bore with "great fortitude the death of the king." In the margin it is written, "The public were persuaded, that his "wife and he had greatly contributed to the king's as- "sassination." Memoirs for the History of France, Vol. II. p. 309.

"On Sunday, January the 30th, the marchioness de "Verneuil was, upon the depositions of mademoiselle "Coman, interrogated by the first president at his "house. Her examination lasted from one o'clock in "the afternoon till five. She is thus called, Henrietta "de Balzac d'Entragues, marchioness de Verneuil, "mistress to king Henry IV. She was accused by La- "Coman; yet was decreed to be heard but once, although "the affair was the king's assassination, and the crime "high treason." Ib. p. 358.

"The next day the queen sent a gentleman to the

"first president, to desire he would send her his opinion "concerning this process, to whom the good man re- "plied, You may tell the queen, that God has reserved "me to live in an age to see and hear things so strange, "as I never thought I could have heard or seen. One "of his friends and mine saying to him, that it was al- "most the general opinion that this young woman, by "her accusing so many persons, and of the highest rank "in the kingdom, spoke at random, and without any "proofs; the first president, raising his eyes to heaven, "and shrugging up his shoulders, replied, There are "but too many, there are but too many." Ibid.

"Monsieur d'Epernon at the same time, who was "most interested in this affair, and who eagerly pushed "on the process against this girl, that she might be put "to death, went generally for that purpose to the coun- "cil, and made a visit to the first president to hear what "had passed; but that gentleman, with his accustomed "gravity, and asperity of countenance, which those es- "pecially whom he did not like, were sure to meet with "from him, repulsed him disdainfully, saying, 'I am "not your news-monger, but your judge.' The duke "telling him, that he asked him as a friend, 'I have no "friends, replied the president: I will do you justice: be "satisfied with that.' M. d'Epernon returning in great "discontent, went and complained to the queen, who "immediately dispatched a messenger to the first pre- "sident, to tell him that she had been informed, he had "treated the duke d'Epernon ill, and that it was her "desire he should for the future, behave with more "respect to him, in consideration of his high quality. "To this, the first president replied: 'I have been a "judge fifty years, thirty of which I have had the ho-

"nour to preside in the sovereign court of the peers of "this kingdom, and, during that time, I never saw any "lord, duke, or peer, of what quality soever, who was "accused of high treason, who came before his judges "booted and spurred, as M. d'Epernon has done, and "with his sword by his side. Do not fail to tell the "queen this.' This was a freedom becoming a first "president. I should not record this speech of his "here, if I did not certainly know it to be true."

"If it be asked," says M. de Perefixe, "who were "the furies, the fiends, that suggested to him so damna- "ble a design, and urged him to carry it into execution, "history replies, that it is ignorant, and that, upon an "action of such consequence, it is not allowable to give "suspicions and conjectures for certain truths; the "judges themselves, who interrogated the criminal, 'durst not open their mouths, and never mentioned it "but with gestures of horror and astonishment." Perefixe's History of Henry the Great, Part III, p. 410.

The continuator of de Thou's Latin History says, that two different opinions prevailed upon this subject; some were persuaded that the assassination of Henry IV was the work of some great lords of the kingdom, who sacrificed this prince to their ancient resentment; others believed that it was Spain who struck this blow by the partizans she had in France: and this writer adds, that the president de Thou, and the ablest heads in the parliament, were of this latter opinion. He likewise mentions letters from Brussels, Antwerp, Malines, and Bolduc, before the 15th of May, which expressed that it was commonly reported in those provinces, that Henry IV had been murdered. Nic. Rigalt, anno 1610, Vol. VI, p. 492.

That passage from l'Etoile, which I quoted a little before, may, if granted to be of any authority, give room for a third opinion: namely, that this plot, or rather all these different plots, were to end in a rebellion, and even a kind of second massacre in Paris; and that this was not executed, because the conspirators seeing the king dead, which was the great and principal object they had in view, thought it needless to proceed any farther.

And here I cannot dispense with myself from mentioning some writings, which may be found in the fourth volume of l'Etoile's Journal, lately printed under the title of Pièces Justificatives. Some of them relate to the affair and process of mademoiselle Coman. They add nothing, or very little, to what has been already said. The others are,

First, a manuscript which the author pretends had been found in the cabinet of the duke d'Aumale (Charles de Lorrain, second son of Claude) who died in the Low Countries in the year 1631. In this manuscript, which heavily charges the Jesuits and the count d'Auvergne, although in prison at the time, it is related, that the duke d'Epernon, who was in the coach with his majesty, seeing him wounded to death (these are his words) "stabbed him in the side with a knife, that he might "be sooner out of pain. The duke of Montbazon," adds he, "saw the duke d'Epernon stab the king, but "did not take any notice of it, because he favoured "this assassination."

The second of these pieces is entitled, The Meeting between the duke d'Epernon and Francis Ravaillac. It is there asserted, that this duke, being at Angoulême, sent for Ravaillac and two other accomplices of his,

and he and father Cotton exhorted them to poniard the king, giving for a reason, that this prince was an enemy to the pope, the king of Spain, and the Catholic religion, which he was going to abolish in Europe; and that, after they had made them swear to perform this, receiving the communion upon it from father Cotton, they gave them each two hundred crowns. The assassins then took the road to Paris, where having staid a long time without meeting with an opportunity for executing their enterprise, they obliged d'Epernon to give each of them a hundred crowns more; that, when the moment for perpetrating the parricide approached, the duke d'Epernon, as he had agreed upon beforehand with Ravaillac, amused the king with some discourse, and then the horrid villain, throwing himself upon the king, gave him a wound with a knife; but the said duke perceiving that it was very slight, and that the king cried out, I am wounded, he made a sign to him to repeat the stroke, whereupon this execrable wretch, with a second blow, struck the king to the heart, so that he expired immediately. All these imputations to be found only in contemptible libels, deserve less that we should show their falsehood and inconsistency than the former. See Pasquier's letter to M. de Monac, in which he justifies the duke d'Epernon.

The other pieces relate to the story of Peter Du-Jardin, known by the name of captain de La-Garde, of whom we have already had occasion to speak. From these we learn, that Du-Jardin was a native of Rouen; he served at first in the regiment of guards, afterwards in the light-horse: he then went to Provence, where he was employed by the duke of Guise in his majesty's service. Marshal Biron knew him when he served in

the light horse, and attached him to himself on account of his great bravery. After the peace of Savoy, he went into the service of the republic of Venice, where he continued till she made peace with the pope. He then went to serve in Germany under the duke de Mercœur. He again returned to Venice, from whence, after a short stay at Florence and Romé, he came to Naples. In this city he became acquainted with a refugee, named La-Bruyere, who had been a leaguer: by him he was introduced to a Jesuit, called father Alagon, uncle to the duke of Lerma, the king of Spain's favourite. This Jesuit, being desirous to make use of so brave a man in the design that was projected of assassinating Henry IV, joined him with Hebert, marshal Biron's secretary, who has been mentioned in our Memoirs, with Lewis d'Aix, mentioned likewise in the account of the reduction of Marseilles, and with another Provençal, called Roux, all of them French refugees.

In one of their parties of pleasure Ravaillac was introduced to them, who disclosed to them all his designs, and told them that he brought a letter from the duke d'Epernon for the viceroy of Naples. La-Garde, having now got sufficient intelligence of every thing that was projecting, went to Zamet, ambassador from France to Venice, to discover all he knew. This ambassador sent him immediately to M. de Breves, our ambassador at Rome, and to Zamet his brother, at Paris. De Breves gave La-Garde letters for M. de Villeroi, with which he returned to Paris in the train of the duke of Nevers, who at Fontainebleau presented him to his majesty. Henry IV, after telling him that he would take proper measures to render these designs upon his person ineffectual, ordered this officer to accompany the grand

marshal of Poland into Germany, and to take care of his interests there. La-Garde, returning to France with advices of great importance from the grand marshal of Poland, was at Francfort informed of the king's death. He retired to Metz greatly indisposed, from whence he followed marshal de La-Chatre to the expedition of Juliers. After the peace, as he was upon his journey to France, he was attacked near the village of Fize by some armed men, who gave him several wounds, and left him for dead in a ditch. La-Garde made shift to get to Mezieres, where the duke of Nevers then was, who caused him to be conducted to Paris, where, upon presenting a petition to the king, he obtained the office of comptroller-general of Bierres; but, when he least expected such treatment, he was siezed and carried to prison. Before judgment was pronounced, which could not but be favourable because his judges found him absolutely innocent of every thing charged upon him, an exempt came to take him out of prison, and delivered him a brevet for a yearly pension of six hundred livres, and his patent for the office of comptroller-general of Bierres. It appears that he retired to Rouen, and died there.

Another writer of still later date, who has restored the five interrogatories of Ravaillac, in the volume of manuscripts marked 192, of the king's library (for the French Mercury mentions only the four last, which are abridged and related in an historical manner, and says not a word of the first) believes that in them may be found proofs that the criminal endeavoured to impose upon his judges, and did not make a full confession; and that his judges, on their side, seemed to be afraid of asking him how he came to be known to the duke

d'Epernon. He has not the least doubt of Ravaillac's having been in Italy, although he constantly denied it. The pieces relating to the process of La-Coman, and captain de La-Garde, seem to him to prove very clearly, that the plot of the parricide was laid at Naples in the year 1608; and that at one and the same time, they laboured to secure the success of it in Italy, Spain, Flanders, and France. To this he adds, that the duke d' Epernon, and the marchioness de Verneuil, met several times at St Jean en Greve; that they had been heard to say something relating to their scheme, and that Henry IV himself was informed of it: but that this prince, either through a blind security, or an excess of goodness, neglected this information.

Those who have observed that the duke of Sully, in some passages of his Memoirs, confessed that he does not declare all he knows on this subject, may in these words find some grounds for suspicions; but indeed in all these there is nothing sufficiently clear nor positive, to make it allowable, upon such hints, to accuse this or that person; and, at present, the best thing that can be done, is to draw a veil over this mystery of iniquity, and, if possible, to consign for ever to oblivion this shocking period of our history. We ought to take this part, although it were true, what some persons are fully persuaded of, that there are two or three cabinets in Paris which are able to throw some new lights upon the fact. Those who are possessed of such papers, are greatly to be praised for concealing them with so much care, and it would be well if they could resolve to consign them to the flames.

Throughout this whole detail, I have not quoted Vittorio Siri; not that he makes no mention of the assas-

sination of Henry IV and the trial of Ravaillac, Mem. Recond. Vol. II, p. 246, but he does it in so negligent a manner, and like a man so ill informed, and even so prejudiced against the person of Henry IV, and his maxims of government, that his testimony deserves to have no weight. I shall only observe here, that it is his opinion absolutely, that Ravaillac had no accomplices.

*** This long and laboured attempt of the compiler of Sully's Memoirs, to exculpate the Jesuits from all share in the assassination of Henry IV, is fully examined and refuted in a tract entitled, *Observations sur la nouvelle Forme des Mémoires travestis de M. le Duc de Sully.* The reader will find it in the Supplement to the French edition of Sully, in 10 volumes, 1778.

THE

TRIAL OF FRANCIS RAVAILLAC,

FOR THE

MURDER OF KING HENRY IV. 1610.

INTERROGATORIES *exhibited to the prisoner accused of the murder of the late king, on the 17th of May,* 1610, *at the suit of the attorney-general, by* ACHILLES DE HARLAY, *first president;* NICHOLAS POTIER, *president*; JOHN COURTIN *and* PROSPER BAVIN, *counsellors of our lord the king in his court of parliament, commissioners appointed by the said court for that purpose.*

THE prisoner is sworn; and asked his name, age, rank, and place of abode?

He said, that his name was Francis Ravaillac, born and dwelling at Angoulême, between thirty-one and thirty-two years of age.

He was asked if he was married?

He answered, No.

Whether he ever had been married?

He answered, No.

How he had spent his youth? and to what he had applied himself?

He said, that he had been employed in soliciting law-suits in this court.

Whether he had been bred up to the practice of the law?

He said that he had solicited law-suits for fourteen years; that he lodged at the Rats, opposite to the Green Pillar, in Harp-street, at a cobler's; and near the three pair of beads, in Calender-street.

How long he had been in this city the last journey?

He said, about three weeks.

Whether he has had any intention to go back again?

He said, Yes.

How far he had gone back?

He said, he had gone beyond the town of Estampes, at the sign of the *Ecce Homo*.

He was asked, what made him return?

He said, a desire to kill the king.

He was asked, what was his motive?

He answered, that amongst other reasons there was this, that the king had not, as he was able to do, brought back the followers of the pretended reformation to the catholic, apostolic, and roman church.

He was asked, what other reasons he had?

He answered that he was come to this city to speak to the king, and admonish him to bring back those of the pretended reformed religion to the catholic church; and for that purpose he had been several times at the Louvre to meet with his majesty; that he had been at madam d'Angoulême's, to get somebody to introduce him; and likewise at the house of the cardinal Du-Perron, to whom he never spoke, but only to his chaplains, whose names he could not tell, but should know them if he saw them; that he spoke of it to father Daubigny, a Jesuit, in his last journey, which was before Chrismas; he spoke of it to the parson of Saint-Severin and

to the father Saint-Mary-Magdalen, provincial of the Feuillants.

It was asked him, where he spoke to father Daubigny?

He said, he spoke to him in the church in Saint-Antony's street, at the conclusion of mass.

He was asked at what time he talked to him?

He said, that he set out from his own country thirteen days before Christmas; that he was fourteen days in coming to this city; that three or four days after his arrival, he went to the house of the Jesuits near Saint-Antony's gate, where, he said, father Daubigny said mass; after which, he desired one of the lay-brothers to procure him the means of speaking to the said Daubigny, which he did; and he told him several visions which had preceded the meditations that he had made by the permission of his provincial, Francis Mary-Magdalen of the Feuillants.

He was asked, why he used the expression, *My provincial?*

He said, because the said Mary-Magdalen had received him as lay-brother at the Feuillants.

It was asked, how long he had wore the habit of a Feuillant? and why he had quitted it?

He said that he had worn it about six weeks; and they had taken it from him, because he had visions in his meditations.

On being asked again about it, he said he had desired it again, but it was refused him on account of the said meditations.

Upon this he began to weep, and said, God had given him that habit, and his grief was, that they would not restore it to him.

He was asked, if he knew the superior, and his name?

He said, that he did not know him nor his name; but that he had asked for the habit again, only because it being our Lord's pleasure that he should continue in the world, from which it was his wish to retire, he resolved to serve as a lay-brother.

This he uttered with tears.

He said, that he had a great deal of uneasiness, in not having staid with the Feuillants in the favour of God.

He was asked, what visions he had spoke of to father Daubigny?

He said, that he had told him, that while he was a prisoner for debt at Angoulême he had visions representing fire, sulphur, and incense; and being released from prison, the Saturday after Christmas, having at night made his meditation, as was his custom, in bed, with his hands clasped, and his feet crossed, he felt his face and his mouth covered with something which he could not discern, because it was midnight; and being in that state, he felt in himself a desire to sing the Psalms of David; he began the psalm, *Dixit Dominus*, and sung it through; and afterwards, *Miserere*, and *De profundis*, at full length: and that it seemed to him, that he had a trumpet in his mouth, which made a sound as loud as that which is made in war.

The next day in the morning, as soon as he got out of bed, having made his meditation on his knees, and recollected in God, as his manner was, he sat down in a low chair before the hearth, and having combed his head, it being not yet light, he perceived one of the sticks yet on fire; and having finished dressing himself, he found part of a bundle of twigs, which he put to the

sticks that had kept fire, and kneeling down upon the ground, set himself to blow it, when immediately, on both sides of his face, both to the right and to the left, he saw, by the glimmering of the fire which was produced by his breath, hosts like those which are used at the communion of Catholics in the church of God; and below his face, at the right side of his mouth, he saw a roll of the same size with that which the priest elevates at the celebration of divine service. Of this revelation he gave an account to father Daubigny, who, fearing that his head was disordered, told him that he was not to think of all this, but to tell his beads, and pray to God; but that he was determined in his own mind to address himself to some great man to speak to the king.

It was inquired, if he had asked Daubigny whether, if he should have visions that incited him to kill the king, he ought to confess them?

He answered, that he had said nothing to him but what he had already told, except that his purpose was to speak to the king to drive out all the followers of the pretended reformed religion, and convert them to the roman catholic church.

It was asked, what Daubigny said to this?

He said, that he should put all these things out of his head, say his prayers, and tell his beads.

It was asked, whether he had no other conversation with him? and whether he never saw him but that time?

He answered, No.

Why did he choose to address himself to Daubigny rather than to any other?

He answered, that it was because, when he was turned out of the Feuillants, he had a mind to become a Jesuit, or to entreat him to speak to his provincial to

replace him among the Feuillants; but that, not having found him the first time, one of the lay brethren told him, that they never received into their house those who had been in another order.

He said farther, that, not having been able to speak to the king, he went back to the Jesuits to speak a second time to the said Daubigny, and spoke to him as he has already said, and shewed him a little knife on which there was a hand and a cross, telling him, that the heart of the king should be disposed to make war amongst the Huguenots.

He was asked, what hindered him from speaking to the king?

He said, that it was the grand provost who had given him the torture with the gun while he was kept prisoner at the Hôtel de Retz.

He was asked to whom he had applied himself that he might speak with the king?

He said, to the archers, and they carried him to speak to the provost, who told him that the king was sick.

He was asked, when he was at the Louvre?

He said, that it was after Christmas, and some two or three days afterwards he met his majesty near St. Innocent's in his coach, and desiring to speak to him, he cried out in these words: *Sire, I speak to you in the name of our Lord Jesus, and of the Holy Virgin;* but the king put him back with a little stick, and would not hear him. He then considered of retiring into his own country, and went away. And, being at Angoulême, he went to look for friar Gilles there, who had been formerly visitor of the Franciscan friars in Paris, to whom he confessed his visions and meditations, tell-

ing him, that he saw it to be the will of our Lord to bring back the followers of the pretended reformation to the Catholic church; that the visitor told him he need not doubt it. A few days afterwards, and the first Sunday in Lent, he went to mass at the monastery of the Franciscan friars in Angoulême, where he reconciled himself with God, made his confession to a friar of the order, whose name he does not know, and in his confession told the voluntary murder.

He was desired to explain what he meant by the word *voluntary*.

He said, his meaning was, that he returned into this city with an intention to murder the king, which, nevertheless, he did not tell his confessor, who did not desire the meaning of those words.

Upon being further questioned, he said, that he had then lost that intention, but that, when he returned to this city he resumed his intention.

He was asked, when he came to this city?

He said, that he travelled on foot, and arrived eight days after his setting out.

He was asked, how he had employed himself during his stay in Paris?

He said, that he lodged at the Three Half Moons, in the suburb St. James; and afterwards, that he might be near the Louvre, he went to lodge at the Three Pigeons, in the suburb St. Honoré; from thence he went to take a lodging at an inn, near the *quinze vingts*, but, there being too many guests there, he was refused; upon which he took up a knife that lay upon a table, not upon account of his being refused a lodging, but because it seemed to him a very fit one for the execution

of his design, and he kept it for some days, or three weeks, in a bag in his pocket.

He farther said, that, having desisted from his intention, he set out upon his journey home, and went as far as Estampes; that, as he was walking, he broke the point of the knife against a cart near the garden of Chanteloup, and, coming opposite to the *Ecce Homo*, of the suburb of Estampes, he again took it into his head to kill the king, and, no longer resisting the temptation, as he had done formerly, he returned to Paris with that resolution, because the king did not convert the followers of the pretended reformation, and because he had heard it reported, that the king intended to make war upon the pope, and transfer the seat of the holy see to Paris?

He was then asked, where he lodged? and who procured him lodgings in this city?

He said, that he sought for an opportunity to kill the king; and that, for this purpose, he sharpened, with a stone, the point of the knife, which had been broke, and waited till the queen was crowned, and come back to the city, supposing there would not be so much confusion in France, if he killed the king after her coronation, as if he had done it before.

He was told, that, since he deferred killing the king through a hope that there would be fewer commotions after the coronation, the said coronation could not prevent the troubles which the king's death must necessarily bring along with it.

He said, that he submitted that to the will of God.

He was asked, where he went to meet the king?

He said, that he went to the Louvre, where he had been several times since he had resolved upon killing

him; that he went there last Wednesday, and intended to kill him between the two gates, as he was going into his coach; that he followed him as far as St. Innocent's, near the place where he happened to meet him before, when he would not speak to him; and observing that the coach was stopt by two carts, and that his majesty turned his face and leaned towards that side where monsieur d'Epernon sat, he struck him twice in the side with his knife, passing his arm above the coach-wheel.

He was asked, what was his own opinion of the action he had committed?

He said that he thought he had committed a great fault, for which he asked pardon of God, of the queen, the dauphin, the whole court, and of every one who was injured by it.

We shewed him the knife, which lay before us: it was double edged at the point, with the handle made of a stag's horn. He acknowledged it to be the same with which he had stabbed the king, and that it was immediately taken from him by a gentleman on horseback.

He was told that he could have no reason for committing so wicked and traitorous an act, and that he had certainly been incited to it by some other person?

He said, that no person whatever had incited him to do it, but the common discourse among the soldiers, who said, that if the king, who would not tell his design to any one, intended to make war upon the Holy Father, that they would not assist him, although they were to die for it: that for this cause he yielded to the temptation which prompted him to kill the king, because he made war against God, inasmuch as the Pope is God, and God the Pope.

He was asked, what time it was that he heard this discourse amongst the soldiers?

He said that it was after he went to lodge at the Three Half Moons.

It was objected to him, that he was guilty of a falsehood in declaring that to be the cause of his committing the parricide, because he had said before, that, having laid aside the design of killing the king, he set out on his journey to his own country; and that, when he came to Estampes, he resumed that design, upon the discourse of the soldiers.

He answered, that he had spoke to them before, notwithstanding which he had altered his intention; but, when he came to Estampes, he resumed it upon remembering what the soldiers had said to him.

He desired us to shew him a paper which he had about him at the time he was seized, whereon was painted the arms of France, with a lion on each side, one holding a key, the other a sword. We shewed this paper to him, and he acknowledged it to be the same which he had brought with him from Angouléme, with an intention to kill the king.

He was asked, whether, when he was at the house of a man whose name was Beliard, he had heard the said Beliard say, that the Pope's nuncio had told the king, in the name of his holiness, that if he made war, he would excommunicate him?

He said, Yes; and also that his majesty had answered that it was his predecessors who had placed the Popes upon the throne; and that, if the Holy Father should excommunicate him, he would dispossess him of it; whereupon he resolved to kill the king, and with that intention he wrote these lines over the two lions:

Ne souffre pas qu'on fasse en ta presence
Au nom de Dieu aucune irreverence.

Do not suffer the name of God to be profaned in thy presence.

He was asked whether the knife, when he took it off the table, had the same handle that it has now?

He said, No: that the handle was of whalebone, which being broke, he gave the knife to his landlord's brother, whose name was John Barbier, a turner by trade, living in the suburb of St. James, and desired him to put a handle of horn upon it; but he did not tell him why he preferred that to any other.

He was asked, if this Beliard was of the pretended reformed religion?

He said, No; that he was a Catholic: nevertheless he held that discourse with him which put it into his head to kill the king.

He was told, that he ought not to have taken so wicked and abominable a resolution upon the discourse of one man only.

He said, he had taken a resolution to kill the king, not only upon what he heard this man say, but also upon the discourse of the soldiers at Paris, and that of the sieur de St. Gorges, among others, who said, that, if the king would make war upon the Holy Father, he would obey him, being thereto obliged; and that, if the king did wrong, he only was to answer for it.

We showed him a heart of Cost-mary root, which he acknowledged to have been taken from him; and he said, it had been given him by monsieur Guillebaut, canon of Angoulême, to cure him of a fever, saying, that there was within it a little bit of wood of the real Holy Cross, consecrated by the Capuchin friars, which had

that virtue; and for that purpose he had sent Mary Moseau, his landlady, to the Capuchins, for it, and ever since he had wore it about his neck.

We ordered it to be opened in his presence; but there was no wood to be found in the inside.

Upon which he said, that it was not him who was deceived, but the person who gave it him.

We showed him a pair of beads, which, he said, he had bought in St. James's-street, seven or eight days ago; that he has said his prayers with them, and wore them ever since constantly.

He was asked what persons he kept company with after he had resumed his intention to kill the king?

He said, that he had kept company with none but the friars of his own country, who are at the convent of the Dominican friars, whither he used to go to hear mass and vespers.

He was asked, what discourse he had with them? and if he had spoke to them of his visions?

He said that he had told them what he had told to others.

He was asked, if he was acquainted with a man whose name was Colletet? and what discourse they had had together?

He said, that he knew him only by lodging in the same room with him; that they lay together, but that he had not spoke to him of his design.

He was asked; if he had any discourse with any other friars?

He said, not in this last journey.

If he had had any discourse with a Franciscan friar of Angoulême?

He said, Yes: but that he had not spoke to him of his enterprise, and of his imaginations.

He was told, that he did not say the truth; for that he had spoke to him of his imaginations, asking his opinion whether he, who had such imaginations, ought to declare them to his confessor.

To this he answered, that he had not spoke to a Franciscan of his own country, but to another whom he met near Bourg de La-Royire, with whom he joined company; and, because he had no acquaintance in this city, he gave him part of his own lodgings, and carried letters from his friends to procure him admission into the convent: that he also carried his bundle for him: and that the name of this friar was Le-Febure.

It was observed to him, that during the reading of his examination, when the wounds he had given the king were mentioned, he had asked pardon of God for that crime, but that the true means to obtain it, was to acknowledge the truth; that his pretence for committing that action was so slight, that he must certainly have been prompted to it by some one who was concerned in the success of that miserable stroke, of which we feel the effects.

He said, since he had been under confinement, he had been urged by several persons to make this confession, and even by the archbishop of Aix; but that he had been prompted by no person whatever, but by his own desires; and that, however he might be tormented, he should never say any thing else; that, if torments could have forced him to confess, he had suffered sufficiently by the torture which a Huguenot of his own private authority gave him, when he kept him prisoner at

the Hôtel de Retz, by which he had the bone of his thumb broke.

He was told, that he had been chosen to commit this action as a proper instrument of mischief; he whose whole life had been wicked, and who had begun with using a father and a mother ill, and reducing them to beggary.

He said, that it would not be found so; and that his father and mother, who were still living, would witness the contrary, as well as the people where he dwelt; that he had been indeed accused and condemned for it; but it was by false witnesses; for he was innocent.

He was asked, when he was at Brussels?

He said he was never out of the kingdom; and that he did not know where Brussels is.

This examination being read to the said Ravaillac, he persisted in his answers, and signed his name.

RAVAILLAC.

The Examination taken next morning, at the palace, by us the Commissioners, the first President being sick.

The prisoner being sent for as before, and his oath taken,

He was asked, what was his rank and condition? and if had a father or a mother alive?

He said, that he is a practitioner of the law, and that, before his confinement, he employed himself in instructing youth; and that his father is likewise a practitioner of the law, and that his mother is separated from his father.

We having again ordered his examination to be read to him, he persisted in his answers, without adding or diminishing any thing, except only that he omitted saying, as he did now, that he had been carried to the commission of that crime, because the king would not permit justice to be done upon the Huguenots, for the attempt they made last Christmas to murder all the Catholics, for which attempt many of the Huguenots had been taken prisoners, and brought into this city; yet, he had been told, by several persons, were not punished.

He was told, that this was false; and that, although he had heard it, he should not have believed it, nor have been induced to commit a deed so wicked and abominable.

He said that this was one of the circumstances which helped to strengthen the temptation.

He was told, that it was the advice and instruction of others which strengthened it.

He said, that no one was engaged in the design but himself.

He was asked, if he lived in the same country with his father and mother?

He said that he had lived with his father and mother, but that his father neither loved him nor his mother.

He was asked how he maintained himself?

He said: that he had eighty scholars, and that, with what he gained from them, he supported himself in the journies he had made to this city.

He was asked if his father and mother observed his conduct?

He said, that his father had not lived with them these six years; that he hated him; and that he had lived

with his mother only, his sisters having likewise left her.

He was asked, what means he had of living?

He said, that his father and mother lived upon alms, and he himself upon what he gained from his scholars, one of whom gave him bacon, another flesh, another corn, wine, &c. and by what his friends furnished him with.

He was asked who were his friends?

He said, that they were the fathers and mothers of his scholars.

He was asked why he did not stay in his own country, since he could get a livelihood there?

He said, that he thought he should prefer the honour of God to all things.

He was told, that it was not for the honour of God to kill his king, but that it was an act of the devil.

He said that it was a wicked temptation, which did not proceed from God, but was a punishment to him for his sins.

He was asked, if he was not filled with horror at the commission of an act so abominable, and of so fatal consequence to all France.

He said, that he was sorry for having committed it, but that since it was done, he implored God to give him grace, that he might be able to continue till death in good faith, lively hope, and perfect charity; and that he hoped God was more merciful, and his will to save him more powerful, than the act which he had committed was to damn him.

He was told, that he could not be in the grace of God, after having committed so wicked an action.

He said, that he hoped our all-powerful Lord would not make him suffer for it.

He was told that he ought not to hope for the mercy of God, unless he acknowledged the truth, and declared who the persons were who had incited and persuaded him to so wicked a deed.

He said, that his only reason for committing it was, what he had declared before at his examination.

He was asked, if he had imparted his intention to any one?

He said, that he had not to any person whatever.

He was told, that he was too mean and inconsiderable a person to have conceived such a design, and that he must have been advised and supported by others.

He said that no person had advised him.

He was told, that he was so much the more wicked, if he undertook such an enterprise without being advised to it; therefore he would do well to declare who were his advisers.

To this he answered, that the reason why he did not declare this pernicious intention to priests, and men who have the care of souls, was, that he was well assured if he had disclosed to them his design of killing the king, it was their duty to seize his person, and put him into the hands of justice; since, whenever the public is concerned, priests are obliged to reveal all confessions; for this reason therefore he would not open himself to any person, through a fear that he might be punished with death, as well for his intention of killing the king, as if he had really done it, for which he asked pardon of God.

He was told, that the church commands, that all evil thoughts should be revealed in confession, and to neglect it is a deadly sin.

He said, that he acknowledged this.

He was told, that he had mentioned it.

He said, he had not.

He was asked, if he had spoken of it to a Franciscan friar?

He said, No.

He was told, that he did not speak the truth, for that he had mentioned it to a Franciscan friar, asking him, whether, if a man had strange visions, such as to kill the king, he ought to declare them in his confession?

He said, that it was true he had consulted a friar upon this head, but did not tell him that he would do it.

He was asked who it was that he consulted?

He said, a young Franciscan friar, named Le-Febure, to whom he put this question, Whether, if a man was assaulted with a temptation, such as to kill a king, and should confess it to the penitentiary, he should be under a necessity of revealing it; but being interrupted by another friar, he could not know the friar's opinion concerning the case that he put to him.

He was told, that he did not say the truth, and that the Franciscan did make him an answer; and he was asked, if he would believe the Franciscan if he owned it?

He said, that he would not believe him; but that it was his opinion, that if the friar had given him an answer, it was, that he ought to reveal his imaginations; but he was interrupted, and therefore would not give him an answer; neither did he, the accused, propose the question to him, as if he was the man who had the temptation, but in general, as if it should happen to any man.

He was told, that he did not acknowledge the truth, and that he did declare his intentions to him.

He said, that it was very unlikely that he should do so; that he had applied, as well to laymen as to others, even to an equerry belonging to queen Margaret, whose name was De-Ferrare; he declared his visions to him, and intreated him to procure him an opportunity to speak to the king; that the equerry answered, he must first have proofs that he was a good man, and one who was fit to speak to the king: to which he, the accused, made answer, that he thought he was good enough to speak to the king. He added, that probably if he had spoke to his majesty, he would have lost his temptation. That he afterwards applied to the secretary of madame d'Angoulême, who told him that the king was sick; yet he went again to the house of the cardinal Du-Perron, where he had the answer he formerly repeated, that he would do better to return to his own house.

He was told, that that was good council, and he ought to have followed it.

He said that it was true, but he was so weakened by his sins that he had no power over himself; and that the devil made him fall into this temptation.

He was told that the devil made use of others to tempt him.

He said that no man had ever spoke to him on the subject.

He was told, that he could not hope for the grace of God, unless he discharged his conscience.

He said, that he had some fears, but he also had great hopes of the grace of God.

He was told, that he could not expect it but by declaring the truth.

He said, that if he had been employed by any one in France, or by a foreigner, and should be so abandoned

by God as to die without declaring it, he should not believe that he would be saved, or that there would be any paradise for him, because *abissus abissunt,* &c. as he had learned of the preachers of our Lord; that one abyss of sins leads into others: that it was so double his crime, that the king, more especially the queen, the whole house of France, the court, the nobility, and all the people, should, on his account, be induced to offend God, while their minds remained in a perpetual inquietude, suspecting, unjustly, sometimes one, sometimes another, of their subjects; none of whom, he believed, were so imprudent, as to entertain a thought of being disloyal to their princes.

He was told, that if that was his opinion, he ought the more readily to declare who had persuaded him to the crime.

He said, that no Frenchman, foreigner, or any other, had ever advised, persuaded, or spoke to him on this subject; neither had he, the accused, ever mentioned it to any one: he was not so wicked as to have committed that deed for any other cause than what he had declared to us, namely, that he believed the king intended to make war upon the Pope.

He was told, that this was a false pretence.

He said, that he was very sorry for what he had done, and that he earnestly begged of every one to lay aside their suspicions of his having been set on to murder the king, and to believe that he only was concerned in that deed; and that they would not look with an evil eye or bear any one ill will, since he alone was guilty.

He was asked, if he had ever been in service?

He said, that he had served the late monsieur Rosieres, a councellor of Angoulême; and that he had lived likewise with some attorneys, who were now dead.

He was asked, if he had ever served any nobleman, as a page, footman, or valet de chambre?

He said that he had not; but when he lived with counsellor Rosieres, as his clerk, he likewise served him as a valet de chambre.

He was asked if he had seen the coronation last Tuesday, and if he had followed the king?

He said he had not.

He was asked, if he had been on the road to Saint-Denis?

He said, not this last journey, but at Christmas last, when he went to beg alms of the bakers.

He was asked, if he had been there last week?

He said, he had not gone farther than Saint-Jean-Greve, and le Pont Notre-Dame.

He was asked, if he had any magical characters about him? and who had given them to him?

He said he should have thought it a wicked thing to have them.

His examination being read to him, he persisted in his answers, and signed his name

RAVAILLAC.

Underneath which he wrote these lines:

Que toujours en mon coeur,
Jesus soit le vainqueur.

In my heart let Jesus be always conqueror.

Father James Daubigny, priest of the college of Jesuits, was this day sent for into court by us the commissioners, in the presence of Ravaillac; both of them acknowledged the oaths they had taken.

The said Ravaillac acknowledged, that the said father Daubigny was the person whom he had heard say mass some time after last Christmas, in their church in Saint Antony's-street: that having been told that he was the friend of father Mary Magdalen the Feuillant, he went to seek him, to intreat him to procure his admission into that order; that after mass was over, he spoke to him by the means of a lay-brother, and declared to him, that he had had great visions and imaginations, importing, that the king ought to reduce the followers of the pretended reformation; and that he showed the said Daubigny a little knife, whereon was a heart and a cross; believing, that the king ought to bring back the followers of the pretended reformation to the catholic and Roman church.

The said Daubigny replied, that, all this was false, and that he had never seen the said Ravaillac.

The said Ravaillac answered, By the same token you gave me a penny, which you asked of one that was near you.

To this the said Daubigny answered, that the prisoner was a very bad man; and after having committed so wicked an action, he had sins enough to answer for, without being the cause of an hundred thousand others, which might be committed.

The prisoner was then told, that if he had any objections to make to father Daubigny, he must make them immediately.

He said that he had none; that he looked upon the said father Daubigny to be an honest man, a good religious, and that he would believe him.

In like manner, the said Daubigny being told of the ordinance, that he must make his objections to the

prisoner immediately, for they would not afterwards be received.

He said, that he had nothing else to say, but that the prisoner was a very wicked man, and had uttered several falsehoods.

The examination of the said Daubigny being read in the presence of the said Ravaillac, he, the said Daubigny, persisted in his answers, and declared that they were true.

But the said Ravaillac declared, that he had spoke to the said Daubigny: that he went to look for him when he came out of the Louvre, and told him that he had temptations; and that when he was in prison making his meditations, by permission of father Mary Magdalen, his hands and feet had sent forth a stench of sulphur and fire, which were proofs of the existence of a purgatory, contrary to the erroneous opinion of heretics; that he had visions of the sacred hosts on each side of his face, having before sung the Psalms of David; and, in a word, that he had related all those circumstances to him which he had declared to us the day before in his examination; and that the said Daubigny said to him, in answer, that he, the said Ravaillac, ought to apply to some great man to admonish the king: however, since he had not done it, it was more proper for him to pray to God, he being of opinion, that those visions he spoke of were merely imaginary, and the effects of a disordered brain, as might be perceived by his looks; that he ought to eat good soup, go to his own country, tell his beads, and pray to God.

To this the said Daubigny replied, that these were all dreams and lies.

We having caused the questions that were put to the said Ravaillac concerning the said Daubigny, with his

answers, to be read to him in the presence of Daubigny, the said Ravaillac persisted in his answers, and declared that they were true.

The said Daubigny replied, that all which the said Ravaillac had deposed against him was false, as he had before declared to us.

Upon this, Ravaillac, being farther questioned, replied, that he had never seen the said Daubigny but that one time.

Their examination being read to them, they persisted in their answers, and signed their names.

The Examination taken on the 19th of the said month of May, in the morning, at the Palace, by us the Commissioners.

The said Ravaillac being brought into court, and his oath taken, he was required to declare, who those persons were that had prompted him to so wicked an undertaking.

He said, that all which now remained for him to declare was his intention and earnest desire to free himself from the load of his sins; that the whole nation was, upon his account, led to believe that he had been bribed by the enemies of France to kill the king, or by foreign kings and princes, who were desirous of aggrandising themselves, as was too common among the kings and great potentates of the earth, who do not consider whether their motive for making war is agreeable to the will of God; or else through a covetous desire of appropriating unjustly to themselves the territories of other princes; but that the truth was, he, the prisoner, had not been incited to that action by any per-

son whatever; for if he could have been so wicked as to have committed it for money, or for the interest of foreigners, he would have acknowledged it in the presence of God, before whom he now maintained the truth; that he therefore intreated the queen, the court, and the whole nation, to believe him, and not to charge his soul with the crime they commit, in supposing he was prompted to that parricide by any other; for that this sin would fall heavy on him, the prisoner, for being the cause of the uncertainty they were in which gave rise to their suspicions; and he therefore implored them to lay those suspicions aside, since no one but himself was able to judge of the fact, and it was such as he had confessed.

It was remonstrated to him, that since he had neither been injured in his person or goods by any command or ordinance of the king, it was not probable he would make an attempt upon his sacred person, whom he knew to be God's anointed, unless he had been persuaded to it by some other persons, and had received money from them; he being a poor man, in want of the necessaries of life, and the son of parents who lived upon alms.

He said, that it is sufficiently proved to the court through the course of his examination, if he had, through the force of money, or by the persuasions of persons who are ambitious of the sceptre of France, been prevailed upon to murder the king, he would not have come three times expressly from Angoulême to Paris, which were a hundred leagues distant from each other, to admonish the king to bring back the followers of the pretended reformation to the Catholic, Apostolic, and Roman church, as being persons who acted contrary to the will of God and his church; for a man who could be so wicked as to suffer himself to be corrupted, through ava-

rice, to assassinate his prince, would not have come three several times to admonish him, as he had done; and that, since he had committed this parricide, the sieur de la Force, captain of the guards, has acknowledged that he, the prisoner, had been at the Louvre, and earnestly entreated him to procure him the means of speaking to the king; and that the said sieur de la Force told him he was a furious papist, asking him if he knew monsieur d'Epernon; to which he, the prisoner, replied, that he did know monsieur d'Epernon, and that he himself was not a furious Papist: but that, when he had taken the habit in the monastery of St. Bernard, father Francis de St. Peter was appointed to be his spiritual father; and, since he was a true Roman, and apostolic Catholic, he was desirous of living and dying such: and he entreated the said sieur de la Force to bring him to the speech of the king; for he durst not declare to him the temptation he had so long had to kill the king; all he wanted was to tell it to his majesty, to the end that he might no longer be troubled with this bad intention.

He was asked, whether, when he took those journeys to advise the king to make war upon the followers of the pretended reformation, he designed, in case his majesty had not complied with his desires, to have committed the wicked act he had done.

He said, he did not intend it in that case; for he should have laid aside his design, and have thought that it was better to make him that remonstrance than to kill him.

It was objected to him, that he had not changed his wicked intention; since, after his last journey from Angoulême, in Easter, he had not sought for an opportunity to speak to the king, which was a proof that he left Angoulême with a resolution to do what he had done.

He said, it was true.

He was asked, if, from Easter-day to that on which he left Angoulême, he had received the holy communion?

He said, he had not: and that he received it the first Sunday in Lent; but that he had, nevertheless, caused the holy sacrifice of the mass to be celebrated in St. Paul's church at Angoulême, which was his parish church, as acknowledging himself unworthy of the most holy and august sacrament, full of mystery and incomprehensible virtue, because he was troubled with the temptation which prompted him to kill the king, and would not, in such a state, approach the precious body of his God.

It was objected to him, that, since he perceived he was not worthy of that mystery which he called incomprehensible, he could not assist with any devotion at that holy sacrifice celebrated by the priest, of which all Christians participate, receiving spiritually that which he who consecrates receives actually.

To this he was silent. He continued some time pensive and in thought, and then said, that he did not well know what to answer to their remonstrance; but afterwards he said, that he remembered it was his great affection for the most holy sacrament of the altar, which induced him to have it celebrated; and that he hoped he should participate of the communion by means of his mother, who was going to receive her God in that sacrifice; because he was always of opinion, that she was more pious, and had more love for her God than he had. Saying this he shed many tears.

He was told, that he could have no reverence for, nor any faith in the holy communion and sacrifice of the mass, since he had, for a long time, been under the in-

fluence of the devil, and been accustomed to invoke demons, whom he caused to appear to him, when he lodged in this city, about four years ago.

He said, that he never had invoked demons.

He was asked, if he knew a man named Dubois, born in Limoges? and whether they lodged together in this city, and lay in the same chamber?

He said, he did know him: that they lodged together at the sign of the Rats, opposite to the Green Pillar in Harp-street.

He was asked, if he would believe what the said Dubois should say?

He said, yes, he would believe him.

He was asked, whether, as he lay in bed with the said Dubois, he did not use some magical incantation, invoking the demons? and in what manner?

He said, that this was so far from being true, that he did not even lie in the same chamber with the said Dubois, but in a garret over the room where he, the said Dubois, lay: that, about midnight, the said Dubois, repeating *Credo in Deum*, earnestly entreated him, several times, to come down to him; saying, Ravaillac, my friend, come down; and crying aloud, My God, have mercy upon me! that thereupon he, the prisoner, would have gone down to him to know why he cried out for help in such a manner, but he was hindered by some persons in the room with him, who were terrified with the cries of the said Dubois: but that he, the prisoner, going down to Dubois some time afterwards, he told him, that he had seen a black dog of a monstrous size, and very terrible, which came and laid its two fore-paws upon his bed; and that the terror this vision threw him into made him utter those cries, and entreat that he, the prisoner, would come into his room and stay with him; upon which he,

the prisoner, advised the said Dubois to have recourse to the celebration of the holy sacrifice of the altar, in order to get rid of his horrible visions, and to cause mass to be said the next morning; and that they went together accordingly the next morning to the convent of the Franciscan friars, and caused the holy mass to be said, to draw down the grace of God upon them, and to preserve them from the incursions of the devils, the common enemies of mankind.

It was objected to him, that it was not at all probable that the said Dubois should have called to him, who lay so high; or that he should have heard his voice.

He answered, that nothing was more likely, it being one of the properties of the voice to ascend; but that, since the court would not believe him, the truth of what he said would be attested by those persons who were in the room where he lay, and who hindered him from going to the said Dubois: that they were his landlady, Mary Moiseau, and a cousin of hers, named John le Blond, who came into his room on account of the great noise they had heard, and for which he had quitted the room of the said Dubois, where he had lain before.

He was told, that he had no desire to get rid of his temptation, and therefore would not receive the communion on Easter-day, lest it should have the power to divert him from his purpose.

He said, that his reason for not receiving the communion was, that he had, on Easter-day, taken a resolution to kill the king, and upon that account he would not really, and in fact, receive the precious body of our Lord; but had a desire to hear the holy mass before he set out, believing that the sacrament, which his mother received that day, would be sufficient both for her and him, as he then begged of God that it might, and as he

did now, and would to his death implore him, that he might be made partaker of all the holy communions, taken by the religious of both sexes, by good men seculars, and others in the Catholic, Apostolic, and Roman church, receiving in the faith of our holy mother the Church, the precious body of our Redeemer; and that, being thus received by them, he might be made partaker of it, as believing himself a member of one only Jesus Christ.

He was told, that, having resolved upon so wicked an act, he was in the state of mortal sin, and in danger of damnation, and could not partake of the grace of God, and the communion of good Christians, while he continued to have this wicked intention and that he ought to have altered it, if he hoped to be in the grace of God as a good Catholic and Christian, as he would be thought to be.

He said, that he did not, in the least, doubt but that he was prompted to it by the motions of his own mind, against the will of God, the author of all truth, contrary to the devil, who is the father of lies; but that now, through the remonstrance of the court, he acknowledged that he either could not or would not resist that temptation, it being out of the power of men to hinder him from committing that wicked action; that he now declared the whole truth, without suppressing or concealing any thing; therefore he hoped that God, who was all good and merciful, would grant him pardon and remission of his sins, he being more powerful to save him, provided he made confession and received absolution, than men were to hurt him; and that he beseeched the Holy Virgin Mary, Monsieur St. Peter, Monsieur St. Francis (here he wept,) Monsieur St. Bernard, and all the celestial court of Paradise, to be his advocates

and intercessors with the most sacred Majesty, to the end that he might interpose his cross between his soul and hell; and by that he hoped to be made partaker of the merits of our Saviour Christ's passion, most humbly beseeching him that he would give him grace to continue associated with the merits of all those treasures he gave to the apostolic power on earth, when he said, *Thou art Peter*, &c.

His examination being read to him, he persisted in his answers, and signed his name

RAVAILLAC.

On the 27th of May, 1610, *in the morning, at the Palace.*

The Confrontation of the Witnesses before us, Achilles de Harlay, *Knight, first President;* Nicholas Potier, *President;* Prosper Bavin *and* John Courtin, *Counsellors,* &c.

Paul Noster, exempt from the guards, was confronted with the prisoner; both of them acknowledged the oath they had taken.

The accused said, that the witness was the person who took him prisoner; and the witness, that the accused was the prisoner whom he took.

The prisoner then was told, that, if he had any objections to make against the witness, he must make them immediately, according to the ordinance of the realm.

He said, that he had none.

The deposition of this witness being read to him, he persisted in it; and the prisoner acknowledging that it was true, they both signed it.

The prisoner was then confronted with James de Pluviers, Esq. of St. Michael.

The oath idem, &c.

The prisoner was then confronted with Jerome de la Robye, equerry to the king.

The oath idem, &c.

The prisoner was then confronted with Gamaliel Edovart, one of the king's footmen.

The oath idem, &c.

The prisoner said, that he knew him to be one of the king's footmen, but that he did not know if he was the person who seized him after he committed the act; and, being put in mind of the ordinance, he said, he had no objection to make to him.

The prisoner was then confronted with Peter Dubois.

The oath idem, &c.

The prisoner acknowledged, that what he said was true; but that it was by his advice that the witness had been to hear mass at the convent of the Franciscan friars, at which he likewise was present.

They both signed their names.

May 27th, 1610, *the court sat in the afternoon in the chamber de* La-Beuvette.

We the presidents, and several of the counsellors being present, the prisoner, Francis Ravaillac, was brought into court, who having been accused and convicted of parricide committed on the person of the late king, he was ordered to kneel, and the clerk of the court pronounced the sentence of death given against him; as likewise that he should be put to the torture to force him to declare his accomplices.

His oath being taken, he was exhorted to redeem himself from the torments preparing for him, by acknow-

ledging the truth, and declaring who those persons were that had persuaded, prompted, and abetted him, in that most wicked action, and to whom he had disclosed his intention of committing it.

He said, by the salvation I hope for, no one but myself was concerned in this action.

He was then ordered to be put to the torture of the brodequin,* and the first wedge being drove, he cried out, "God have mercy upon my soul, and pardon the "crime I have committed; I never disclosed my inten- "tion to any one." This he repeated as he had done in his interrogation.

When the second wedge was drove, he said with loud cries and shrieks, "I am a sinner, I know no more than "I have declared, by the oath I have taken, and by the "truth which I owe to God and the court: all I have "said was to the little Franciscan, which I have al- "ready declared: I never mentioned my design in con- "fession, or in any other way: I never spoke of it to "the visiter of Angoulême, nor revealed it in confession "in this city. I beseech the court not to drive my soul "to despair."

The executioner continuing to drive the second wedge, he cried out, "My God, receive this penance "as an expiation for the great crimes I have commit- "ted in this world: Oh God! accept these torments in "satisfaction for my sins. By the faith I owe to God, I "know no more than what I have declared, Oh! do "not drive my soul to despair."

* The brodequin is a strong wooden box, made in the form of a boot, just big enough to contain both the legs of the criminal, which being put therein, a wooden wedge is then drove with a mallet between his knees; and after that is forced quite through, a second wedge, of a larger size, is applied in he same manner.

The third wedge was then drove lower near his feet, at which a universal sweat covered his body, and he fainted away. The executioner forced some wine into his mouth, but he could not swallow it; and, being quite speechless, he was released from the torture, and water thrown upon his face and hands. Some wine being forced down his throat, his speech returned, and he was laid upon a mattrass in the same place, where he continued till noon. When he had recovered his strength, he was conducted to chapel by the executioner; and messieurs Fillesasqs and Gamaches, two doctors of the Sorbonne, being sent for, his dinner was given him; but before the divines entered into a conference with him, the clerk admonished him to think of his salvation, and confess by whom he had been prompted, persuaded and abetted, in the wicked action he had committed, and so long designed to commit; it not being probable, that he should of himself have conceived and executed it, without communicating it to any other.

He said, that if he had known more than what he had declared to the court, he would not have concealed it, well knowing, that in this case he could not have the mercy of God, which he hoped for and expected; and that he would not have endured the torments he had done, if he had any farther confession to make. He said, he acknowledged that he had committed a great crime, to which he had been incited by the temptation of the devil; that he entreated the king, the queen, the court, and the whole kingdom to pardon him, and to cause prayers to be put to God for him, that his body might bear the punishment for his soul. And being many times admonished to reveal the truth, he only repeated what he had said before. He was then left with

the doctors, that they might perform the duties of their office with him.

A little after two o'clock the clerk of the court was sent for by the divines, who told him, that the condemned had charged them to send for him, that he might hear and sign his confession, which he desired might be revealed, and even printed, to the end that it might be known to the whole world; which confession the said doctors declared to have been, That no one had been concerned with him in the act he had committed; that he had not been solicited, prompted, or abetted, by any other person whatever, nor had discovered his design to any one; that he acknowledged he had committed a great crime, for which he hoped to have the mercy of God, which was still greater than his sins, but which he could not hope to obtain if he concealed any thing.

Hereupon the clerk asked the condemned, if he was willing his confession should be known and revealed? and as above, admonished him to acknowlege the truth for the salvation of his soul. He then declared upon his oath, that he had said all he knew, and that no one had incited him to commit the murder.

At three o'clock he came from the chapel; and as he was carrying out of the Conciergerie, the prisoners, in great numbers, thronged about him, with loud cries, and exclamations, calling him Traitor, Wicked Wretch, Detestable Monster, Damned Villain, and the like; they would have struck him, had they not been hindered by the archers, and the other officers of justice, who kept them off by force.

When he was put into the tumbril, the crowd was so great, that it was with the utmost difficulty the archers

and officers of justice could force themselves a passage; and as soon as the prisoner appeared, that vast multitude began to cry out, as above, Wicked Wretch, Traitor, &c.

The enraged populace continued their cries and execrations till he arrived at the Grève; where, before he was taken out of the tumbril to mount the scaffold, he was again exhorted to reveal his accomplices; but he persisted in his former delaration, that he had none; again imploring pardon of the young king, the queen, and the whole kingdom, for the crime he had committed.

When he had ascended the scaffold, the two doctors comforted him, and exhorted him to acknowledge the truth; and after performing the duties of their function, the clerk approached him, and urged him to think of his salvation now at the close of his life, and to confess all he knew; to which he only answered as he had done before.

The fire being put to his right hand, holding the knife with which he had stabbed the king, he cried out, *Oh God!* and often repeated *Jesu Marie!* while his breast, &c. were tearing with red hot pincers, he renewed his cries and prayers; during which, being often admonished to acknowledge the truth, he persisted in denying that he had any accomplices. The furious crowd continued to load him with execrations, crying, that he ought not to have a moment's respite. Afterwards, by intervals, melted lead and scalding oil were poured upon his wounds; during which he shrieked aloud, and continued his cries and exclamations.

The doctors again admonished him, as likewise the clerk to confess, and were preparing to offer up publicly the usual prayers for the condemned; but immediately the people, with great tumult and disorder, cried out

against it, saying, that no prayers ought to be made for that wicked wretch, that damned monster. So that the doctors were obliged to give over. Then the clerk remonstrating to him, that the indignation of the people was a judgment upon him, which ought to induce him to declare the truth, he persisted to answer as formerly, saying, I only was concerned in the murder.

He was then drawn by four horses, for half an hour, by intervals.

Being agained questioned and admonished, he persisted in denying that he had any accomplices; while the people of all ranks and degrees, both near and at a distance, continued their exclamations, in token of their great grief for the loss of their king. Several persons set themselves to pull the ropes with the utmost eagerness; and one of the noblesse, who was near the criminal, alighted off his horse, that it might be put in the place of one which was tired with drawing him. At length, when he had been drawn for a full hour by the horses, without being dismembered, the people, rushing on in crowds, threw themselves upon him, and with swords, knives, sticks, and other weapons, they struck, tore, and mangled his limbs; and violently forcing them from the executioner, they dragged them through the streets with the utmost eagerness and rage, and burnt them in different parts of the city.

May the twenty-first, 1610.

THE jailor caused the court to be informed, that he had heard the prisoner say something of consequence; upon which he was sent for, and the oath being administered to him,

He said, that the even before, carrying the prisoner's supper to him, with one of his men, the two archers who guarded him being present, he asked the prisoner where he was when the king went out of the Louvre? to which the prisoner replied, that he was sitting in the hall among the footmen: and being again asked, why he committed such an action? the prisoner answered, "Because of a great —— but I will not tell you, but I "will tell the court to-morrow; and I could not help do- "ing it, as I shall prove by my body."

Then . . . . . archer of the provost of l'Hôtel, being sent for, the oath was administered to him;

He repeated what the jailor had said, adding, that the prisoner said, that his mother had a mark like his; for which reason he could not avoid doing what he did; and that perceiving the king's coach to stop, he saw a vision, which said to him, *Now is the time.*

Then was heard upon oath . . . . . archer likewise of the provost of l'Hôtel.

He also repeated what the jailor had said, adding, that the prisoner said, he was under the necessity of committing that action, by a mark which he and his mother had, that it came from heaven, and that he would declare it to the court, &c.

Sentence of Death against Francis Ravaillac, *May* 28, 1610.

Extracted from the Registers of the Parliament.

The court, consisting of the great chambers of the Tournelle and the Edict, being assembled, and having seen the criminal proceedings, formed by the presidents

and counsellors in that behalf, appointed by commission, at the requisition of the king's attorney-general, against Francis Ravaillac, a practitioner of the law, of the city of Angoulême, prisoner in the Conciergerie of the palace; as also the information made against him, the interrogatories, confessions, answers, and cross-examinations of witnesses, and the state of the case by the king's attorney-general; and the said Ravaillac having been heard and examined by the said court touching the matters laid to his charge; and touching the verbal process of the interrogatories administrated to him on the rack; which by order of the said court, he underwent on the 25th of this month, for discovery of his accomplices: On consideration of the whole,

The said court hath declared, and doth declare, the said Ravaillac duly attainted of the crime of high-treason, divine and human, in the highest degree, for the most wicked, most abominable, and most detestable parricide, committed on the person of the late king Henry IV, of good and laudable memory; for reparation where of, the court hath condemned, and doth condemn him, to make the *amende honourable*, before the principal gate of the church of Paris, whither he shall be carried and drawn in a tumbril in his shirt, bearing a lighted torch of two pound weight, and that he shall there say and declare, that wickedly and traitorously he hath committed the aforesaid most wicked, most abominable, and most detestable parricide, and murdered the said lord the king, by stabbing him twice in the body with a knife; that he repents of the same, and begs pardon of God, the king, and the laws: from thence he shall be carried to the Grève, and, on a scaffold to be there erected, the flesh shall be torn to pieces with red-hot

pincers from his breasts, his arms, and thighs, and the calves of his legs; his right hand, holding the knife wherewith he committed the aforesaid parricide shall be scorched and burned with flaming brimstone; and on the places where the flesh has been torn with pincers, melted lead, boiling oil, scalding pitch, with wax and brimstone melted together, shall be poured: after this, he shall be torn in pieces by four horses, his limbs and body burnt to ashes, and dispersed in the air. His goods and chattels are also declared to be forfeited and confiscated to the king. And it is further ordained, that the house in which he was born shall be pulled down to the ground (the owner thereof being previously indemnified) and that no other building shall ever hereafter be erected on the foundation thereof: and that within fifteen days after the publication of this present sentence, his father and mother shall by sound of trumpet and public proclamation in the city of Angoulême, be banished out of the kingdom, and forbid ever to return, under the penalty of being hanged and strangled, without any farther form or process at law. The court has also forbidden, and doth forbid, his brothers, sisters, uncles, and others, from henceforth to bear the said name of Ravaillac, enjoining them to change it to some other, under the like penalties; and ordering the substitute of the king's attorney general to cause this present sentence to be published and carried into execution, under pain of being answerable for the same; and before the execution thereof, the court doth order, that the said Ravaillac shall again undergo the torture for the discovery of his accomplices.

Pronounced and executed the
27th day of May, 1610.

VOISIN.

Extract from the Registers of Parliament

The court, consisting of the great chambers of the Tournelle and the Edict, being assembled and proceeding to judgment on the criminal process extraordinary, formed at the requisition of the king's attorney-general, on account of the most wicked, most cruel, and most detestable parricide, committed on the sacred person of the late king Henry IV, and having thereupon heard the king's said attorney-general; hath ordered, and doth order, that, at the instance of the dean and syndic of the faculty of divinity, the said faculty shall be assembled, as soon as may be, to deliberate; and having heard the tenor of the decree of the said faculty of the 13th of December, 1413, and the resolution founded on the opinion of one hundred forty-one doctors of the said faculty, since confirmed by the council of Constance; *That it is not lawful for any one, whoever he be, to make any attempt on the sacred persons of kings, and other sovereign princes.* The said decree thereon to be made by the said assembly, shall be subscribed by all the doctors of the said faculty, who shall have been present at the deliberations; and also by all the batchelors, who are members of the body of divinity; which said decree being communicated to the said attorney-general, and produced to this court, such order shall be made thereon as reason shall require.

Done in parliament, the 27th May, 1610.

APPENDIX.

Letters from HENRY IV *to his Mistress,* CORISANDE D'ANDOIN, *afterwards Countess of Guiche.*

LETTER I.

Baigneres, Sept. 12, 1570.

I HAVE nothing to write to you except that I have been here since yesterday, drinking the waters, which do me all possible good. M. de Montluc* is also here, who says he is more devoted to me than to any other man living. I govern him in all things. Apropos of this, I beg you will search in my little desk, the letter he wrote to me, in which he tells me that he cannot continue the garrison of my company so near to me, since I employ it otherwise than for the king's service: he also mentions in the same letter that he had learnt, that, in the states held in Bearn, I had declared against the king.† Send me a copy of the letter, and take particular care of the original; for, before we part, he must make me some reparation for it. I entreat you to send it me by a careful person, and in all haste, because I may not again have a like opportunity. I shall act graciously, and with a good hu-

* Blaise de Montluc, governor of Guienne.

† This letter was written just after the conclusion of a peace with the Protestants.

mour; and both him and his will be still more my friends after it. I entreat you not to fail in this. I send you the mules, and the - - - -, to carry part of the furniture. As soon as they shall be on their way back, I will set out. I am busily engaged at Seméac. Recommend me to the little girl. I have sent to seek master Amanin. Farewell.

LETTER II.

*Seméac, June 30th, 1579.**

Thanks to God, I have at last recovered those places which had been occupied in this country by the thieves and robbers who had seized upon them; for having an enterprize against Rançon, I sent yesterday to put it in execution, and through God's favour, it succeeded to my wishes: the place was taken, the banditti dispersed, a part slain, and some made prisoners, so that this country is now free, on which account, after having spoken to M. de la Valette, I shall prepare more willingly to quit this place, for I have put the whole of this district in such security, that, for the future, they may, if they will, protect themselves, while I undertake what the said M. de la Valette shall think proper.

You may tell our neighbours of Bayonne and Dax, of what is mentioned above, and say that I desired you to do it, in order that they may know I am not idle where I stay. I have sent the upholsterer to seek your wardrobes at Monréal; they will, I hope, be soon here; but I do not know whether it will be safe to send them by the way of Bearn; it will be less so the other way, therefore I will not dispatch them till you are sure

* This letter alludes to events which took place immediately on the breaking out of hostilities in 1579. See vol. I, p. 76.

they will go safe: for, notwithstanding the passport you formerly had, our bullocks are still seized in Bearn, and I cannot recover them: this is all I can tell you. I shall set out on Friday to meet M. de la Valette at Aulx. From thence you shall hear from me.

P. S. If Gabriel be not engaged, I could wish him to come hither to do what I want to have done. Pray send me word if he can come, for I will seek out for another.

LETTER III.

June 17th, [1586?]*

One of your footmen is just arrived, who has been 10 days a prisoner at Brouage; they have taken your's and my sister's letters from him; but St. Luc, hearing the manner in which he is sure I would be revenged for this, has sent them by one of his own people, who will not be here till this evening. The vessel in which the bearer of this came, sails in an hour, which is the reason of my sending him back, having detained Esprit for reasons which you will hear of presently. Yesterday I received intelligence from Germany: by the last of July O. S. our army will be at Place-Montre, in France.

The horse-load of grain costs fifty livres in Champagne and Burgundy, and thirty at Paris; it is distressing to see how the people die of hunger. If you want a coach-horse, there is one in my troop, exactly like your others, very handsome.

I arrived this evening from Marans, whither I had gone to provide for the safety of it—Ah! how much I wished to have you there!—it is a place more suited to your disposition than any I have ever seen; it is an island

* See Vol. I, p. 140

surrounded by marshy groves, where at every hundred yards are canals on which to go a pleasuring in boats; the waters are clear and not rapid; the canals are of all breadths, the boats of all sizes; amidst these solitudes are a thousand gardens to which they go only by water. The island, thus environed, is two leagues in circumference;—a river passes by the foot of the castle in the middle of the town, which is as convenient as Pau; there are few houses which have not a small boat at their door. This river divides itself into two branches, which bear not only large boats, but vessels of fifty tons burthen come up it; it is only two leagues from the sea: indeed it is rather a canal than a river; the larger vessels go up against the stream as high as Nyort, distant 12 leagues. There is an infinite number of insulated mills and farms.—Here are all kinds of singing birds; I send you the feathers of various species of sea birds. Of fish there is here an immense quantity, large, and cheap; a large carp for 3 sous, and a pike for 5; it is a place of great trade, and all by means of boats; the country is full of grain, and very beautiful. Here one may live agreeably in peace, and in safety in war; enjoy those we love, or complain of their absence. Ah! this makes me very eloquent! On Tuesday, I set out for Pons, where I shall be nearer you; but I shall not make a long stay there. I think all my other footmen are dead; not one of them has returned. My soul, hold me in your good graces; believe my fidelity to be pure and unspotted; it never had its like. If this affords you gratification, live happily, your slave adores you. I kiss, my heart, thy hands a thousand times.

LETTER IV.

Du Mont Dec. 8.

MONGLAS is just arrived; he hurries me more than any of the others, and for reasons which are greatly to be apprehended, and which must not be committed to paper; they will be told you. There has been no battle since that near Montargis. The duke of Maïenne has returned to his government, and M. d'Aumale is gone home. Paris will neither receive the king's Switzers, nor the duke of Guise; who appeared before the suburbs. My mind is greatly distracted, and not without cause. See if Navaille's ransome cannot be moderated through your favour. I beseech you employ your influence in this for the love of Tach and me. The bearer of this goes by St. Sevère, and will return the same way. Hold me in your favour, as one who will be faithful to you till death.

P. S. I have two little tame boars, and two fawns; send me word if you will have them.

LETTER V.

Montauban, Jan. 14.

THERE is not a footman, or at least very few, but what is searched, or the letters he carries opened. Seven or eight gentlemen have arrived of those who were at the foreign army, who assure me (and it is true, for one of them is M. de Montluet, Rambouillet's brother, who was one of the deputies sent to treat) that there are not ten gentlemen who have promised not to bear arms. M. de Bouillon has not promised; in short, no-

thing is lost which may not be recovered with money. M. de Maïenne has done an action which will gain him little credit; he has stabbed Sacremore with a poniard, as he asked for some reward for his services. I am informed that, not being willing to satisfy his demands, he was afraid that, through discontent he would reveal all the secrets he knew, even the plot against the king's person, of which he was the principal. God is willing to destroy them by their own dissentions, for Sacremore was the most useful servant they possessed; he was buried before he was quite dead. As I write, Morlants and a footman from my cousin* have arrived, who have been plundered of both their clothes and letters. M. de Turenne will be here to-morrow. He has taken, in three days eighteen strong-holds about Syjac. If it please God, I shall perhaps soon do something better. The report of my death spreading to Pau, thence to Meux, reached Paris; where some of the priests, in their sermons, set it forth as one of the blessings which God had promised them! I kiss thy hands a thousand times.

LETTER VI.

Jan. 12.

YESTERDAY Pychery returned with a short letter from you and tells me another was taken from him, both were opened; take care what you write to me. Yesterday also came a man to me from Paris, who has given me full information of every thing. The king is arrived there greatly applauded by the lower orders, who ex-

* The prince of Condé.

claimed aloud, that the leaguers did nothing but threaten, but that the king had driven away the foreigners.* The queen-mother did not seem rejoiced at his arrival, nay, she says every where that the duke of Guise would have defeated them without the king. There are some circumstances which I cannot write, having lost the cypher used between you and me. Neither Guitry nor Clervaut† would sign the capitulation, answering that they would sooner lose their possessions than fail in their duty to their master: They are at Geneva: I shall have them with me immediately. The capitulation consists of three articles; those who are willing to obey the edict may live freely at their homes; those who will not, but will promise not to bear arms, may enjoy their property, in a foreign country; and those who will do neither, are to be conveyed in safety out of the kingdom. Tygnonville‡ will be here to-morrow. No army is yet advancing against us. My life, hold me ever in your favour, and be assured of my fidelity, which is inviolable. I kiss thy hands a thousand times, and also thy little sister.

LETTER VII.

February 23.

You do not find the roads dangerous, to afford pleasure to the least of your friends; but if I write to you to gratify me with your presence, the roads are too dangerous: these are the testimonies of the part I occupy in your good graces. I write the letter you desired to Meryteyn,

* This and the preceding letter seem to allude to the defeat of the German auxiliaries in 1587. See vol. I, p. 169.

† These were the two agents sent to attend the German troops.

‡ See vol. I, p. 62.

and send it you open; I think it will displease her, but I like your favour better than her's. I had blockaded le Masdagenes, but did not bring up the artillery, as I was apprehensive the marshal's army might oblige me to retire in haste, the grand-prior of Thoulouse having joined him with the army of Languedoc. I am just going to mount, with three hundred gentlemen, and I shall advance to the head of their army: it is a great chance if I do not perform some exploit. I conclude, under an idea that you certainly do not wish me well. It is in your power to inspire me with such opinions as you please. I kiss your hands a thousand times.

LETTER VIII.

March 1st.

I HAVE received a letter from you, my M . . . . . , in which you tell me you do not wish me ill, but that you cannot assure yourself of so changeable a creature as I am; the first afforded me great pleasure, but you are greatly to blame in entertaining those doubts you express. What action of mine have you known to be variable, I mean in what relates to you? I have always continued fixed in the love and service I vowed to you, God is my witness. . . . . Yesterday the marshal and the grand prior offered us battle, well knowing that I had disbanded my troops: it was at the top of the vineyards, on the side of Agen. Their force was five hundred horse, and near three thousand infantry. After being five hours in drawing up their troops, which after all were sufficiently confused, they advanced, resolved to drive us into the ditches of the town, which indeed they ought to have done, for all their infantry was

in motion. We received them at the farthest wall of my vineyard; and retired gradually; but always skirmishing, till within a hundred yards of the town, where our main body was, amounting to about three hundred arquebusiers. Here the enemy retired to where they first began the attack; it was the most desperate skirmish I ever witnessed, and produced the least effect, for there were only three soldiers of my guard wounded, and two of them but slightly. Two of the enemy were left dead amongst us, of which we took the spoil; others we saw them carry off with them, together with a great number of their wounded. My life, hold me in your favour; it is what I most desire in this world, which I confirm by kissing your hands a thousand times.

LETTER IX.

[1588.*]

To complete my misery, one of the greatest misfortunes I could have apprehended, has befallen me; this is the sudden death of the prince. I regret him as what he would have been to me, not what he was. I am now the mark against which is directed all the perfidy of the mass. The traitors have poisoned him; through God's permission, I will take vengeance on them. This poor prince (not indeed in heart) having on Thursday run at the ring, supped in good health: at midnight he was seized with a violent vomiting, which continued till the morning; he kept his bed all the Friday; in the evening he eat his supper, and having slept well during the night, rose on the Saturday morning; he sat up at dinner, and afterwards played at chess; after which he rose from

* See vol. I. p. 170.

his seat, and began to walk across the room, conversing with those about him: all on a sudden he exclaimed—"Give me a chair, I feel myself extremely weak." He was no sooner seated than he became speechless, and shortly after expired in his chair. The marks of poison suddenly showed themselves. It is impossible to conceive the astonishment which this has occasioned hereabouts.* I shall set out by day-break to examine this business. I foresee much trouble is coming upon me. Entreat God fervently for me; if I escape it, it must be him who hath guarded me even to the grave, to which I am perhaps nearer than I imagine. I will remain ever your faithful slave. Good night, my life. I kiss thy hands a thousand times.

LETTER X.

Nerac, March 8th, at Midnight.

God knows with what regret I quit this place, without going to kiss your hands: indeed, my life, I am confined to my bed with sickness. You will be surprised (and say I have not been deceived) at what Lyceran will tell you: the devil is unchained: I am to be pitied, and it is wonderful that I do not sink under my afflictions. If I were not a Huguenot, I would turn Turk. O, by what violent trials do they put my brain to the test! I cannot fail soon of becoming either a fool or a wise man: this year will try me thoroughly. How grievous are domestic evils! all the troubles which can afflict a mind are continually exercised upon mine. I say every thing at once. Pity me, my life, and do not add your kind of

* The king appears to have been at this time about Bergerac. See vol. I, p. 170.

torment—it is what I dread most On Friday I set off for Clayrac: I will remember your advice, namely, to be silent. Believe me, nothing but a want of friendship will ever make me change the resolution I have taken to be eternally your's. Love me, my all: your favour is the consolation of my soul in the midst of afflictions;—do not refuse me this support. Good night, my life. I kiss thy hands, &c.

LETTER XI.

Aynset, March 13.

YESTERDAY two messengers came to me from St. Jean-d'Angely, the one in the afternoon, the other in the evening. The former relates that Belcastle, page to the princess, and her valet, suddenly fled after they saw their master dead, having found two horses, worth two hundred crowns, at an inn in the suburbs, which had been kept there for fifteen days before, on each of which was a bag of money. Enquis, the master of the inn, says a person named Brillant sent the horses thither, and came every day to see they were well taken care of, saying that if he gave four measures of corn to the other horses, he should give eight to these, and that he would pay him for the double quantity. This Brillant is a man whom the princess had taken into her house, and given to him the entire government of it. He was immediately seized, confessed that he had given a thousand crowns to the page, and bought these horses by command of his mistress, to go into Italy. This story is confirmed by the second messenger, who adds farther, that this Brillant had been made to write a letter to the valet, who was known to be at Poitiers, in which he desired him to

come about two hundred yards outside the gate, as he wanted to speak with him; he accordingly came immediately, and was seized by an ambuscade placed there, and brought to St. Jean-d'Angely. He had not yet been examined; but he often said to those who brought him, "Ah! the princess is a bad woman! Let them seize the "prince's tailor. I will disclose every thing, without "being forced to it," which was done. This is all that is yet known. Recollect what I formerly told you; my judgment seldom deceives me:—*A bad woman is a very dangerous creature.* All these poisoners are Papists. These are the lady's instructions. I have discovered an assassin designed against me. God will protect me: and I will tell you more about it presently. The governor and officers of Taylebourg have sent two soldiers to me, and write that they will deliver up the place to no one but myself; which affords me great satisfaction. They are hard pressed by the enemy; but they are so anxious to keep their word with me, that they are not discouraged by it. No one is suffered to quit St. Jean, but those they send to me. M. de la Tremouille is there with only nineteen followers. They send me word, that if I make much delay it may be attended with bad consequences: this makes me hasten, so that I shall take twenty troopers, and travel thither day and night, in order to return to St. Foix, to the assembly. My life, I am very well in health, but in much affliction. Love me, and give me proofs that you do so; this will be a great consolation to me. I will not fail in the fidelity I have sworn to you, and in saying this I kiss your hands a thousand times.

LETTER XII.

March 15th.

YESTERDAY I wrote to you all that I knew; news has since arrived from the court. The duke d'Epernon has quarrelled with marshal d'Aumont, and his brother with Crillon.* Their dispute is so violent that they cannot be reconciled. The king's authority will be interposed in the affair. However, the league is in a great ferment: this affords us a little ease. I shall be at St. Jean by Thursday, from whence I will send you all the news. I have travelled two leagues to-day, all in the enemy's country. Good day, my life be assured of the fidelity of your slave; he will never deceive you; he kisses your hands a thousand times.

LETTER XIII.

March 21st.

On my arrival at Taylebourg, I found that Lavardyn had taken the island of Marants, with his army, which consists of four or five thousand men, and that nothing held out but the castle, which he was battering with two pieces of cannon. I set out immediately for this place, from Rochelle, to endeavour to succour the place, and assemble my troops, which I reckon will be sufficiently strong to give Lavardyn a check. All I fear is, that the castle is not well furnished with provisions, and that it will be surrendered from their hearing nothing of me. I have taken one of the forts, and am employed day and night in constructing bridges, for the water is very high in the marshes. Yesterday two Al-

* The colonel of the French guards

banois were killed, and two made prisoners, who came to reconnoitre our bridge. I have only slept an hour since I arrived here, being always on horseback. My life! hold me always in your good graces; and never entertain a doubt of my fidelity. Let me hear often from you. Adieu, my heart: your slave kisses your hands.

LETTER XIV.

Lusignan, May 20th, [1588.

Sickness has broken out so much amongst our troops, that it will compel us to quit the field sooner than our enemies could have done. I am just on the point of procuring you an ambling horse, the handsomest you ever saw, and the best: he has a great many beautiful specks on him. Bonyere is gone to Poitiers to buy you some lute-strings; he will return this evening. Yesterday I had news from the court. The duke of Guise is still there. The prince of Parma has been compelled by the English to raise the siege of a town he had invested.* The battle was very severe; there fell 2,500 men, 1,500 of which were native Spaniards, 22 of these are captains; the rest are Englishmen. I am not very well, and am much afraid of falling sick. Marshal Biron does every thing in his power to assemble his forces: he will not be able to compel us to quit the field unless he receive succours from France, or Gascony. My heart! remember always *Petyot;* certainly his fidelity is a miracle. He wishes for you a thousand times in the day, in the avenues of Lyranuse. You will con-

* Probably the siege of Graves is here meant. See Bentivoglio, b. iv. pt. 2.

sider whether he shall send you Rosambeau, to keep you from *ennui*. That place must be wild indeed, where you two would be dull, when together. Those whom we sought yesterday are gone; they have not yet escaped. Farewell, my heart; I kiss thy hands a thousand times. Love me better than yourself.

LETTER XV.

Montguyon, June 25th.

I CAME hither in hopes of striking some blow against our enemies; but the weather has been so tempestuous, that it has disconcerted all our plans. I return to night to sleep at Barbesyeux, and to-morrow to Pons. You will gratify me by going to Pau. Ah, my dear, what would I give to be able to go thither! Such a pleasure is inestimable. I send you the copies of the letters which the queen of England wrote to the king and queen, on the peace of the league. You will discover in them a noble language, and a pleasing style. My heart, I cannot write a longer letter, as I am just going to mount my horse. Good-day, my life. I kiss thy hands, &c.

LETTER XVI.

October 21st

GOD has done more than man could expect—certainly more than I could have expected, as you will see by the letter I wrote you yesterday. He sent us a tempestuous season, which astonished every one; but, on the other hand, he rendered valiant those who were sick, and increased the astonishment of the weak-hearted; so that, in the evening, after I had invoked him, he inspired me with the resolution to summon them at ten o'

clock at night, against all military order, having, during the day, discharged fifty shot without any effect. At the first sound of the trumpet they came to a parley, and the treaty was so speedily made, that they surrendered at ten o'clock; and, through God's special favour, I am now within the place. It is a strong place, and of great importance. On Monday I believe we shall make the grand attempt: therefore I will say, with David, "He who hath thus far given me the victory over "mine enemies, will also make this affair easy." So may it happen through his goodness! My heart! I am a better man than you reckon me. Your last packet will teach me again that speed in writing which I had lost. Every night I read your letter: if I am in love with it, what must I be with her from whom it comes? Never had I so great a desire to see you as I have at present. If the enemy does not press hard upon us, after this assembly, I will steal a month. Send me Lyceran, under colour of his going to Paris. There is still a thousand things which cannot be written. Ah, my life! thou art made for me! For God's sake, do as your letter says. Is it possible, that, with so gentle an edge, I have cut the thread of your caprice? I would fain think so. I beseech you to forget all your hatred to every person about me: it is one of the first changes I wish to see in you. Neither fear, nor believe, that any thing can ever diminish my love. It is more ardent now than ever. Good night, my heart, I am going to sleep, my mind being freer from care than it has been these twenty days. I kiss thy beauteous eyes a thousand times.

LETTER XVII.

November 30th.

SEND me back Brysquieres, and he shall return with every thing you want, except myself. I am greatly afflicted at the loss of my little one,* who died yesterday; he was just beginning to talk. . . . . The enemy is before Montaigu, where they will be well drenched, for there is no shelter for a league round. The assembly will break up in ten days. Yesterday a great deal of intelligence reached me from Blois. I send you an extract of the most authentic.—A man is this instant arrived from Montaigu. They have made a bold sortie, and killed a great number of the enemy. I am sending all my troops thither, and hope, if the place can hold out fifteen days, to strike a blow there. What I wrote to you of not wishing ill to any person, is requisite both for your own peace and mine. I am speaking to you now as being wholly mine. My life! I have a strange desire to see you. Here is a man who is the bearer of letters from the king of Scotland to my sister: he presses me more than ever about the marriage; he offers to send me six thousand men, at his own expense, and to come himself to serve me. He will most undoubtedly be king of England. Prepare my sister beforehand to accept his offers favourably, by pointing out to her again our present situation, and the greatness of this Prince, as well as his virtues. I have not written to her about it. Introduce the subject in the course of conversation, by observing that it is time she should be married, and that there is no other match to

* This was a son he had by Corisande d'Andoin.

be expected for her but this; for as to our relations, it is a hopeless matter. Farewell, my heart! I kiss thee a hundred thousand times.*

LETTER XVIII.

Dec. 20th.

My life! the messenger who returned to me yesterday was seized near Montgaillard, and carried to M. Poyanne, who asked him if he had any letters: he said he had one which you had written to me; he took it opened and read it, and then returned it to the bearer. M. de Plessis is arrived, and the rest of my troop from Nérac. I will travel in such wise, to visit you, as to have nothing to fear from the garrison of St. Sèvere. There is also a person coming from the foreign army, which is at Castel-jaloux; he will be here this morning. I will bring you all the news, and the power of emptying all the strong holds. On Sunday there was a fine charge made near Moneurt, which is well worth being known: the governor, with three cuirassiers, and ten horse arquebusiers, fell in with the lieutenant de la Brunyere, governor of the Masdagenois, who had 24 horsemen

* The contents of this letter, as far as they relate to the king of Scotland, are curious from the circumstance of their being at variance with what is said by our historians respecting the proposed union between James and Henry's sister. Cambden and Robertson say it was the wish rather of Elizabeth than of James, and that the queen's object was to prevent his marriage with Anne of Denmark. But, if any attention is to be paid to what is mentioned above, both these opinions are erroneous; for James seems to have most anxiously desired the match, and it would probably have taken place, had not the princess Catherine been averse to it. The offer of sending succours to Henry, and of coming himself to serve him, is particularly deserving of notice, because it is even a "wider deviation from James's general character," than his gallant voyage to Denmark to bring home his bride.—See Robertson's Hist. of Scotland.

with him, half of them arquebusiers also; our governor, seeing his party so weak, and as if lost, said to his companions, We must either kill them or perish ourselves; and immediately charged so desperately, that they killed the lieutenant, and two of his company, took other two prisoners, routed the rest, and gained five large horses, and all those of the arquebusiers, having only one man wounded. I have a great number of dispatches, to write to-night: the messengers will set off to-morrow noon, as I shall also do, to go and kiss your hands. Good-day, my sovereign good.

LETTER XIX.

December 22d.

You would think me solaced by having retired into our garrisons. Truly, if another assembly were to be held, I should become a fool. Thank God, every thing is finished well. I am going to Saint-Jean to assemble our troops, in order to pay a visit to the duke of Nevers, and perhaps shall occasion him a signal displeasure, not in his person, but in his post. You will hear of it presently. Every thing is in the hands of God, who has always blessed all my labours; through his favour, I am in good health, having nothing on my heart, but a desire to see you; I know not when I shall be so happy. If an opportunity present, I will show that I know how to take advantage of it. I will not entreat you to love me; as you have done it so entirely that there is no need of that. There are two things of which I can never doubt —you, my love, and its inviolability. I expect Lyceran; good friends are rarely to be found. At how high a price would I purchase three hours conversation with

you! Good night, my life! I wish I were in the corner of your chimney warming your pottage! I kiss you a thousand times.

LETTER XX.

New-year's day, [1589.]

Shall I never have any thing else to write to you but the surrender of towns and strong holds? This night St. Maixant and Maillesaye surrendered to me, and before the end of this month I trust you will hear me spoken of. The king is triumphant; he has thrown the Cardinal de Guise into prison:* he showed him publicly for twenty-four hours. The President de Neuilly, and the provost des Marchands have been hanged, together with the secretary of the late duke of Guise, and three others:—"My son," said the queen-mother to his majesty—"grant me a request I wish to make you,"—"That depends upon the purport of it," was his answer—"It is to grant me M. de Nemours and the Prince of Guise; they are both young, and will one day do you service"—"With all my heart, madam," said he—"I give you their bodies but I will keep their heads to myself."—He has sent to Lyons to seize the duke de Maienne: it is not yet known whether he has succeeded. They are all at loggerheads at Orleans, and still nearer here—at Poitiers—of which I shall be within seven leagues to-morrow. If the king would permit me I would reconcile them. I pity you if you have such weather as it is here; it has froze for these last ten days. —I am in hourly expectation of hearing they have sent to strangle the late queen of N - - - -:† this, with the

* Margaret de Valois? † See Vol. I. p. 178.

death of her mother, would make me sing the song of Simeon. What a long letter is here for a warrior! good night, my life. I kiss thee a hundred million times. Love me, as you have reason to do.

LETTER XXI.

[*Mothe-Frelon, Jan.* 1589.]*

It was impossible to send Jere, on account of my illness, from which through God's help I am now recovering. You will presently hear of me in as honourable terms, as in the affair of Niort. - - -

LETTER XXII.

Montbazon March 8th. [1589.*]

My life! God continues his blessings upon me. Since the capture of Chatellerault, I have taken the isle of Bouchart, a passage upon la Vienne and la Creuse; it is a fine town and may be easily fortified. We are at Montbazon, six leagues from Tours, where the king is. His army is encamped within two leagues of ours, without our requiring any thing of each other; our soldiers meet, and embrace each other, instead of fighting; though there is neither truce, nor orders to this effect. Many of the king's people come over to me, but none of mine are willing to change masters. I believe his majesty will employ me, for he is indisposed, and his loss is a bad omen for us. I am going to Chatellerault to seize some houses that are in rebellion. Tell Castille to take the field as soon as possible. This is the moment in which all my servants must do wonders; for, from natural causes, April or May will prepare the ruin of one or other of the parties—it will not be mine, since it is God's. My life! the greatest grief at my heart, is my being so far from you, and that I can only testify in writing the love which I have, and always will have for you.

I entreat you to send me your son.†

* See Vol. I, p. 185. † See Vol. I, p. 105.

LETTER XXIII.

Chatellerault, March 18th.

My heart! I have made an eight-days journey towards Berry, where I have not been useless, having taken, as if by miracle, the castle of Argenton, a stronger place than Leytour, defeated a troop of fifty chosen men of the league, who were marching to its relief, compelled upwards of three hundred gentlemen of the league, some to join me, others to promise not to stir from their homes, of whom I have taken pledges, and others not to stir under pain of having their houses seized. I have also taken le Blanc in Berri, and ten or twelve other strong holds; these bring in about 100,000 crowns annually. I am in very good health, thank God, and love nothing on earth but thee!—I have received your letter, but I have scarcely had time to read it. Good-night, my life, I kiss thee a million times.

LETTER XXIV.

Boisjancy, May 21st.

You will learn from the bearer of this, the happy success which God has granted us in one of the most desperate engagements that has taken place in this war.* He will tell you also how Messieurs Longueville, la Nouë, and others have triumphed near Paris. If the king uses dispatch, as I hope he will, we shall soon be in sight of the spires of Notre Dame. I wrote to you only two days since, by Little John. God grant, that

* This took place near Chartres. See Vol. I. p. 191, 2.

we may do something this week as great as we did the last. My life, love me ever. Farewell, my life!

LETTER XXV.

Camp before Pontoise, July 14th.

I expect your son, who is at no great distance; what he has to accomplish is full of danger; he will bring with him some troops which are marching to join me. We are before Pontoise,* which I do not think we shall take; it has been attacked against my consent;—the old ones carried the point; I think they were all dreaming. Hautefort was slain yesterday; his death is a great loss to the league. The enemy and us have been skirmishing the whole day—the river between us—their troops are not equal to ours, either in numbers or goodness. Isle Adam has also surrendered, which is a bridge over the river Oise; I shall fix my quarters there to-morrow, there will then be no longer any water between the duke of Maïenne and me: he is at St. Dennis. We shall in six days join the Swiss, who are conducted by Longueville and la Nouë. Though we are day and night on horseback, yet we find this war less fatiguing—the reason is, the mind is more at ease in it. The day-before-yesterday I passed my troops in review before the king, as he went over the bridge of Poissy: there were 1200 horse, and 4000 arquebusiers.

My life! I am sorely displeased when I find you entertain doubts of me; through spite I will not endeavour to remove them: you are greatly to be blamed, for I swear to you I never loved you more ardently than I do at this moment; and I would sooner die than forfeit

* See Vol. I, p. 194.

the promises I have made you. Believe this and live in confidence of my fidelity. Good night, my life! a million kisses.

LETTER XXVI.

*Trenches near Arques, Sept. 9th.**

My heart! it is wonderful how I support the labour I undergo: God hath pity upon me; and grants me his favour; blessing, as he does, my labours, in spite of many, I am in good health, and my affairs prosper, contrary to the expectations of a great number of people. Yesterday I took Eu; the enemy, who is now double my numbers, thought to catch me. Having completed my enterprise, I have approached near to Dieppe, and am waiting for them in a camp which I am fortifying. I shall see them to-morrow, and hope with the help of my God, that if they attack me, they will come off with the worst; the bearer goes by sea—the wind and my affairs compel me to conclude, with kissing you a million times.

LETTER XXVII.

Falaise, Jan. 8th. [1590.]

My life! since the departure of Lycerace, I have taken the towns of Sèez, Argentan, and Falaise, where I caught Brissac, and all the succours he had brought for Normandy. I set out to-morrow to the attack of Lisieux, in my way to meet the duke of Maïenne, who is besieging Pontoise.† Since Lycerace's departure, my troops have increased upwards of 600 gentlemen and two thousand infantry, so that, through God's favour, I

* See vol. I. p. 203. † See vol. I. p. 211,12.

fear nothing from the league. I have received the sacrament to-night, a ceremony, which, a year since, I little thought of being able to perform in Normandy. I shall in the course of three days send you one of my footmen by sea, on whose shores I now am. Certainly I make good progress, and go as God conducts me; for I never know what I shall do in the end; nevertheless my actions do miracles, so are they guided by the supreme master. I love nothing but you, and in this resolution I will die, if you give me no cause for the contrary. God be thanked, I am very well! and entirely at your service. Farewell, my heart—a thousand kisses.

As I finished this letter the inhabitants of Bayeux have brought me the keys—it is a fine town.

LETTER XXVIII.

Lysieux, Jan. 16th.

My heart! you have not condescended to write to me by Bygose. Do you think that you act rightly in behaving thus coldly? I leave this question to be answered by your own judgment. I was very happy, to learn from him that your health is good: may God grant you a long continuance of it, and me a continuance of the blessings he has hitherto showered upon me. I have taken this place, though I did not fire a gun except as a feint; within it were 1000 soldiers and 100 gentlemen: it is the strongest place I have reduced to my power, and the most useful—for I shall draw from it 60,000 crowns. I live like a true Huguenot, for I entertain 10,000 foreigners, and keep my right, by what I gain daily; and I will tell you, that God so blesses me, that there is scarely any

sickness in my army, which increases daily. I was never in such good health, nor never loved you more ardently than at this moment. On the truth of this, I kiss thee, my life, a million times.

LETTER XXIX.

Jan. 29th.

My heart! I have carried my conquests to the borders of the ocean. May God bless my return as he has done my advance: it will be through his favour; for to him I assign all the good fortune that befalls me. I trust you will soon hear of some of my exploits: may God grant me his favour in them. The legate, the Spanish ambassador, the duke of Maïenné, the whole of the chiefs of the enemy are assembled at Paris; my ears ought to tingle, for they talk a great deal about me. Yesterday I received some of your letters by de Revignan. I was very glad to hear you are well; for myself, I am in good health, and love you more than ever.

Good night, my life: I shall sleep longer to-night than I have done these seven nights. A thousand kisses.

LETTER XXX.

Before Vendome.

My life! be under no apprehension that I do not take care of myself: but my chief trust is in God, who, through his favour will protect me. Your son will be here to-night completely recovered. We are before Vendome, which I hope to take to-morrow; and I am desirous to clear the environs of Tours before I repair thither. The

schemes which are every where formed are incredible. I say within myself, the devil is unchained, but God will be above all, consequently my affairs will go on well, for in him is all my trust. Be ever assured of my fidelity—it is inviolable. Good-day, my life; I am going to the trenches; I kiss thee a million times. Our German horse have entered Champagne, to the number of 3000, with 5,000 foot; for the great levy will not arrive till June. I shall send in the course of two days, marshal d'Aumont to employ them in Lorraine, till, after I have completed my work at Tours, I can join them, which will be in December; I think I can assure you I shall be in Paris by the end of January. Farewell.

LETTER XXXI.

Chelles, May 13th.

My life, I beseech you to excuse me, if, in case M. de Turenne should unhappily die, I do not bestow on your son the post you have asked for him; it is not a proper one, and, besides, it would make him useless; for, from the moment they undertake this employment, it is so slothful a one, that it is the ruin of young men. You have given him to me; let me bring him up as I like; and be you under no anxiety about him. I shall take such care of him that you shall know how much I love him for your sake. I have spoken to Labasse about him, and your other affairs. I am angry when you think I have nothing to do but to will: I protest to you, that since I have been king of Navarre, I have not experienced so much want as during this last year. I am before Paris, where God will aid me. By taking it I shall begin to feel the effects of the crown. I have taken the bridges of Charenton and St. Maur, by battering them,

and hanged all I found there. Yesterday I carried the suburbs of Paris by storm.* The enemy's loss was great —our's but trifling; it is true, indeed, that la Nouë was wounded, but it will be nothing. I have burnt all their mills, as I have done in all the other parts. They are reduced to great want, and, if not relieved within twelve days, must surrender. I have sent for your son, as I think he will perform something great here; I keep Castille with me for eight days. I am in good health, thank God, and love you far more than you do me. God grant me peace, that I may enjoy a few years of rest!—indeed I watch without ceasing. It is scarcely credible how many persons are employed about me to kill me; but God will defend me. I am very faithfully served; and I can tell you that the enemy will occasion me no more harm than fear. With this assurance, my heart, I kiss thy hands, mouth, and eyes, a million times.

LETTER XXXII.

July 15th.

You will presently hear of me by Lavie, for whom I have done in your favour, a thing which has given him satisfaction. Saint Dennis and Dammartin have yielded. Paris is so closely blockaded that there must either be a battle this week, or a treaty for capitulation. On Monday the Spaniards will join the Great Duke; we will see whether he will have courage enough to fight. I lead your son daily to some skirmish or other.

Castille is enraged that his regiment does not arrive. Yesterday I saw some ladies who had quitted Paris; they told me a great deal about their sufferings. I am very well, thank God, and love nothing on this earth so dearly as you; this is what I trust you will never doubt

* See vol. I. p. 235.

of. On the truth of this, my life, I kiss thy beauteous eyes a thousand times, which I will through life esteem the dearest objects in this world.

LETTER XXXIII.

[*In* 1590,]

My heart, since the departure of Maraval, nothing fresh has occurred, except that the remains of the Walloons have returned into Flanders, in spite of all the duke of Maïenne's endeavours to stop them: the Reitres have done the same, after having been almost all plundered even by their own party. The Legate is at this moment desirous of treating for a peace; he talks no longer about excommunication: believe me I shall act with vigilance and not suffer myself to be over-reached. I am very well, thank God, and love you as much as you can desire. You would pity me, if you saw me, for I am so burthened with business that I absolutely sink under the weight of it. Love me as you would one who will never change his sentiments towards you. This is saying enough. I kiss thy beauteous eyes a million times.

LETTER XXXIV.

October 18th.

I have received all you sent me, which I will keep as I ought. God knows with what joy I received your letter. Confess now, that you wish to afflict me. I have always loved you most unfeignedly, and that love was founded on your self and your virtues; these two pillars united can never be overthrown. But let us quit this subject: the die is already cast, there ought to be no longer any doubts between us. I am in good bodily health; but my mind is ill at ease, having besieged a cas-

tle, at first by starving the garrison, but, afterwards, the weather frustrated my designs. Though your----- has told you, I have been obliged to embark in it in good earnest. I have great doubts of the issue; the weather is much against me; and the enemy is using their utmost endeavours to collect their forces to overpower me. You will soon know the result of it, by the way of Mar san: since it is your desire. God, who hath always blessed my labour, will perhaps give me better success than I hope for; therefore visit my sister oftener than you have hitherto done: I know there is no danger in telling her every thing; she will like you the better for it.

The count of Soissons says his marriage with Mademoiselle----- is much spoken of. He denies having loved Essa, though, he says, she loved him. The states had not opened yesterday: their meeting is variously spoken of. Yesterday fourteen of Bouillé's troopers, under his lieutenant, fell in with the best company of Mercœur's light-horse, consisting of thirty lances, of which only three escaped. The greater part of ours were unarmed, not thinking the enemy were so near: their leader is taken. Of ours ----- is wounded, and eight gentlemen, but none of them mortally. In two days I shall send a messenger to you, and will be as careful to let you hear of me, as I am to hear of you. I am going to the trenches. Farewell, my soul; I kiss thee a million times.

Since I wrote my letter, I have staid two days at Arsac, in hopes of hearing something new.

LETTER XXXV.

Camp before Amiens, Sept. 11th. 1597.*

MADAM,

I clearly discover that you have been on the other side of the mountains, where you were occupied in my service; I also know that your presence there was very necessary. Within these fifteen days the forces of France and Spain have been in sight of each other, and it was God's pleasure that these swaggerers should retire with shame. The cardinal came to relieve this place by stratagem, but he also has returned shamefully without doing any thing. To morrow we shall enter the place, and I shall then immediately take the field with my army, for the remainder of this month and the next. If God bless my efforts, as I hope and pray for, we will be in a condition to bid them defiance. As Grammont is no longer of any service yonder, I have ordered him hither; for he may still learn with me, and I naturally love him. I have a great desire to make a tour into Anjou and Brittany, to reduce the duke of Mercœur to reason. Farewell, madam. I kiss your hands.

LETTER XXXVI.†

My dear heart, yesterday evening I showed my wife your letter, and asked her advice what answer I should send you. I remarked her countenance particularly, to discover whether she betrayed any emotion as she

* See Vol. II. p. 182. Corisande was now countess of Guiche.

† The five following Letters are to the marchioness d'Verneuil.

read your letter, as I have seen her do at other times, when she heard you mentioned. She answered without any ill-will that I was master, and could do as I pleased but that it seemed to her I ought to satisfy you in this: she was very merry all the remainder of the evening; and we talked of you at different times; and she told me that if the princess of Conti had seen her read your letter, she would have been greatly grieved at it; for that she torments herself so much about every thing, that she is not surprised she is so lean. Send your carriage, and what is necessary to bring them: on Wednesday they will be at Chaillot, as I did not wish they should stop in Paris, on account of the flux which is prevalent there. I shall send some of my gentlemen with them. The duke of Mantua is coming to see me *incog.* with forty post horses: he will be here by the 21st. When we return to Paris, I will send you word to return our *Marmots* to Saint Germain. Love me sincerely, my dear heart, I swear to you, you are as dear to me as ever. Good-night, a million kisses.

LETTER XXXVII.

My dear heart, I was engaged the whole of yesterday in receiving the duke of Mantua, who is certainly an excellent Prince, and one of the most courteous in the world. On Tuesday, I think of carrying him to St. Germain. Our disturbers are very busy, and sound me on all sides; these women are very wicked, but they possess no longer my wife's ear; she enquires after our son, and says she heard you were very ill. She has now for some time mentioned you without changing

colour, for she betrays no emotion, and we have long talked of these discords. I am very well, thank God, and love you much better than you do me, for it is not restrained, or qualified as your's is. Good day, my all, a million kisses—I beseech you talk to me no more about to-morrow,

LETTER XXXVIII.

My dear heart, it was not my devotions which prevented me from writing to you; for I do not think I do wrong in loving you more than any thing in this world; the cause was, that on quitting the chapel I found myself so much indisposed, that I was obliged to go to bed almost-half dead; and to complete my misfortune, on Easter-day,* I touched two hundred and fifty sick persons;—yesterday I took some medicine, which seems not to have done me much service; for I have not slept any these eight days, and my blood is so heated that I am in continual uneasiness. To morrow I will be bled. In the evening I will send you word how I am. I can tell you, you are my dear heart, which I kiss a million times.

LETTER XXXIX.

When you refuse to do what I request of you, all your fine professions will not satisfy me: I find them always contrary to effects: it is not at this time only, that I have conceived this opinion; but your conduct and actions confirm me more and more in it. With respect to the Jubilee,† as it is general you can just as well

* April 6th, 1608. † Sept. 6th, 1608.

celebrate it with your chaplain, as here. Good-night; I kiss your hands.

LETTER XL.

You say you no longer know what to do, to give me satisfaction; and yet you have not even tried to do it, nor answered the first complaint contained in my letter. You have succeeded so badly in lording it over me, that you ought to have become wise. You threaten me with going to Verneuil: do as you please; if you do not love me, I can very well dispense with seeing you; if you say you love me, it is a very bad proof of it to depart when I arrive. By this action I shall know what you are. I shall be at Paris on Thursday, as ill-satisfied with you as ever, unless you change your style. On this truth I kiss your hands.

LETTER XLI.

You are mistaken in your letter: for you say I am "your "dear heart," and that you are not mine: I have never robbed you of any thing, but you have deprived me of every thing you could. This is a reason against which there is no answer; do not torture your mind to discover one; for it is better to remain silent than to utter a bad excuse. For me, I love you dearer than I do myself. I swear this to you, my love, but do you think to feed me with stones after having given me bread? Consider my age, my rank, my mind, and my affection, and you will do that which you do not. Good-day, my all. A million kisses.

INDEX.

A GENERAL INDEX.

ABBEYS. Taken out of the hands of the Protestants: Sully disposes of his, v. 54,5, See *Benefices.*

Abbeville. Henry IV makes his entry there, ii, 13.

Abjuration of Henry IV, i, 375. And other particulars relating to this ceremony, ib.

Absie, abbey of, Sully parts with it, v, 55.

Absolution of Henry IV, difficulty of prevailing upon the pope to grant it, ii, 68. He grants it, at last, upon certain conditions, 68. Remarks upon this ceremony, ib.

Academy Royale. Proposed to be instituted by Henry IV, iv, 317,18.

Acharia, lady, to whom father Cotton was confessor, iv, 108.

Achmet, emperor of the Turks, succeeds Mahomet III. Troubles at Constantinople during his reign. Obtains permission of Henry IV to have a resident at Marseilles, iv, 384.

Admirals of France, Coligny, Epernon, la Valette, Biron, Villars, Danville. See these names.

Aersins, Francis, ambassador from the United Provinces to France, carries on his negociations with great success, iii. 13. Cardinal Richelieu's saying of him, 13. Henry IV suspected of having an intrigue with his wife, ib. Gives information of a supposed union of Spain and England to invade France, 86, iv, 22. Is deputed by Henry IV, to the duke of Bouillon, 90. Makes presents to the king and queen, and receives some from them, 138. Returns to Paris to finish his negociation, 166.

Africa. Designs of Charles V, of Philip II, and the house of Austria, upon that part of the world; and obstacles they meet with, iv. 67. Part of Henry's great design relating to Africa, See *Political Design.*

Ageaux, des, lieutenant du Roi of St Jean d'Angely, serves Henry IV, at the battle of Coutras, i. 160. Henry refuses to give his post to the duke of Rohan, iii. 402; and bestows it upon la Rochebeaucourt iv, 112. See *Rohan, Rochebeaucourt.*

Agelle, mademoselle d', beloved by Henry IV, i. 71.

Agen. Taken by the Roman Catholics during the peace, i. 71. Taken a second time, ii, 116.

Agoust. Henry's opinion of this house, iv, 210. See *Bonne*, *Crequy*, *Lisdiguieres*.

Aides. Abuses in this part of the revenue corrected by Sully, iii, 406. Regulations for this purpose, which make part of the cabinet of state, iv, 326. See *Cabinet of State*.

Aides, court of. See *Sovereign Court*.

Aignan, count de Saint, gratuity granted him by Henry IV, iii, 418.

Aiguebelle. Taken by Sully, ii, 372. An adventure there, by which Grillon became the friend of Sully, iii, 366. See *Sully*, *Grillon*.

Aigues-Mortes, pawned by the prince of Condé to prince Casimir, i, 83.

Aillant. Sully visits his estates there, i, 243.

Aine. The passage of that river, and the Advantage gained there by Henry IV, over the prince of Parma, i, 242. See *Henry IV*, *Parma*.

Aix, Lewis d', his party in Provence, i, 307. He attempts to deliver up Marseilles to the Spaniards, ii, 31. See *Marseilles*.

Alagon, See *Meyrargues*.

Albe-Royale, or Alba-Regalis, in Hungary, taken by the duke of Mercœur, ii, 462. Retaken by the Turks, ii, 535.

Albigny, Charles de Semaine d', surprises Geneva, and is driven from thence, ii, 533. See *Geneva*.

Albert, house of, alliance between that house and the family of Rohan, ii, 115, which, in failure of children in a direct line, are next heirs to the estates of Albert, iii, 400. Henry IV, unites those estates to the crown, iv, 178. Law suit between Henry IV, and the house of Nevers for those estates, 188. See *Rohan*, *Nevers*.

Albert, Henry d', king of Navarre. See *Navarre*.

———Jane d', queen of Navarre. See *Navarre*.

———Henry d', baron de Miossens. See *Miossens*.

Aldegonde, Philip Marnix de Saint, a Protestant officer. The prince of Orange informs him of the designed treachery at Antwerp, i, 101.

Aldobrandini, cardinal, nephew and legate of Clement VIII, comes to France to treat of a peace. Sully's reception of him, and his prudent advice to him, ii, 391. His conferences at Lyons with the commissioners appointed by Henry IV, 395. Breaks them off upon account of the demolition of Fort St Chatherine, 397. Resumes the treaty with Sully, and concludes it, 400. His friendship for Sully, 420. Presents from Henry IV, iv, 177. See *Sully*, *Peace*, *Savoy*.

Alençon. Hertray seizes it for the princes. They join their forces there, i, 54. Taken from the league by Henry's forces, 211. See *Hertray*, *Henry IV*.

Alençon, Francis de Valois, duke of, afterwards duke of Anjou. See *Anjou*.

Alexander, father, a Jesuit, endeavours to procure the re-establishment of his society in France, iii, 192.

Alexandrini, cardinal, called to the council, where they project the destruction of the Protestants, i, 32.

Algiers. Spain endeavours to get possession of it, iii, 157.

Alibour, first physician to Henry IV. i, 234. A humorous dialouge between Henry IV and him, concerning the fair Gabrielle, ii, 34. His death; some circumstances relating to it, 35. See *Henry. Estrees, Sancy.*

Alincourt, Charles de Neufville, marquis of, governor of Pontoise, attempts to surprise Mante, i, 252. Concludes a treaty with Henry IV, 427. Obtains the government of Lyons, ib. Henry refuses to give him the post of master-general of the ordnance, ii, 179. The sum of money granted him by his treaty, 264. Is sent to Rome on occasion of the designed marriage between Henry IV, and Mary of Medicis, 364. Gratuities and favours which he received from the queen-regent, v, 24, 30. A great dispute in the council respecting these favours, 27, et seq.

Allegre, Andrew d'. See Fervaques, countess of,

Allegre, Christopher, marquis d', takes Rouen for the league, i, 216. Assassinates Hallot, iv, 197.

Allymes, René de Lucinge des, the duke of Savoy's commissioner in the affairs of Saluces, ii, 347. Endeavours to corrupt Sully by presents, 348. See Savoy, Saluces, Sully.

Almoner, grand, that office given to cardinal Perron upon Sully's recommendation, iv, 104.

Alpin, Saint, de Bethune, his example proposed to Sully by Paul V, iii, 429. See Bethune.

Alva, duke of, has a conference with Catherine of Medicis at Baïonne, i, 22. See Baionne, Medicis

Ambassadors and Embassies from Elizabeth and the United Provinces to Henry IV. Political discourse of this prince upon this occasion, ii, 207. See Henry, Cecil, Nassau, Elizabeth, &c. Of the duke of Luxembourg to Rome. See Luxembourg. Of Sillery to Rome. See Sillery. From the grand seignior to Henry IV. See Mustapha. From the Venetians to Henry IV. See Venice. From the archduke to Henry. See archdukes. Embassy of Canaye to Venice; of Bethune to Rome; of marshal Biron to London, and to the Swiss Cantons. See these names. A solemn embassy of the Swiss cantons to France. See Swiss Cantons. Marquis of Rosny sent ambassador extraordinary to king James I. See Sully, James I. Ambassadors appointed by Henry IV, during the war of Cleves, iv, 422.

Amblise, Africanus d'Anglure d', defeated by the duke of Bouillon, 265.

Amboise, one of the five towns which continued faithful to Henry III, i, 182.

———, George de Clermont d', follows Henry IV into Franche Comté, ii, 65.

Alexander, Bussy d'. See Bussy.

America. Designs of Charles V, and Philip II, upon that part of the world, and the obstacles they meet with, iv, 67, 8. See Charles V, Philip II. Part of the great design relating to this part of the world. See Political design.

Amerval. See Liancourt.

Amiens. Henry IV, makes his entrance into that city, ii, 13. He stays there some time, 97. His answer to the deputies of that city, ibid. Taken by the Spaniards, 162. Disquiet it gives Henry, ibid. His preparations to retake this city, 168. Begins the siege, 174. Sully's endeavours to secure the success of it, ibid. The Spaniards unable to prevent its being taken, 182,4. Henry IV goes there to conclude the treaty of Vervins, 226.

Amours, d', commissioner for levying the tax of a penny in the shilling, ii, 466.

Ancel, William, maitre de hótel to the king, resident at Vienna, iii, 380. At Poland, v, 102.

Anchin, John de Bethune, abbot d', revered as a saint, i, 7. See Bethune.

Anchorage, rights of, established, notwithstanding the remonstrances of Sully, iii, 169.

Ancre, marquis d'. See Conchini.

Andelot, Charles de Chatillon-Coligny, marquis of, disputes Sully's prisoners with him, i, 226. A quarrel between them on that ocasion, 227. Henry IV, decides it for Sully, 232.

———, Francis de Chatillon-Coligny, marquis of. His three children all died, or were murdered, at one time, i, 244.

———, Guy de Laval d', saved at the massacre of St. Bartholomew, and fled to Geneva, i, 40.

André, Saint, a village where the battle of Ivry was fought, i, 221. See Ivry.

———, de Saint, an officer in the ordnance, iv, 349.

Andoin, Corisande de. See Guiche.

Andresy. Conferences upon religion held at this place, ii, 342. Names of those persons who assisted at the conference, and the subjects treated of, ib.

Anet, Sully visits the dutchess of Aumale there, i, 406.

Anfreville, d', taken prisoner by Sully at the battle of Ivry, i, 222.

Ange, Frere. See Joyeuse, Henry de.

Angel, de Saint, assists the king's party in Limosin, ii, 115. Contributes to the taking of Bourg, 366. Solicits for marshal Biron's pardon, ii, 494.

Angely, St. Jean d', Sully visits this place, iii, 262. The post of king's lieutenant refused to its governor, 403, and given to la Rochebeaucourt, iv, 112. Rohan obliges the regent to grant it to him, v, 122. See Rohan, Rochebeaucourt.

Angennes, Francis d'. See Mont-luet,
———, Jean d'. See Poigny.
———, Lewis d'. See Maintenon.
———, Nicholas d'. See Rambouillet.
Angers. Prince of Condé fails in his attempt upon this place, i, 125 et seq. Henry IV, stays some time there in his journey to Brittany: the business he transacts there, ii, 201. See Henry, Mercœur, &c.
Angillon, la Chapelle d', a house purchased by Sully, v, 53. The improvements he makes in it, 150.
Angoulême, Charles de Valois, count of, and duke of Auvergne. See d'Auvergne.
———, Charlotte de Montmorency, dutchess of, proxy for the archduke at the baptism of the princess Elizabeth of France, iv, 116. See France. Employed in the amours of Henry IV, iv, 145, 213, 218.
———, Henry de Bourbon, count of, grand prior and governor of Provence i, 306.
Anjou, cities in, taken by Henry IV, i, 63.
———, Charles of, receives great favours from the family of Bethune in his wars with Mainfroi, i, 7. See Bethune.
———, Francis de Valois, duke of Alençon, afterwards duke of, otherwise Monsieur. Plots with the king of Navarre to strangle the queen-mother, i, 16. They endeavour to procure a marriage between him and queen Elizabeth, 48. Joins the malecontents, 49. Arrested, 51. Recovers his liberty, 54. Great enmity between him and Henry III, 48, 53. Joins his forces with Henry IV, and the prince of Condé, 54. Catherine disunites them from the Protestants by the peace of Monsieur, 56,7. Design of this princess to make him king of Algiers; negociations to this effect, 89. His character, 92. See Sauves. Goes to Flanders; is received into Cambray, and takes the castle by assault: his treachery to the governor, 96,98. Goes to England, 99. Returns to Flanders, where he is crowned duke of Brabant, 99. Enters into a sort of engagement with Elizabeth, ib. His resentment to the city of Antwerp, 100,101. Disobliges Sully and the Protestants, 100. He loses his army and returns to France, 102. Retires in disgrace to Château-Thierry, 107. Sully visits him there, ib. His death, ib. His titles, ib. Designed to be married to the sister of Henry IV, ii, 295. Philip II, motives for engaging him in the enterprise of Antwerp, iv, 313. See the names mentioned in this article.
Anjou, Gaston John Baptist de France, duke of, third son of Henry IV, afterwards duke of Orleans; his birth, iv, 231. Henry proposes to marry him to the princess of Mantua, 307. His fondness for Sully, v, 19.
———, Henry de Valois, duke of, king of France. See Henry III.

Anspach, the duke of, Sully charged with holding a criminal correspondence with this prince, iii, 391.

Anti-Christ. The Protestants gave this name to the whole family of Medicis, i, 23. The Pope Antichrist. A tenet proposed to the synod of Gap, and opposed by Sully, iii, 172. Debates upon the same tenet in the synod of Rochelle, iv, 149.

Antfreville. The Catholics drove from that place, i, 211.

Antoine, de St. Henry IV, sends him to the king of England, iii, 143.

Antibes, Henry IV, proposes to make a purchase in the neighbourhood of this place, iv, 288.

Antonio, Simon d', deputy from Spain, opposes the treaty between Sully and Villars, i, 409. The conversation betwixt Sully and him at the governor's, 431. Villars obliges him to leave Rouen, 433.

Antony, Gate St. repaired, iv, 200.

Anton, Claude Batarnay d', first husband to the wife of Admiral Coligny, i, 19.

Antwerp. The duke of Anjou is crowned there duke of Brabant, i, 99. Insurrection upon account of the prince of Orange being wounded there, 100. Monsieur endeavours to seize it by surprise, and fails in his attempt, 101,102. Cause of the hatred the Dutch bore him, 100. See Anjou, Orange. The prince of Orange makes an unsuccessful attack upon this city, iv, 164. Motives of the council given by Philip II, against this city, 313.

Arambure d', present at the battle of Aumale, i, 271: at the attack of the great convoy before Laon, 459; attends Henry IV, in the campaign of Franche-Comté, ii, 65, 166; Treated with great familiarity by Henry IV, iv, 456.

Arau, an assembly of the Protestants of the Grisons held there, iii, 337.

Arcadius, Emperor of the East, v, 65.

Archant, L. d', present at the battle of Ivry, i, 224.

Archduke of Austria. Albert cardinal. Loses an opportunity of beating the French before Amiens, ii, 183, Bon-mot of Henry on this occasion, 184. Signs the Treaty of Vervins at Brussels for the king of Spain, 228. Goes to fetch the archdutchess of Gratz to Philip II, and conducts her through Marseilles, ii, 293. Marries the Infanta Isabella, and is made governor of the Low Countries, 294. He loses the battle of Nieuport, 404. Besieges Ostend, 419. Sends the count of Solre ambassador to Henry at Calais, 424. Indisposed at Brussels, 531. The disposition and true political views of the archduke in Flanders with regard to Spain and the house of Austria, iii, 125. He favours the conspiracy of the English lords against king James, 154. Bad success in the war against the Dutch, 160. He concludes the treaty for a suspension of arms between Spain and the United Provinces, iv, 170. Endeavours sincerely to bring

about a peace, 274. His reception of the prince of Condé after he left France, 360. Treaty of a truce for twelve years between him and the States-general, with the treaty of mediation of the kings of France and England, 370. He supports the interest of the prince d'Epinoi out of regard to Sully, 373. The letter which Henry IV, wrote to him upon his journey into Cleves, and his answer to this letter, 424. His motives for the little precaution he took against Henry's great design, 425. Sends an embassy into France upon the death of Henry IV, v, 12. Permits the troops of the confederate princes for the great design to pass through his dominions 115. See Cleves, Political Design, and the other names mentioned in this article.

Archdukes and Archdutchesses. Prince and princesses of that name. See Austria.

Archpriest established in England by the pope, the cause of great troubles, iii, 97. See Clement VIII, James I, and Jesuits.

Ardembourg. The archduke Albert fails in his attempt upon that place, iii, 318.

Ardres. Taken by the Spaniards, ii, 67.

Aremberg, John de Ligne, count of, ambassador from the archduke to king James, iii, 59. Cabals in London, 54. Audience refused him by the king of England till Sully had his, 60. Compliments and presents which Sully and he make each other, 67,8. King James complains of his conduct, 76. Errors he is guilty of in his negociation, 104. Goes to Windsor, 148. The king delays giving him his second audience, 154. Continues to Cabal at London, 154.

Argentan. The duke of Montpensier takes that city for the king, and defeats the Gautieres there, i, 254. See Montpensier, League.

Argentier, l', one of the farmers of the revenue, ii, 158.

Argenton. Henry IV dislodges the troops of the League from that place, i, 186.

Argouges, Florent d', treasurer of the queen's household, iii, 240. Brings a comptant to Sully, which that minister refuses to sign, v, 6.

Argoulets, whence so called, i, 127.

Ariat, N. d', succours the inhabitants of Villemur against the forces of the League, i, 309 et seq. See Joyeuse, Villemur.

Arleux. Monsieur attacks this passage. Sully takes some prisoners there, i, 96. See Anjou, Sully.

Armagnac, county of, Erected into a presidial, ii, 189. Law suit lost by Henry IV, to the sieur de Frontrailles for this county, ib.

Armagnac, first gentleman of the bedchamber to Henry IV ii, 2, iii, 11.

Armand, Father, a Jesuit, labours successfully for the re-establishment of that society in France, iii, 192.

Armenians, corruption of their religion, v, 85.

Arms, wearing of, prohibited, ii, 231.

Arnei-le-duc, encounter of, in which the Protestants have the advantage, i, 3. Henry's discourse upon this battle, ib.

Aroaud, the eldest of four brothers, clerk of the council of finances, ii, 118.

———the second brother, secretary to Sully; marshal Biron's coversation with him upon the scaffold, ii, 493, Informations given him by a canon of Canterbury upon the intrigues of Spain in London, iii, 43. Mary of Medicis makes him a member of her privy council, iv, 466. Sully's resentment against him, 470. Sully sends him to Conchini to make him some compliments in his name: what passed upon this occasion, 486. Favours bestowed upon him by the queen-regent, v, 24. She makes him intendant of the finances. Sully's advice to him, 38.

———the third brother, colonel, Advice given him by Sully, v, 38.

———the fourth brother, treasurer of France, and overseer of the highways, makes his court to Conchini, iv, 4, 88. Advice given him by Sully, v, 38.

Arnes, d', a Protestant gentleman, escapes the massacre of St Bartholomew, i, 34.

Arpentis. Lewis du Bois des, Governor of Tourain, i, 122; Services which Sully receives from him, 130.

Arques, battle of, i, 204.

Arquin See Montigny.

———, Anthony d', commandant of the Citadel of Metz, iii, 5

Arragon, Admiral of, assists for the king of Spain at the publication of the peace of Vervins at Paris, ii, 228. Commands the Spanish army in Flanders, 294. Unable to succour Grave, ii, 531.

Arras, Sully's ancestors have the title of protector of the church of, i, 6. Marshal Biron the cause that the attempt upon this place failed, ii, 86. Henry resolves to besiege it in form, 88. The taking of Amiens by the Spaniards obliges him to lay aside this design, 162.

Arrets. Edicts and resolutions upon the finances, war, politics, and commerce, &c. See each of these articles.

Arscot, duke of, assists at the publication of the peace of Vervins at Paris ii, 228.

Arsenal of Paris. The duke of Sully resides there, ii, 364. Receives the king and queen there, 404. Interlude presented there, ii, 463. Works carried on there by Sully, 304, and in the other arsenals of the kingdom, 416. He establishes a school for military exercises, iv, 48. Running at the ring, Henry's frequent visits there, 207, and following. See Henry IV, Sully. A large hall and amphitheatre built there by Sully for theatrical representations, 207. He entertains and lodges Henry there, who goes frequently to visit him, 316.

Arson, deputy to the duke of Bouillon in the affair of Sedan, iv, 89.

Artillery, regulations respecting it, ii, 344.

Artrois, counts of, the sovereignty of the earldom of St. Paul contested for by them and the counts of Boulogne, iii, 344. See Saint Paul.

Arts. A scheme for the improvement of them, iv, 517. See Cabinet of State.

Arundel, palace of, Sully lodged there during his embassy to London, iii 46.

Ascoly, prince of, commands the Spanish troops in Champagne, i, 249, Suffers Noyon to be taken, ib.

Asia, designs of Charles V, of Philip II, and of the house of Austria, upon this quarter of the globe, and the obstacles they meet with. Part of the great design of Henry IV relating to that part of the world. See Political designs.

Astrology and Atrologers. An adventure of the duke of Sully with an astrologer, ii, 92, 3, The science of astrology very much cultivated in the age of Henry IV, 309. This prince makes La-Riviere, calculate the Dauphin's nativity, 437. See Henry, Sully, La-Brosse, &c.

Atichy, member of the new council of finances, i, 173.

Avantigny, a Protestant officer, monsieur withdraws his confidence from him, i, 101. Present at the combat of Saveuse, 191. At the battle of Arques, 205.

Aubagnac, agent to the duke of Bouillon, iv, 31.

Aubepine, Charles de l', marquis of Chateau-neuf. Refused the office of master-general of the ordnance, ii, 178. Called to the council to deliberate upon the affair of recalling the Jesuits, iii, 228. Upon the re-establishment of the public revenue, 323. Upon the affairs of the United Provinces, iv, 165. Appointed by Henry one of the regents, 422. Admitted by Mary de Medicis into her ordinary council, 467.

Aubeterre, N. d', slanders raised upon account of Sully's friendship for him, iii, 390.

Aubigné, Theodore Agrippa d', ill affected to the party of Henry IV, i, 8, —ii, 175. The methods used by him to raise an insurrection among the Protestants, 204. Observes Sully's conduct in his journey into Poitou, iii, 260. Lays the foundation of a Protestant republic in France, iv, 12.

Aubigny, father, a Jesuit. See Jesuit, paracide, Henry.

Aubin, Saint, agent of the duke of Bouillon, ii, 511.

Augustus. The conformity between the reign of Henry IV, and his, iv, 213.

Augustins, Order of, instituted, iii, 173.

Avias, father, mentioned in a letter of father Cotton's, iv, 298.

Avignon. A dispute concerning the bridge of that city, between the pope and the king of France, terminated in favour of the king, iii, 340.

Avila, D John Alvarés admiral of Spain, killed in a naval fight with the Dutch, iv, 168,9.

Aumale, battle of, i, 274. Prince of Parma's speech upon the battle. 277.

Aumale, Charles de Lorrain, duke of, assists the league, i, 202. Narrowly escapes being taken prisoner by Sully, 211. Defeated before Noyon, 249, 250. His wife treats with Sully about his return to the king's party, 407. Serves the Spaniards in Flanders, iii, 69.

Aumale, Claude de Lorrain, duke d', a stem of the house of Guise, i, 14.

Aumale, Claude de Lorain, chevalier d', fights for the league at Ivry, i, 223. Is killed at the attack of St. Dennis, 301.

Aumale, Mary de Lorraine, dutchess of, treats with Sully about her husband's returning to the king, i, 407

Aumont, John d' marshal of France, i, 122. Takes an oath of fidelity to Henry IV, after the death of Henry III, 199. Surprises Meulan, 200. Attacks the suburbs of St. Germain, 211. The victory of Ivry partly owing to his own valour, 219. Greatly caressed by Henry, 226. Confers with the king about his conversion, 360. His exploits in Brittany, ii, 14. His death, ibid.

Auneau, defeat of the foreign troops at, accounted for, i, 170.

Aurilly, a gentleman attached to the duke of Anjou, i, 107.

Aussonville. See George, Saint.

Austria, house of, the author's sentiments of its origin i, 5. From whence it descended; distinction between the original and the second house of Austria: names of the several princes of this house: errors in all these respects rectified, ibid. See Habsbourgh. Estates brought into the house of Austria by that of Bethune, ii, 106. That house hated by the Protestants of the North, iii, 56. The complaints of king James against it, and the project concerted between him and Sully to humble it, 92. Countries subject to it 93. See Charles V, Philip II. The necessity and means of humbling it, 111. Sully the first contriver of this scheme, 208. Strengthened by its alliance, 329. Its designs of acquiring universal monarchy, iv, 66, 7. Its first advancement; origin, and great success, ib. Henry IV, and Sully think of means to put a stop to them, ibid. Alliance of the house of Bethune with the house of Austria, 379. Pre-eminence of the house of Bourbon over the house of Austria, 380. How it got possession of the earldom of Gueldres, 386. Death of the duke of Cleves, and the succession of his dominions; reasons for endeavouring to set it aside, 389. See Political Design, Cleves, Elizabeth. States and princes in Europe opposing the house of Austria on this occasion, 396. Conspiracy against the life of Henry IV in which it is concerned, 411. See Spain, Henry, Parracide, &c. Suffers Juliers to be taken and the succession of Cleves to be divided, 504. The view of the grand design of Henry IV in regard to it, v, 97. Just subjects of complaint for all Europe against it, 113. Conjectures on what measures it would have taken with respect to the grand design, and what would have been the consequence of it, 115. See Political design, Spain, Rodolph.

Austria, dutchy of. See Habsbourgh, Austria, Albert and Raoul of.

Austria, Albert of. See Habsbourg, and Austria, house of.
———, Albert, cardinal and archduke of. See archduke, Low Countries.
Austria, André, cardinal of, lieutenant-general in Flanders till the arrival of the archduke, ii, 294.
———, Anna Maria Mauricetta of. See Spain, children of.
———, Catherine of, by her marrying into the house of Bethune it became allied to the house of Austria, 175,
———, Don Carlos of. See Carlos, Spain, Philip II.
———, Charles IV of, See Emperor.
———, Charles of, marquis of Burgaw. See Burgaw, Cleves.
———, Claire Ugene of. See Spain, children of.
———Ernest, archduke of. See Ernest.
———, Ferdinand of. See Ferdinand, emperors.
———, Ferdinand, archduke of, beaten before Canise, ii, 462
———, Frederick III of. See emperors, Frederick.
———, D. John of. See John, Don
———, Isabella of, See Spain, children of.
———, Leopold, archduke of, See Leopold.
———, Margaret of, archdutchess of Gratz, marries Philip III, ii, 293. Passes by Marseilles, ib. See Philip II, Philip III.
———, Mary of, marries William, duke of Juliers, iv, 390. See Cleves.
———, Mathias, archduke of. See Mathias.
———, Maximilian I, and II, of. See Maximilian, emperors.
———, Rodolph, or Raoul of. See Habsbourg, Austria, house of.
———,Rodolph of, emperor. See Rodolph.
Autun, taken by marshal Bioren, ii, 44.
Auvergne. Account of Henry the fourth's journey to that province, iv. 32. See Henry IV. Bouillon, Rebels.
———, Charles of Valois, count of, present at the battle of Arques, i, 207, Joins with the seditious, ii, 207. Sully watches and disconcerts his designs, ibid. He traverses Henry's amour with his sister, 335. See Verneuil, marchioness of. His correspondence with Spain, 455. Signs an association with Bouillon and Bioren, 453. Incites the people to mutiny against Henry IV, 454. Waits for an opportunity of seizing Saint Flour, 455. The resolution of arresting him taken at Blois, 472. He is arrested, 487. Henry grants him his life, but imprisons him, 501. He is afterwards restored to liberty, ibid. Henry's motives for acting thus, 503. Auvergne again betrays the king, 505. His character, ibid. Continues his intrigues, iii, 171. Loses his suit against queen Margaret, for the succession to Catherine de Medicis, 252. Engages with Spain in a wicked plot against the state and person of Henry, 254. Demands his pardon of the king, and at the same time proceeds in his conspiracy with Spain, 269, 270. Measures used to arrest him, 272. His fears and irresolution, 275,6. His letters to and from Sully, 277.

How he was arrested, 278. Henry again pardons him: the real and supposed motives for this clemency, 350. He endeavours to escape from the Bastile, 352. See Entragues. Favours granted him in prison, iv, 368. Involved in the parricide committed by Ravaillac, v, 190.

B

Babou de la Bourdasiere. See Estrees, Sourdis.

Bacqueville, employed in the affair of Adrienne de Fresnes, iv, 109.

Baden the Catholics of the Grison league hold their assembly there, iii, 337. See Grisons.

Badefou. See Saint Genies.

Baden, duke of, and de Dourlach. Sully accused of holding criminal correspondences with these princes, iii, 391. The share they were to have in the great design, v, 93.

Badet, company of, used as the forlorn hope at the battle of Ivry, i, 213.

Baliol, kings of Scotland of that family, iii, 271.

Bailliwics. Offices to be erected in them in cases of necessity, iv, 325.

Baionne. The malecontents endeavour to seize upon this place, ii, 203.

Balls and feasts at Paris, during the winter of 1597, ii, 160.

Balagny, Lamion Montluc de, duke d'Eguillon and he rivals in amours. Is assasinated by the duke. Indignation expressed by Henry IV, and Sully on this assassination, iv, 242.

———, John de Montluc de, Monsieur gives him the government of the castle of Cambray, i, 99. Heads the forces of the league at the battle of Rouen, 237. Made sovereign prince of Cambray, 441. The Spaniards drive him from Cambray, ii, 67,71. Bon-mot of a Spaniard upon this occasion, ibid. The sum paid him for coming over to Henry, 264.

Balbany. Henry IV pays a sum of money which he owed him, iv, 123.

Baltazar, his attachment to Sully. Memorial which he delivered him upon the battle of Fontaine François, ii, 58.

Balzac. See Entragues, Verneuil.

Banchi, father Seraphin, discovers to Branceleon the design of assassinating the king, i, 385.

Bankruptcy and Bankrupts. Sully's severity to Jousseaume. See Jousseaume. An edict against fraudulent bankrupts, iv. 342.

Baptism of the children of France. An account of preparations for this ceremony, iv, 116. See the Dauphin and Children of France.

Bar, Henry de Lorraine, duke of, his marriage with the princess Catherine opposed by the pope and the clergy of France, ii, 295. See Princess Catherine, Ossat, Clergy. Henry proposes to marry him to the princess of Mantua, iii, 421.

—, dutchess of, her great expenses, iii, 190. Measures taken after the death of the princess, to secure her effects, ib.

Bar, suppression of its officers, ii, 417. Sully complains of the luxury of the gentlemen of the law, iii, 182. Regulation upon the droit annuel, iv, 323. Reasons for and against this regulation, *ibid.* Abuses to be corrected in it with respect to the judges, advocates, and attorneys, 331.

Barbary. Spain designs to invade it, iii, 157.

Barberini, the pope's nuncio in France, iii, 426. Employed by Henry in adjusting the differences between Paul V, and the Venetians, and rewarded for his good offices, iv, 103, 4. His praises of Sully, 178, 9.

Barbin, one of the counsellors of the queen-regent, v, 130.

Barenton, an engineer, sent by Sully to demolish the castle of Usson, iv, 48. See Margaret de Valois.

Barges. Sully carried in one of the king's from Gravesend to London, iii, 44. See Embassy, Sully.

Barlaymont, count of, grants a passport to Sully, i, 103.

————, countess of, refuses her consent to the marriage of mademoiselle de Melun with the marquis of Cœuvres, when desired by Henry IV, iii, 404.

Barnard, nuns of the order of, instituted, ii, 258. The marchioness of Bellisle enters into this order, ii, 326.

Barnevelt, John Olden de, principal deputy of the United Provinces to James I, the first conversation which he had with Sully at London; his confidence in Sully, and the measures which they take together, iii, 62, and following. Gives advice of the pretended union of Spain and England against France, 86. Disgusted with the English ministers, 110. His conference with Sully upon this subject, in which he entrusts him with the private resolutions of the States-General, 109. His conference with Sully and the English ministers, in which nothing is resolved upon, 110 et seq. (See Cecil.) A quarrel between him and the prince of Orange, occasioned by the truce, iv, 133.

Barault, Emerick Gobier de, attempts to enforce the observation of the treaties, iii, 200. Endeavours to find out the treachery of la Hôte, 210. An instance of his boldness and resolution, ibid. Rafis informs him of the treason of la Hôte, 211. Gives advice to Henry IV, 212. Instructions given him by Sully, iv, 162.

Barre, Madam de la, gives bad counsel to the princess Catherine against Sully, ii, 103, 115.

Barreaux, des, one of the members of the new counsel of finances, ii, 48. He supports the financiers, who had been guilty of unjust practices, 127.

Barriere, or Barre, Peter, his plot to assassinate Henry IV, how discovered and punished, i, 335.

Bartholomew, massacre of Saint, scheme of this massacre, i, 29. Account of it, 38. Observations upon it, 34. The manner in which it was executed; how Henry IV, the prince of Condé, and Sully preserved their

lives, 39, 40. Reflections upon this action, 29. Names of those who were massacred, and other particulars, 36, 8.

Bassignac or Vassignac, Gideon de, a Protestant gentleman, cabals against Henry at the siege of Amiens, ii, 175. Lieutenant and agent for the duke of Bouillon, iv, 31.

Baste, George, general of the imperial troops in Transilvania, defeats the Vaivodes, Battory and Michael, ii, 462. A noble action of this general, ii, 535.

Bastelica. See Ornano.

Bastile. Sully made governor of it, ii, 459. Henry IV lays up his treasures there; regulation upon this occasion, iii, 291.

Battles, historians seldom agree in the account they give of battles, i, 279.

Battori, Vaivode of Transilvania, defeated by George Baste, ii, 462. He continues the war against the Emperor, ii, 534.

Battarnai, Claude de. See Coligny.

Bavaria, Elector of, project to make him Emperor, iv, 69.

Baudelonis, Yvon, takes a Spanish ship, which Henry IV, causes to be restored, iii. 434.

Baudouin, earl of Flanders. See Flanders.

Baugy, agent to Henry IV, for the management of the grand design, v, 10.

———, Lands of, awarded to Sully: he visits them, ii, 417.

Baumeville. The advice he gave to Henry IV, concerning the duke of Bouillon, iv, 31, 196,

Bazeile, Saint, taken by the duke of Maienne, i, 135.

Bearn. The mass abolished there. See Navarre. The mass restored; afterwards the Jesuits, iv, 258. The quarrel with Spain relating to its boundaries, terminated to the satisfaction of Henry, 280.

Beaton, archbishop. See Glasgow.

Beaucaire. See Martigues.

Beaudisner, Galliot de Crussol, de, a Protestant gentleman, i, 27. Killed at the Massacre of Saint Bartholomew, 36.

Beaufort, dutches of. See Estress Gabrielle d'.

———————— an enemy to Sully at court, ii, 240.

Beaugrard, of great use to Sully at the taking of Louviers, i, 253.

Beaugency, one of the five cities which continued faithful to Henry III, i, 182. Granted to Henry IV, as a place of security and passage, 184.

Beaulieu, convent of, where is delivered the edict of sixty-three articles, i, 56. See Peace, Anjou.

Beaulieu, Henry IV, refuses him the post of lieutenant du roi of Saint-Jean d'Angely, iv, 112.

Beaulieu-rusé. See Rus.

Beaumont, Christopher de Harley, count of, ambassador from France at London, gives advice of the sickness of Elizabeth, iii, 17. King James

is prejudiced against him, 34. He is of great service to Sully in his embassy, 44. Sully lodges with him, 46. Denies his request in favour of Combaut, 48. He dissuades Sully from appearing in mourning at his audience of the king of England, 69. Admitted to dine at the table with king James, 105. His eulogium upon Sully's embassy, 134. He continues to give advice of the state of affairs in England after the return of Sully, 148. His praises of Sully, 150. Other important advices sent by him from London, 152. He exerts himself in the affair of the prohibition of commerce with Spain, 313; as likewise in the treaty between England and Spain, 326. He brings with him to France letters from king James to Henry IV, and Sully, and gives an account of his negociation, iii, 435. He praises the king of England, 437.

Beaune, inhabitants of, rise against the duke of Maienne, and drive him from thence, ii, 15.

———, Renard, or Bernard de, of Semblançai, archbishop of Brouges, receives the abjuration of Henry IV, i, 375.

Beaupre, Saint Germain de, one of the heads of the disaffected Protestants, i, 118. Made governor of Argenton for Henry IV, 186. His intrigues during the siege of Amiens, ii, 175. He endeavours to get suppressed, in the synod of Gap, the tenet of the Pope's being Anti-Christ, iii, 172. He opposes Henry's enterprise upon Sedan, iv, 72.

Beauvais, N. de, governor to Henry IV, persuades the queen of Navarre and the Protestant chiefs, to go to Paris, i, 21. He is killed at the massacre of St. Bartholomew, 36. A duel between his son and Usseau, 86.

Beauvais la Nocle, John de la Fin de, deputed by the Protestants to Charles IX, i, 18. He escapes the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, 34. He is partly the cause of the defeat at Auneau, 170.

Beauveau. See Tremblecourt.

Beauville, first president of the chamber of accompts, iv, 100.

Beauvois, the count of Garnache is made prisoner there by his mother, i, 146.

Bec, N. du, archbishop of Rheims, ii, 23.

Bedford, countess of, present made to her by Sully, iii, 143.

Beholens, or Bogole, a Protestant officer, attached to Henry IV, i, 59.

Bel, John le, a Jesuit, involved in the process of Chatel, ii, 43.

Belgic republic, establishment of this republic in the grand design, v, 97.

Belin, Francis Faudonas d'Averton de Serillac, count of, governor of Paris for the League, made prisoner by Henry IV, at Arques, i, 205. Employs himself usefully for Henry in the affair of his convention, 361. He is deputed by the Catholics to Henry, 372. Another deputation to demand a truce, 391. He is inclined to surrender Paris to Henry, upon which the duke of Maienne deprives him of the government of that city, 420. A decree of Parliament highly honourable to him, ib. He

is deprived of his places for surrendering Ardres, ii, 67.

——, Geoffroi de Saint, bishop of Poitiers, his letters in justification of Sully, in the affair of the college of Poitiers, iii, 360.

Bellanglise, an officer in the army of the Duke d'Aumale, i, 249.

Bellebranche, mentioned in a letter from father Cotton, iv, 296.

Bellefonds, defeated at the head of the garrison of Soissons, ii, 44. The government of Cayenne given him by Henry IV, iii, 171.

Bellegarde, Roger de Saint Larry, duke of, master of the horse of France, acknowledges Henry IV, for king after the death of Henry III, i, 199. Present at the battle of Arques, 208. Was one of the favourites of Henry III, ii, 18, 365. He is refused the honour of marrying Mary de Medicis, by proxy for the king, 364. His familiarity with Henry IV, ii, 476. Is made lieutenant for the Dauphin in Burgundy, 496. Is made superintendant of the mines, 527. Goes to his government of Burgundy, iii, 68. His friendship for Sully, 268. He is involved in the intrigues at court, 383. Called to the council upon the expedition to Sedan, iv, 81. Protects the Jesuits, 298. Conchini jealous of him, v, 3. His quarrels with the nobles and ministers, 11.

Bellemaniere. His company defeated by Henry IV, i, 154.

Bellengreville, Joachim de, made governor of Meulan, i, 202. Assists in defending Mante, 252.

Belles-Letters, establishment for the improvement of, by Henry IV, ii, 231.

Bellezuns. Fights for Henry IV, at Coutras, i, 160.

Bellievre, Pomponne de, labours to convert Henry, i, 360. Opposes the malecontents. Admitted into the council of finances, ii, 36. Provides for the security of Picardy, 192. Signs the peace of Vervins, and assists at its publication at Brussels, 226. Manages with Sillery, all domestic affairs, 257. Is made chancellor, and the seals delivered to him, 310. Made one of the commissioners for the king's marriage, 338. As likewise in the affair of the marquisate of Saluces, 350. Opposes Sully's reasons for a war in Savoy, 351. Takes La-Fin's depositions against martial Biron, 458. Advises Henry to arrest the heads of the disaffected party, ii, 470. Assists at the council when Sully received the instructions for his embassy to London, iii, 30. His sentiments upon the recall of the Jesuits, 194. Sully endeavours to persuade him to tolerate different religions, 223. He solicits a cardinal's hat for M. de Villars and de Marquemont, 225. His advice to Henry IV, concerning the marchioness de Verneuil, 285. Made one of the commissioners for the prohibition of commerce with Spain, 312. As likewise for the purchase of the earldom of Saint Paul, 343. Henry takes the seals from him; his infirmities, iv, 133. Particular circumstances relating to him: his eulogium, 139. Summoned to the council upon the affairs of Flanders: his death, 139.

Bellisle, Antoinette de Orleans de Longueville, marchioness of, takes the habit of a nun of the order of Saint Barnard: cause of her retreat: her eulogium, ii, 326.

———, Charles de Gondy, marquis of. See the above article.

Bellozanne, John Touchard, abbe de, one of the chiefs of the third party, i, 323. Sully treats with him, 338, 9.

Bellujon, proposed for deputy-general of the Protestants in the assembly of Châtelleraut, iv, 3, but rejected, 17. Employed by Henry IV, in the affair of Orange and Blaccons, 22.

Belly, chancellor of Savoy, commissioner in the affair of the marquisate of Saluces, ii, 347

Benefices. Henry IV proposes to reform the abúses in them iv, 321. See Clergy, Cabinet of State, Abbeys.

Benehart, James de Maillé de, governor of Vendome, i, 126.

Benon, forest of. Sully defeats in this place a squadron of the duke of Joyeuse's army, i, 151.

Berault, a Protestant minister: his intrigues at Chatelleraut rendered ineffectual by Sully, iv, 16.

Berg, earldom and earls of this name, dispute for its succession. See Cleves.

Bergen-op-zoom. Taken and lost again by du Terrail, iii, 433.

Bergerac. Treaty made with that city. See Peace of 1577. Service, performed by this city to Henry IV, iii, 176.

Beringhen, Peter de, Henry IV confides to him the projects of the league and of the third party discovered by the papers intercepted by Sully, i, 323. His scheme for taking la-Fere, ii, 84. He is of service to Sully upon his entering into the council of the finances, 122. Made comptroller of mines, ii, 527.

Bernet, du, king's advocate in the parliament of Bourdeaux, iv, 198.

Berniere, councellor of the parliament of Rouen for the king, ii, 97.

Bery, Matthieu Brulart de, his negotiations in Flanders, iv, 132. He supports the interest of the prince of Epinoy with the archduke, 375.

Berry. Regulations for the marshalseas of this province, iv, 186.

Bersot, one of Sully's enemies at court, iii, 387.

Bertauville, proposed for one of the deputies for the city of Pons, iv, 151.

Berthier, agent for the clergy, his obstinate endeavours to procure an amendment of the edict of Nantz, ii, 305.

Bertichere, la, assists the duke of Sully at the attack of Cahors, i, 78. Cabals for the Protestants during the siege of Amiens, ii, 176.

Berton. See Grillon.

Bessais, his intreagues with the Protestant party, ii, 175.

Besses, a disaffected Protestant, iii, 263.

Bethune. A city and first barony of the earldom of Artois. i, 6.

Bethune, house of, its origin: alliances with the house of Bourbon, Austria, and the principal houses of Europe; and the great men it has produced, i, 6. Errors upon this subject rectified, 5. Estates brought by this house into the house of Austria, ii, 106. Its alliances with the house of Bourbon and Luxembourg, 198. Praises bestowed upon it by Henry IV, 444. Descended from the counts of Flanders, iii, 429. Its alliances with the houses of Austria and Coucy, iv, 391.

———. Several persons of this name, ancestors to the duke of Sully, i, 5.

———, Alpin de. See Alpin, Saint.

———, Antoine de, his actions, i, 7.

———, Cæsar de, second son of the duke of Sully, v, 52. The share which Sully gives him of his estate: his death, 172.

———, Charles de. See Rosny, Francis de Béthune de.

———, Coësne, or Conon de, his great actions. Made regent of the empire of Constantinople, i, 7.

———, Francis de. See Rosny and Orval.

———, Florestan de, governor of Mont-flantquin, i, 136.

———, James de, bishop of Cambray, i, 7.

———, James de, archbishop of Glasgow. See Glasgow.

———, John de, abbot of Anchine, i, 7.

———, John de, head of the branch from whence the duke of Sully descended, i, 8, 9. Allied with the house of Austria by that of Coucy, iv, 379.

Bethune, John de, grandfather to the duke of Sully. His alliances, i, 9.

———, John de, brother of the duke of Sully. See Rosny.

———, Lewes de. See Mirepoix, marquis of.

———, Margaret de. See Rohan, dutches of.

———, Maximilian de. See Sully, duke of.

———, Maximilian II, de, marquis of Rosny. See Rosny.

———, Maximilian III, Francis of, prince of Henrichemont. See Henrichemont.

———, Philip de, the count of Béthune, brother to the duke of Sully, one of the favourites of Henry III, i, 138. Disgraced, ibid. Disconcerts the enterprise of the duke of Maienne upon Houdan, 252. Sent ambassador to Rome, ii, 443. Henry refuses to give him the post formerly enjoyed by the baron de Lux, iii, 402. He gives advice of the death of Clement VIII, 422. Praised for his conduct in Italy, and honours conferred upon him by the Pope, ib. Henry IV admits him into the council, iv, 148. He is again sent ambassador into Italy, 232. Is deputed by the queen-regent to Sully, 459. His advice to Sully after Henry's

death, v, 3. Endeavours to persuade him not to resign his employments, 30. Sully resigns to him the abbey of Jard, 54.

Bethune, Robert de, ancestors of Sully, who bore this name; and their actions, i, 7.

———, Solomon de, brother of the duke of Sully, one of the favourites of Henry III, i, 108. Disgraced, 109. He turns Roman Catholic, 103. Sully obliges him to open the gates of the castle of Rosny to him, 193. Is made governor of Mante, 249. Prevents this place from being taken by the duke of Mienne, 250. His death, iii, 180.

———, de, cousin of the duke of Sully, iv, 333.

Beul, Jacqueline de. See Moret, countess of.

Beuillaque, marquis of, envoy from the grand duke of Tuscany. Gratuities bestowed upon him by Henry IV, iv, 176.

Beyne, or Bays, defeats a body of troops belonging to the League, ii, 44.

Beza, Theadore de, accused of being concerned in the assassination of the duke of Guise, i, 14. Makes a speech to Henry IV, at the head of the deputation from Genoa, ii, 394. Their reception from Henry, ib. His death: his esteem of Sully; and the proofs which he gives him of it, iv, 38.

Bezieres, designs of the malecontents upon this city, iii, 453.

———, bishop of, one of the secret council of Mary Medicis, iv, 484.

Bizouse, or Bigose, deputed by Henry IV, into the districts, ii, 127. Lieutenant of the highways in Guyenne, iii, 234.

Bigot, agent for the duke of Guise in the treaty with the king, ii, 21.

Birague, René de, chancellor, advises the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i, 32.

Biron, Armand de Gontault, marshal of, deputed by Charles IX, to the Protestants, i, 19. Fortifies himself in the Arsenal during the massacre, 40. Concludes a truce with Henry IV, in Guyenne, 61. Commands the royal army, 81. Attacks Nerac, 84. Submits to Henry IV, after the death of Henry III, 199. His important service upon this occasion, 200. Good council given by him at Arques, 204. He brings forces to his assistance, 210. Takes Evreux, 213. Contributes to the victory of Ivry, 226. A bon-mot of his to Henry IV, ibid. He unseasonably attacks the fort Saint Catherine at the siege of Rouen, 259. Is accused of having endeavoured to ruin this enterprize, 260. An attack in which he fights valiantly, 269. Occasions the raising the siege of Rouen, 281. Henry's respect and consideration for him, 298. His malicious and obstinate disposition, 297. His speech to his son, ib. His bad advice to Henry, ib. Besieges Epernai, and is there killed, 312. His character and eulogium, ib.

———, Charles de Gontault, marshal of, Henry IV, saves his life, i, 211. He defeats a detachment of the duke of Aumale's army, 48. Attacks

the prince of Parma's intrenchments, and carries them, 287. Employed in the conversion of Henry IV, 360. Affronted by Grillon, 395. Interested in the treaty with admiral Villars, 411. Made marshal of France, 426. Defeats the grand convoy before Laon, 459. His arrogant and presumptuous boasts, 460. Henry dissatisfied with him, refuses him the government of Loan, 460. He makes Sully watch him carefully, 461. Biron assists the inhabitants of Burgundy to drive out the duke of Maienne, ii, 16. Takes Beaune, Nuys, Autin, Dijon, 44. Attacks the castle of Dijon and of Talan, 45. Motives of those who pursuaded Henry to go into Burgundy, ib. Drives the League from Dijon and Talan, 59. His actions at the battle of Fontain-Françoise, 61, et seq. Occasions the loss of Arras, 86. A speech of Henry's in his praise, 134. Made duke and peer of France, and assists at the ratification of the peace at Brussels, 228. His plots in Guienne, 331. One of the commissioners in the affair of the marquisite of Saluces, 347. Takes the city of Bourge without intending it, 365, et esq. Endeavours to destroy Sully in an ambuscade, 369. Gives bad advice to Henry, 388. Informs the duke of Savoy of all that passes in the council and in the army, 390. Has a design to have Sully killed before Saint Catherine, 393. Confesses to the king his plots in Spain and Savoy, 421. Asks pardon of his majesty: conditions of his treaty with Savoy, 446. Resumes his plots, 447. Henry endeavours to reclaim him by kindness, 448. Sully endeavours likewise, but to no purpose, 449. Sent ambassador to England; his imprudent discourse with queen Elizabeth, 452. Sent ambassador extraordinary to Switzerland, 453. His character, ib. Binds himself in a criminal association with Bouillon and Entragues: renews his intrigues with Spain and Savoy; raises an insurrection: his designs upon the principal cities in France; relies upon La-Fin, who betrays him, 454 et seq. Sully mentioned in this cabal, 458. Endeavours made use of to arrest Biron, ii, 466. He comes to Fontainebleau, 478. Resists all the counsels of Sully, 485. Arrested, 487. He is tried and beheaded, 492 et seq. Particulars of his execution, his character, and his family, ib. In what manner he spoke of Sully, 493. Solicitations of his relations, 49. The excesses which he allowed his retinue to commit when in London, the occasion of the hatred that nation discovers towards the French; and the bad treatment Sully's retinue received, iii, 46.

Bistrith, a noble action of George Baste's at the taking of this place, ii, 535.

Blaccons, governor of Orange for the Protestants and the prince of Orange, iv, 21. Is sacrificed by the intrigues at court to Lesdiguieres, notwithstanding the representations of Sully, iv, 23, 25. See Orange, Chatelleraut.

Blanc, Francis le, the duke of Bouillon's agent at London, iii, 67.
Blancard, John de Gontault de Saint, Biron's advice to him upon the scaffold, ii, 493.
Blanchard, John de, steward to the duke of Bouillon, discovers to Henry his secret practices, iv, 35.
Blanchefort. A saying of Henry IV upon this house, iv, 210.
Blanchmenil, Nicholas Potier de, president of the parliament of Paris, draws up the process against marshal Biron, ii, 490.
Blavet, or Port Louis. The Spaniards driven from this place, ii, 197.
Blaye, besieged by the marshal de Matignon, who fails in his attempt, ii, 116. Marshal Biron endeavours to sieze this place, ii, 455.
Blerancourt, a gentleman in the train of the duke of Sully at London, iii, 47.
Blois, the states of this city send a deputation to Henry IV, i, 58. Duke of Guise murdered there, 178. The views and designs of the states, 180. See Henry III, Guise, League. Sully negociates there a union between the two kings, 183 et seq. See Mornai. Motives for Henry's journey thither, ii, 331. A second journey of his to this place, and the reasons for it, ii, 466. Resolutions taken there to arrest the leaders of the malecontents, 74. See Bouillon, Epernon, Auvergne, &c. Henry IV takes a violent resolution at this place against the queen and her Italian domestics, but is dissuaded from it by Sully, 478. Henry passes through it in his way to Auvergne, iv, 33.
Blood, princes of, their plots with the states of Paris, i, 354. See Leagues, States of Paris. They make a strange proposal to Henry IV, in prejudice of the royal authority, ii, 74. See Montpensier. Sully takes from them the farms of the king's revenues: the cause of their hatred to him, 272. They are disgusted at the king's giving the dutchess of Mantua precedence of them, iv, 115. Their divisions and quarrels after the death of Henry IV, 470. They pay no regard to Sully's advice, 504. Quarrels among them, and with their ministers, v, 12. Grants which they extort from the queen-regent, 22. They all conspire to ruin Sully, 27. They rebel, 30. See upon this article Bourbon, Condé, Conty, Soissons, Montpensier. See also the French Lords, Seditions, &c.
Boderie, la, one of the French agents in the United Provinces, iv, 167.
Bodillon, assassinates Chilperic; the reasons, iv, 270.
Boesse, one of the king's officers: his courage in the taking of Bourg, ii, 366. He declares himself in the council for Sully's advice for the expedition of Sedan, iv, 81.
———, steward of the household to the princess, ii, 108.
Bohemia. The view of the grand design of Henry IV, in regard to this kingdom, v, 88. Accedes to the union, 98. Forces and money to be contributed by this crown, 107. See Design Political.

Boisbreuil, one of Sully's gentlemen, i, 126.

Bois-Dauphin, Urbain de Laval de, one of the four marshals of France made by the League, i, 347. The sum which he received from Henry IV, by his treaty, ii, 264. Sent ambassador to Vienna, ii, 465.

Bois-du-lis, a Protestant officer, i, 158.

Boisleduc. See Bolduc.

Bois-rosé, N. de Goutinal de, the surprising manner in which he made himself master of Fescamp, i, 389. He delivers the fort to the king, 391. His share in the treaty with admiral Villars, 412. His comical adventure with Sully at Louviers 434.

Boissec, a Protestant gentleman, escapes the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i, 35.

Boissiere, Christopher de Lanoy de la, brings succours to the duke of Maienne, but does not arrive till after the battle of Ivry, i, 225. Has some share in the defeat of the duke of Aumale, 148.

Boisse, the French agent with the hereditary princes of Cleves, iv, 391. Acts usefully in this affair, 402. See Cleves. Is sent ambassador to Denmark and Sweden, v, 102.

Bolduc, the prince of Orange besieges this place against the advice of Sully, and raises the siege, ii, 420, iii, 12.

Bonacolsi, lord of Mantua, killed by the Gonzagues, iv, 115.

Bongars, James de, the French agent in Germany, ii, 283. Informations given by him, iv, 136. Henry IV discontinues to employ him, ib. Memorial sent by him to Sully upon the succession and the affairs of Cleves, 391. A bon-mot of him, 398. See Cleves. Is sent ambassador to Germany, v, 102.

Boniface, captain, receives the duke of Sully into fort St. Catherine to treat with admiral Villars, i, 393.

Bonne, a saying of Henry IV upon this house, iv, 210. See Lesdiguieres, Crequy.

Bonnefort, engineer to the king, iv, 146.

Bonnet, N. de Saint, receives Sully into his house when he went to treat with admiral Villars, i, 393.

Bonneval, battle of. See Saveuse.

Bonneval, a courtier, in great familiarity with Henry IV, iv, 167.

Bontemps, makes a deposition relating to the effects of the dutchess of Bar, iii, 131.

Bontin, Sully visits his estates in this place, i, 387.

———, Anne François, François de Courtenay. See Courtenai.

Boquemare, president of the parliament of Rouen, well disposed to the king's party, i, 432.

Borde, la, employed by Henry IV to discover the intrigue between the

count of Sommerive and madam de Moret, and ill used by Sommerive, iv, 238.

Bordes, des, proposed at Châtelleraut for the deputy general of the protestant party, and rejected, iv, 17. Employed against the Jesuits by Sully in the affair of Metz, 104.

Borghese, cardinal. See Paul V.

Borgia, D. Inigo de, commands the Spanish troops in Flanders, iii, 160.

Borics, des, unable to prevent the taking of La-Mothe-Saint-Eloy, i, 132.

Born, John Durefort de, commands the artillery at the siege of Rouen, i, 263. At the siege of Laon, 443. Lieutenant-general of the ordnance, ii, 342.

Bostkay, obliges the emperor to grant him the lordship of Translivania, iv, 175. See Rodolphus.

Bothéon, William de Gadagne de, assists at the ratification of the peace of Vervins for the duke of Savoy, ii, 228.

Bouc, tower of, a fort purchased by Henry IV from the duke of Mercœur, iv, 419.

Boucalt, president of the court of aides in Montpellier, iii, 255.

Bouchage, count of. See Joyeuse, Henry de.

Bouchavannes, de Bayancourt de, a protestant lord, i, 27. Charles IX pardons him, 37.

Bouhier, president of the Bastille, v, 110.

Bouillon, principality of, given to the duke of Bouillon by his wife, ii, 3. See Bouillon, duke of. Bouillon, dutchess of. Sedan. Bouillon, upon this account, claims a right to precede the dukes and peers of France, but is not regarded, iv, 115.

———, Charlotte de La-Mark, dutchess of, marries the viscount of Turenne; political reasons for this match, i, 255. Her death; the duke of Bouillon informs Henry of it, ii, 3. Henry's opinion of her will, 11.

———, William-Robert de La-Mark, duke of. See Mark, La.

———, Henry de La-Tour d'Auvergne, viscount of Turenne, duke of, enters into the party of the king of Navarre, i, 59. His hatred of Sully, ib. Is challenged to fight by the prince of Condé, 74, 75. He fights with Duras, ib. Reflections upon this duel, ib. He disconcerts the designs of the prince of Condé, 132. Is taken prisoner before Cambray, 95. Forms a project for establishing a protestant republic in France, 118. His character, ib. Commands a body of troops in Guyenne, 133. His troops behave ill in the battle of Coutras, 161. His designs after this battle, 166. He fails in his attempt upon Sarlat, 167. Takes Castillon, 171. Designs to dismember the monarchy, 182. Raises the German horse, 255. Marries mademoiselle de Bouillon, ib. Political reasons for this marriage, ib. See Mark, la. Henry IV uses the foreign forces brought by him at the siege of Rouen, 259. Raises a mutiny

amongst the German forces, 295. Prevents the pursuit of the duke of Parma, after he had passed the Seine, ib. Takes Dun and Stenia, and defeats the sieur de la Guerche, 301. His ingratitude to Henry IV, ii, 2. Informs the king of the death of his wife, 3. Motives which induced Henry to send Sully to him, 4. He endeavours to entrap Sully in a conversation they have together, 6. His intrigues and political projects, 7. His character and maxims, ib. Refuses to let Sully peruse the dutchess's will, 11. Opinion upon the donations in it, ib. His designs in advising a war against Spain, 39. Commands the forces in Picardy, 44. His jealousy of the duke of Nevers, the occasion of the misfortunes of this campaign, 53. His justification, ib. Defeated before Dourlens, 54, et seq. Different opinions upon his conduct, 56. Justifies himself badly to the king, 77. Sent ambassadar to London, ib. The object of his intrigues during the siege of Amiens, 175, 6. Endeavours to raise an insurrection among the protestants in Brittany, 205. Reproached by Henry IV, 212. The subtile article which he gets inserted into the edict of Nantes, and the purpose of it, 303, 4. His hatred to Sully upon account of suppressing this article, 307. He cabals with the lords of the kingdom, 398. And with Spain, 416. His association with marshal Biron and the count of Auvergne, 421. Design of arresting him: he artfully eludes Henry's proposal for continuing at court, 472. His letters to the king and Sully upon this subject, 503, et seq. He employs the elector palatine to solicit Henry for him, but to no purpose, iii, 24. Sully is charged to make the king of England acquainted with his practices, 34. Whom he wants to gain over to his interest, 66. Continuation of his intrigues at the court of the palatinate, at London, and in the protestant assemblies in France, 226. And with Lesdiguieres, 258. He fixes himself at the court of the elector palatine, 265. His deputies excluded from the assembly of Châtelleraut, 464, 5. Sully renders ineffectual his endeavours to establish a protestant republic in France, iv, 12. Henry IV disconcerts them, by seizing his cities. 29. And designs likewise to take Sedan, 69. Artifices of the courtiers to ward off the blow, 72. Letters betwixt Sully and him upon this subject, 77. All the courtiers interest themselves for him, 81. Sully makes public his behaviour to the king, 83. His hatred to this minister, 85. Other artifices to prevent Henry from approaching Sedan, 86. He at last submits, and treats with Villeroi, 90. Articles of the surrender of Sedan, 92. The gracious reception he meets with from Henry, upon his paying homage, 96. He attends this prince to Paris, 99. Insists upon precedency with the dukes and peers, 115. Henry restores Sedan to him, and withdraws his garrison, 204. He renews his intrigues, 248. Henry IV opposes his taking the title of sovereign lord of Sedan, 376. He returns to France after the death of Henry the Great, and is admitted into the council of Mary of Medicis,

467. He disengages the prince of Condé from Sully, whom he seeks to ruin, 499. Opposes Sully's advice with regard to the armament of Cleves, 505. Mutual services between him and Conchini, v, 3, 4. A quarrel between him and Sully in full council, 9. Gratituities which he procures from the queen-regent, 23. The hatred he discovers against Sully in the assembly of Châtelleraut, 119.

Bouillon, Robert de La-Mark, duke of. See Mark, la.

————, dutchess of, is in Sedan when Henry IV went to besiege it, iv, 191.

————, mademoiselle de, proposed for a wife for the marquis of Rosny. iv, 209. Henry IV prevents Sully from accepting of it, 210.

Boulaye, Charles Echalard de la, governor of Fontenai for the king's party, i, 145. Attends Henry IV into Franche-Comté, ii, 65. His son marries mademoiselle de Marais, daughter in law to Sully: presents given, and favours refused him, by Henry IV, iii, 402.

Boulogne, a conference in this city between the Spaniards and the English, which produces nothing, ii, 234.

Boulogne, counts of, lords paramount of the earldom of St. Paul, with the counts d'Artois, iii, 344.

Bourbon, house of, its great appanages, i, 8. Estates carried into this house by the house of Bethune, ii, 106. The alliance of the house of Rohan with it, 115. The necessity and means of uniting it with the house of Stuart, to humble the house of Austria. See Political design, Re-union of all these estates in the house of France, iv, 178. Henry IV forbids Sully to marry his son into the house of Bourbon, 210. See Rosny.

Bourbon-Condé. See Condé.

Bourbon-Conti. See Conti.

Bourbon-France. See France.

Bourbon-Montpensier. See Montpensier.

Bourbon-Rubenpré. See Rubenpré.

Bourbon-Soisson. See Soisson.

Bourbon, Alexander de, second son of Henry IV, and the dutchess of Beaufort, legitimated, ii, 236. Is baptised as a son of France, and called Monsieur, 237. Is received into the order of knights of Malta, iii, 345. See Estrees, Henry IV, Sully.

————, Antony de, king of Navarre. See Navarre.

————, Catherine-Henrietta de, daughter of Henry IV, and the dutchess of Beaufort, legitimated, ii, 272. See Estress. Henry designs to marry her to the marquis of Rosny, iv, 209. But afterwards marries her to the son of the Constable, 218. Presents which he makes her, 363.

————, Charles, first cardinal de, opposes the marriage of the prince of Navarre with Margaret de Valois, i, 31. See Henry IV. Margaret

The conference with Catherine of Medicis after the day of the barricadoes, 173. Is put in prison at the death of the Guises, 178; he reproaches Catherine of Medicis, 181. See Guise, Medicis, Henry III, Made king by the league, 251: his death and character, ib. See League.

————, Charles, second cardinal de, designed by the third party to be made king, i, 324. He treats with Sully in favour of Henry IV, 305. His marriage with the infanta of Spain proposed by the states of Paris and rejected, 353. Endeavours the conversation of Henry IV. Services rendered by him to Henry IV, 375. See Abjuration. Sully is deputed to him in Paris: their conversation, 445. He supports the Jesuits in their process with the University and Curates of Paris, 448. Letters betwixt him and Sully 454. His death; regretted by Henry, ii, 16. His abbeys: his character, ib. Henry IV, disposes of his benefices, 17.

————, Charles de, natural son of Antony, king of Navarre, archbishop of Rouen, refuses to marry Catherine, ii, 298. Humourous conversation between him and Roquelaure upon this subject, 300. See, Bar, Madame, Roquelaure.

Bourbon, Henry de, duke of Verneuil. See Verneuil.

————, madame Catherine de. See Madame.

————, mademoiselle de, daughter of Henry I, prince of Condé: her death, ii, 312.

Bourdeaux. Letters from this city upon person of Henry IV, i, 11. It shuts its gates upon this prince, 22.

Bourg-en-Bresse, taken by marshal Biron in spite of himself, ii, 367. Strength of its castle, 397. See Bresse.

Bourg a manufacturer, sent for to Paris by Henry IV, iii, 177.

————, Antoine-du Maine-du, defends Laon against Henry IV, i, 443. Refuses to deliver up the Bastile, ib. Laon surrendered, ii, 13.

———— du, the advice which he gives against Lesdiguieres, iii, 253.

Bourges, taken by the Protestants, i, 23. Delivered up by La Châtre to Henry IV, 392. Sum paid for its reduction, ii, 264.

Bourrouge, Michael. See Hallot, du.

Boursault, de, a Protestant gentleman, advised by John d'Albert to go to Paris, i, 21.

Bouvens, governor of Bourg-en-Bresse, unable to prevent its being surprised, although warned, ii, 367.

Brabant, monsieur is declared duke of it, *i*, 99.

Braconnier, deputed by the city of Metz to the duke of Sully against the Jesuits, iv, 104.

Brancaleon, discovers the design of Barriere to assassinate Henry IV, *i*, 385.

Brancas. See Villars, Oise.

Brandenbourg, Albert Frederic, elector of, his right to the succession of Cleves, iv, 387. Divides this succession with the palatine of Neuburgh, 506. See Cleves.

————, John George de, a contest and process between him and the cardinal of Lorraine for the bishopric of Strasbourg, terminated by Henry IV, iii, 6.

————, marquis of, Henry's reception of him at Paris, ii, 463. He goes to see Henry at Metz, iii, 7.

Brandis, governor of Montmelian, delivers up the castle to Henry IV, by capitulation, ii, 390, et seq. in which his wife has some share, ib.

Brassac. See Rochebeaucourt.

Brasseuses, a protestant officer, i, 142. Present at the battle of Arques, 205. And likewise at Ivry, 224.

Breauté, Charles de, fights in a combat of twenty French against a like number of Flemish, ii, 405.

Brederode, deputy from the Flemings to Henry IV, v, 102. See Flanders, Political design.

Bremont, mentioned in a letter from father Cotton, iv, 927.

Bresse, how taken by Henry IV, ii, 365, et seq. Ceded wholly to the king by the duke of Savoy, 401. See Treaty of Lyons. Re-united to Burgundy, 403. Opposed by the parliament of Dijon, iv, 182.

Brest, besieged by the duke of Mercœur, ii, 14.

Bretauville, an officer of the king's household; much regretted by Henry IV, iv, 199.

Brotoline, an Italian lady: a present made her by Henry IV, iv, 122.

Breton, a fort, furnished with provisions and ammunition by the prince of Orange, iii, 433.

Brétons, chevalier de, agent and commissioner for the duke of Savoy, in the affair of the marquisate of Saluces, ii, 329, 347, 351.

Breton, Hector le, receives a gratuity from the king, iii, 418.

Breüil, du, a protestant gentleman, escapes the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, i, 34.

Brezolles, N. de, a protestant, disaffected to Henry IV, i, 231.

Briare, canal of, begun by Sully, iii, 309.

Bri-Comte-Robert. Henry IV in danger of life there, i, 386.

Brienne. See Lomenie.

Brigantin, one of the faction, implores a pardon of Henry IV, iv, 32.

Brigneux, governor of Bougency, delivers up this place to Henry IV, i, 134.

Brillan, a domestic of the prince of Condé, torn in pieces by four horse, i 171.

Briquemaut, deputed by the protestants to Charles IX, i, 18.

Brissac Charles de Cossé, count of, governor of Angers, i, 123. His design of changing the form of government in France, 420. The duke of Mercœur makes him governor of Paris, ib. Betrays his party, 422. Made marshal of France, ii, 203. The sum which he received for his treaty, 264. Called to the council upon the expedition of Sedan, iv, 81, 347. Named by Henry IV one of the regents, 422. Mary of Medicis admits him into her council, 467.

Brisson, Barnaby, president of the parliament of Paris, is hanged by the council of sixteen, i, 268. His eulogium, ib.

Brittany. Cities taken, and military encounters in this province, ii, 14 Other military exploits on both sides, 116, 17. The duke of Mercœur's claims upon this province, 192. Henry IV resolves to go thither in person, ibid. Object and consequence of this journey, 195. Sully causes plans to be taken of all its fortresses and coast, iv, 195.

Brix, saint, Catherine of Medicis has a conference there with Henry IV, i, 149. Other conferences at this place, ib. Henry is in danger there, ib.

Broc, du, lieutenant de prevôt, allows l'Hôte to escape, iii, 218.

Brossard, father, a Jesuit, his reception from Henry IV at Metz, iii, 7.

Brosse, la, his prediction with regard to Henry IV and Sully, i, 116, 117.

Brosse-Saveuse; See Saveuse.

Brossier, Martha, a pretended demoniac. Designs of those who bring her in play: Henry's prudence in this affair, ii, 309. Particularities concerning her, 310.

Brouage, taken by the protestants, i, 4. Retaken by the duke of Màienne, 69, 70. The prince of Condé fails in his attempt upon it, 125. Sully visits this place in his journey into Poitou, iii, 167.

Brulart. See Sillery and Berny.

Brunswick, Lunenbourg, duke of, a treaty, begun by him between Spain and England, iii, 64. Ambassador in London, 147. Henry's reception of his deputy, iv, 376.

Buda, the Imperialists raise the siege of, ii, 535. See Nevers, duke of.

Budos, Louisa de, wife of the constable de Montmorency, her death ii, 313.

Bufalo, cardinal, the pope's nuncio, he concludes with Sully a treaty of commerce between France and Spain, iii, 316. Is rewarded by Henry IV, 317. Sully informs him of Henry's political design, 332. His esteem and praises of Sully, iii, 426.

Buhy, Peter de Mornay de, his plot to carry the princes to Saint-Germain-en-Laye, i, 48. He prejudices Henry IV against Sully, 316.

Buildings, the post of superintendant of, and of fortifications, given to Sully. See fortifications.

Buisse, la, iv, 333.

Bullion, de, employed in the affair of Orange and Blaccons, iv, 22. Sent by Sully into Dauphiny, 111; and to Rochelle, 112. Sent ambassador to Venice and Savoy, 422. Agent for the queen-regent in the assembly of Châtelleraut, v, 122.

Bully, the duke of Nevers badly seconds Henry IV there, i, 272 et seq.

Buquoy, count of, refuses the alliance of the marquis of Cœuvres for mademoiselle de Meuln, iii, 405. Commands the Spanish forces in Flanders, 432.

Bure, Henry IV defeats at that place a squadron of the duke of Guise i, 271,

Burgaw, church of Austria, marquis of, his right to the succession of Cleves, iv, 388.

Burgundy, kingdom of, the nothern provinces desirous of restoring it, iii, 56.

———, the duke of Maienne demands the sovereignty of it from Spain, i, 320, which is agreed to, ii, 15. This province rises against the duke of Maienne, 16. The successes which the forces of Lorrain, of Henry IV, and of marshal Biron have there, 44. Henry makes himself master of almost all Burgundy, ib. Disobedience of its parliament, in the affair of Bresse, iv, 182.

———, Charles de, his daughter carries the earldom of Gueldres into the house of Austria, iv, 386.

———, Mary de, brings the Low Countries to Maximilian: objections to the legality of his possession, ib. See Cleves.

Bussy d'Amboise, Lewis de Clermont de, in disgrace with monsieur: his death, i, 60.

———————, René de Clermont de, wife of Balagny, dies of grief for the loss of Cambray, ii, 71.

Butrick, envoy from the elector of Palatine to the assembly of Protestants in France, i, 118.

Buzenval, Paul Choart de, French ambassador in Holland, ii, 229. Communicates to Henry IV the designs of the prince of Orange, 418, iii, 12. The United Provinces' great regard for him, 319. Writes the king particulars concerning the United Provinces, iv, 133. Gives an account of his negociations to Henry IV, 134. Continues to be of great use in the affairs of Flanders, 165. His death and eulogium, 319.

C

Cabinets of state, Henry IV, and Sully employ themselves in composing it; idea and object of this great and useful work, iv, 318.

Cabrieres, governor of Cahors, i, 80.

Cadsand, island of, taken by the prince of Orange, ii, 317.

Caen, Henry IV visits this place, and takes the government of it from Crevecœur, and confers it upon Bellefond, iii, 171.

Cahors, taken by Henry IV, i, 76 et seq.

Caillaudiere, la, sent to disband the cavalry, iv, 36.

Cajoux, Charles de. See Casaux.

Calais, acquired to France by the duke of Guise, i, 14. Besieged by the Spaniards, ii, 66. And taken, notwithstanding all the cares of Henry IV, 72. Particulars of this siege, ib. Henry's journey thither, and his motives for it, 420. Another journey iii, 56. Risbank repaired, iv, 342.

Calatagirone, Bonaventure de, patriarch of Constantinople, exerts himself successfully for the peace of Vervins, ii, 193. Attempts to hinder Sully from being a commissioner in the affair of Saluces, but fails, 350.

Calderon. The offer which he made to Henry IV from Spain, i, 106.

Calignon, de, employed in the composition of the edict of Nantes, ii, 176. Henry IV opposes an article in that edict, which is obliged to be altered, 302 et seq. Admitted into the council held for the return of the Jesuits, iii, 192. As likewise into that for the proving of rents, 301.

Calumniators of the duke of Sully. See courtiers, lords, Jesuits.

Calumniators, anonymous. See Cœuvres, Vendome.

Calveyrac, John de Sudrie de, informs Henry IV of the plots of the malecontents, ii, 455.

Cambray. The prince of Parma raises the siege of that place, i, 94. Taken by the Spaniards, who drive out Balagny, ii, 67, 71. Sum paid by Henry IV for its reduction, 264.

Camord, a friend of the duke of Sully, ii, 50.

Campagnac, Madam de, Sully resides at her house during the infection at Rosny, i, 146.

Campo, Alonso del, defeated by the forces of queen Elizabeth in Ireland, ii, 460.

Canada. A colony established there in opposition to the advice of Sully, iii, 285.

Canard, Saint, iv, 292.

Canals for the joining of rivers, very useful, iii, 399. Of Briare. See Briare, Seine, Loire, Saone. Sully disposes of the post of hereditary master of the canals and navigation of rivers, v, 54.

Canaye, Philip de-Fresne, ambassador at Venice, ii, 443. See Grisons. Gives intelligence of the difference of the Venetians and Paul V, iv, 100. Instructions which he gives Sully in this affair, ib. Ambassador to Germany, v, 102.

Canise, taken by the knights of Malta, ii, 462.

Canisy, de, gratuities granted him by Henry IV, iii, 418. Regretted by Henry, iv, 199.

Cantons, Swiss. See Switzerland, Grisons.

Canterbury. Sully's reception in this city by the nobility, iii, 42. The advice of a canon to him, 43. Henry IV's opinion of this advice, 36.

Capelle, la, besieged and taken by the Spaniards, i, 442. Retaken ii, 54, 67.

Capet, king, Sully's opinion of this race, v, 54. See France, kings of.

Capuchins, deputed by the Parisians to Henry III at Chartres, i, 177. Accused of endeavouring to assasinate Henry IV, 385. They embroil the Protestants with the Catholics and Grisons, iii, 336.

———— order of, instituted, iii, 243.

Carcassonne, bishop of, money due to him by Henry IV, iv, 199.

Carces, Gaspard de Pontevez, count of, his party in Provence, i, 307. Gives advice of the designs of the duke of Savoy, ii, 345.

Cardinals, promotion of French cardinals, ii, 234. Sent to the conclave after the death of Clement VIII, 422. They act well for France, iii, 424. Promotion of, 1606, iv, 103. Their prerogatives in Italy, 381.

Carl-Paul, envoy from the elector Palatine to the duke of Sully, iv, 272.

Carlat. The residence of queen Margaret in this castle, which Henry IV causes to be demolished, iv, 45.

Carlos, don, prince of Spain, Philip II causes him to be executed, i, 20. Motives of this action, ii, 292.

Carlovingien kings, Sully's opinion of this race, v, 53. See France, kings of.

Carmelites, barefoot, established in France, iii, 173.

Carnavelet, madam de, gives good advice to Henry IV, i, 53.

Carrouge. See Le-Veneur.

Casaubon. Henry sends for him, and fixes him at Paris, ii, 232.

Cassault, Charles, his party in Provence, i, 308. Is killed in endeavouring to deliver up Marseilles to the Spaniards, ii, 31.

Case, la, a Protestant, his intrigues during the siege of Amiens, ii, 275.

Casimir, the prince, enters France with an army, i, 53. Is bribed to depart, 55. See Medicis, Monsieur's peace. Cities given in pledge to him by the prince of Condé, 83.

Cassaux, an exploit of Sully in its neighbourhood i, 66.

Castle-Jaloux, a Protestant town, i, 68.

Castenet, takes Bourg-en-Bresse, though opposed by marshal Biron, ii, 367.

Castests. Marshal de Matignon obliged to raise the seige of this place, i, 132.

Castile, kings of. See Ferdinand, Isabel.

————, constable of. See Velasco.

Castile, receiver-general of the clergy, is accused of a misdemeanor, iii 296. Is made comptroller-general after the death of Henry IV. Sully complains of him, v, 22.

Castillon, taken by the duke of Maienne, and retaken by the duke of Bouillon, i, 171.

Cateau-Cambresis. The duke of Anjou takes this place by storm, i, 96.

Catelet, le, taken by the Spaniards, ii, 54, 67.

Catherine of Medicis. See Medicis.

Catherine, Madame. See Madame.

Catherine, Fort de Saint, attacked improperly at the siege of Rouen, i, 259. See Biron. Sully is received there as he went to treat with admiral Villars, 393.

————, Fort de Saint, in Savoy, besieged and taken by Sully, ii, 392. Demolished at the entreaty to the republic of Geneva, 397.

Catholic religion. See religion.

Catholics of the party of Henry IV, the most powerful in his council, i, 243. Design to revolt at the siege of Rouen; their views, 265. Their opposition to the Protestants occasion the raising this siege, 280, 1. See Biron, Bouillon, Protestants. Refuse to pursure the prince of Parma, 295, 6. Oblige Henry IV, to refuse the offers of the League, 348. The wise conduct of Henry IV, with regard to them, 386. Their jealousy of Sully, ib. They murmur at his embassy to London, iii, 20. The Catholic power in Europe, compared with that of the Protestants, and the power of each party, 122. See Political design, James. Their intrigues against Henry IV, in favour of Spain. See League, Pope, Spain, Jesuits.

Cavagne, Arnaud de, deputed by the Protestants to Charles IX, i, 18.

Caudebec, surrendered to the prince of Parma, and retaken by Henry iv, i, 284, 289.

Caumartin, Lewis le Fevre de, keeper of the seals, of great service to Henry IV, in those districts in which he is sent, ii, 127. Appointed to assist at the conference at Boulogne, 234. To treat with the Swiss ambassadors, 528. Called to the council upon the affair of the Jesuits, iii, 292. Commissioner in the affair of the earldom of Saint Paul, 343. Prepossesses the landgrave of Hesse against the duke of Bouillon, iv, 6. His good management in the distribution of the pay to the Swiss Cantons, 194. He serves the prince d'Epinoi with the States General, 373. Eulogium of his negociation in Swisserland, and with the Grisons, 383. Appointed ambassador to Switzerland, 394. Admitted into the council of the queen-regent, 467.

Caumont, Francis Nonpar de, killed at the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i, 36.

————, James Nonpar de. See Epernon, duke of.

————, a Protestant city, iv, 252.

Caussade. An estate purchased by Sully, v, 55.

————, See Megrin, Saint.

Causse, one of the disaffected, implores pardon of Henry, iv, 32.

Caylus, or Quélus, James de Lewis de, a favourite of Henry III, ii, 18.

Cazal, Alphonso, deputy from Spain to the Grison league at Coire, but does not succeed, iii, 338.

Cecil, Robert, ambassador from queen Elizabeth to Henry IV, his conversation with this prince, ii, 205.

Cecil, William, secretary of state to queen Elizabeth, ii, 205. His character, iii, 54. Visits the duke of Sully; and his opinion of him, 60, 61. His artifice to procure the favour of king James, 82. See James. Conference between him, the English counsellors, and Sully, in which he endeavours to surprise and deceive him, 100, 101. He is deputed to the count of Aremberg, 103. His attachment to Spain, 104. His conference with Sully and the deputies from the United Provinces, in which he exerts all the craft of a statesman, 109. And his opposition to giving succour to the states-general, 110. The king of England discontented with his conduct, 130. He continues to assist the Spanish faction, 153. At last declares himself, against his will, for a treaty of alliance with France, 156. Present made to him by Sully, 144.

Censors A scheme for establishg them in France for the punishment of dissoluteness and prodigality, iv, 327.

Cercote. Sully has a meeting at this place with queen Margaret; the subject of their conversation, iv, 44.

Chaalons. Assembly of the League, and conferences in this city. See League, Henry III. Medicis, Guises.

Chalais, port and passage of, seized by Henry IV, i, 159.

Chalandeau, a protestant officer, i, 142.

Chalange, an enemy and calumniator of Sully, iii, 387.

Chaligny, Henry of Lorrain, counsellor of, kills Chicot, who had made him prisoner, i, 115. Sully accompanies him to Paris. 393.

Chalon-sur-Marne. Henry IV narrowly escapes being assassinated there, i, 385.

Chamant, John and Anthony de St., employed by the League in Languedoc and Limosin, and afterwards by Henry IV, ii, 116.

Chamber of accounts, guilty of some disrespect to Henry IV, ii, 181. Abuses in it corrected by the duke of Sully, 272, et seq. Opposes the establishment of a new council, iii, 301. Sully complains of that chamber, and subjects it to new regulations, iv, 265. Other regulations made in this chamber, 266.

Chamber of justice, established by Henry IV, ii, 169. Another in the year 1601, and called the royal chamber, 413. Another in 1604, iii, 301. Another in 1607, contrary to Sully's advice, iv, 192. Reflections and reasonings of this minister upon these establishments, ib.

Chambert, or Chambaret, one of the chief royalists in Languedoc, ii, 116. Contributes to the taking of Bourg, 366.

Chambery. Henry IV takes this city and makes entertainments in it, 367.

Chambrai, de, present at the battle of Ivry, i, 224.

Chamier, a protestant minister, behaves disrespectfully to the constable, iv, 151.

Chamnite, count of, governor of Franche-Comté: assists the prince of Joinville and other malecontents, ii, 506.

Champaign, revolts against the duke of Guise, ii, 23. See Rheims. The Spanish usurpation upon this frontier proved by Sully, who obliges them to make restitution, iv, 264.

Champigny, a commissioner in Orleans and Touraine, ii, 281.

Champs, des, one of Henry the fourth's household, i, 84.

Chancellors of France. L'Hopital, Birague, Chiverny, Bellievre, Sillery. See each of these names.

Changer, father, a Jesuit, iv, 297.

Chanlivant, René Viau de, attends Henry IV to Aumale, i, 269.

————, madam de, engages in the amours of Henry IV, iv, 188.

Chantalerie, la, is defeated in endeavouring to succour Noyon, i, 248.

Chanteloup, de, one of Sully's prisoners at the battle of Ivry, i, 222.

Chantilly, the ordinary residence of Henry IV in the spring, iii, 205, 225.

Chapelle-Biron, Charles de Charbonniere, de la, one of the officers of the League, ii, 116. Joins the malecontents, iii, 454.

Charbonnieres. Sully lays siege to it, notwithstanding the opposition of the courtiers: takes it with great trouble, and prevents it from being plundered, ii, 371.

Charité, la, a protestant city, i, 2.

Charity, Christian, given by Henry IV for a royal hospital for disabled soldiers, iii, 306.

Charlemagne, prevents the establishment of too many religious houses in France, iii, 345. Sully's judgment concerning his reign, iv, 293.

Charles Martel, Sully's opinion of this king, v, 65.

Charles V, king of France, his reign proposed as a model of good government, iii, 308. He submits to the authority of the states of the kingdom, iv, 271. Remarks on his reign, v, 60.

Charles VI, king of France: his reign called by Sully the grave of laws and manners, iv, 271.

Charles VII, king of France. The taille, in his reign, becomes a settled tax, iv, 271. Remarks on his reign, v, 69.

Charles VIII. His reign the source of the mal-administration of the finances, ii, 17. The value of the taille in his reign, iv, 271.

Charles IX. King of France, his affection for Henry IV, i, 13. Divides his favours amongst the princes of the blood, the Guises, and the constable,

15. The deep dissimulation he makes use of to destroy the protestants, 17. An instance of his hatred to the duke of Guise, 18. He draws the protestants to Paris, 21. Escapes being taken by them at Meaux, 23. He caresses the chiefs of the protestants, 19. See Coligny, protestants. The security with which he inspires them, ib. Reflections upon his behaviour to Coligny, 23. Concerned in the massacre of St. Bartholomew, 39. His severity to the king of Navarre, and the prince of Condé, 40. His remorse for the massacre of St. Bartholomew: disavows it, 42. Instances of his cruelty, 44. Favours the protestants out of hatred to his mother, whom he suspects of having poisoned him, 47. The grief he expresses at his death for the massacre, 50. His death: good and bad qualities, 51. His treaty of commerce with the English disadvantageous to France, iii, 33. Value of the taille in his reign, iv, 272.

Charles IV. Emperor, assists the house of La-Mark in taking possession of the dutchy of Cleves, iv, 385. See Cleves.

Charles V. A bon-mot of his upon France, i, 348. His ambition: his project: his retreat, ii, 284, 5. He orders that the kingdom of Navarre should be restored to the house of Albret, 287. See Philip II. An abridgment of his life: his scheme of universal monarchy, 285. Sully's opinion of this prince, iv, 293. His dissipations of the estates of Cleves, 389. His oppression of the elector of Saxony and the German princes, 395. His engagements with the electors, v, 91.

Charney, Eleanor de Chabot, count of, saves the protestants in his government during the massacre, i, 44. Lieutenant of Burgundy for the king, ii, 60.

Charost. See Bethune.

Charron, le, clerk to the council of finances, ii, 133, 135.

Chartres. Henry IV retires thither after the day of the barricadoes. What happened to him there, i, 171. Taken by the two kings, 194. Taken by Chatillon, 246. Henry IV crowned there, 315. The queen makes a journey to this city, iv, 191.

Chartres, John de Ferriere, viscount of, escapes the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i. 34. Present at the batttle of Arques, 205.

Chartres, Pregent de la Fin, vidame de, made use of to prevail upon La Fin, his uncle, to come to Fontainebleau, ii, 456.

Chastes, Aymar de, governor of Dieppe, promises to receive Henry in it, i, 204.

Chataignerie, John de Vivonne, de la, prisoner to Sully at the battle of Ivry, i, 222. Account of his death, 224.

Chateau-gay, madame de, mistress of the count d'Auvergne, iii, 276.

Chateauneuf, or Passava, taken and demolished by the knights of Malta, ii, 463.

Chateauneuf, René de St. Marthe de, one of the principal royalists in Languedoc, ii, 116. Implores pardon for marshal Biron, 494.

Chateauneuf l'Aubepine. See Aubepine.

Chateaupers Francis Hurault de, first husband of the dutchess of Sully, i, 315.

Chateaupers, madam de. See Sully, dutchess of.

Chateau-Thierry, given to d'Inchy by monsieur, i, 98. This prince dies there, 107.

Chateauvieux, Joachim de, captain of the guards, takes an oath of fidelity to Henry IV after the death of Henry III, i, 199. One of the disaffected catholics during the siege of Rouen, 111. Sent by Mary of Medicis to queen Margaret, iv, 46. Appointed one of the council of the queen-regent, 461. Made governor of the Bastile, v, 37.

Chatel, John, wounds Henry IV with a knife, ii, 42. Particulars relating to his wicked attempt, trial and death, ib.

Chatelet, le, an estate purchased by Sully, v, 53.

Chatelleraut, taken by Henry IV, i, 185 The general assembly of the protestants held in this city. Reciprocal designs of Henry IV and the protestants. Artifice of the latter. Subjects which ought to have been treated, ii, 443. Motives for sending the duke of Sully there: the public instructions which he received, 444. His private tnstructions 449, 50. His advice against the assembly. See Margaret, Rodelle. Letters and artifices of the duke of Bouillon, to make an insurrection among the Protestant party, 450. The courage and wisdom of Sully in declaring the king's intentions, ib. He is not appointed president, 151. An arrogant and seditious letter to Bouillon intercepted, 456. Sully renders ineffectual the cabals of the malecontents, 462. He causes the memorial for a Protestant republic to be rejected. Affairs relating to the deputies-general terminated by Sully to the king's satisfaction; as likewise those relating to the cautionary towns. His bold and wise speech at the closing of the assembly, iv, 1 et seq. Another assembly, when the Protestants support Sully against the court and the queen-regent, v, 119. Public works of Sully in this city, 147.

Chatellier, father, a Jesuit, Henry's reception of him at Metz, iii, 7.

Chatillon, de, Sully hinders his deputies from being addmitted into the assembly of Châtelleraut and into the Protestant synods, iv, 463.

———, an engineer, supports the advice of Sully for besieging Sedan, iv, 80. He makes plans of the frontiers of Champaign, 264.

Chatre, Claude de la, commands the forces of the league at the siege of Rouen, i, 269. Created marshal of France by the league, 347. Delivers up Orleans and Bourges to Henry IV, 392. Sum of money received by him for his treaty, ii, 264. Consulted by SuHy upon the re-

gulations for Berry, iv, 186. Henry's letters to him upon the affair of Orleans, 296. Commands the army sent to the siege of Juliers, 504.

Chaufaille and his wife, citizens of Paris, sponsors for the marquis of Rosny, who was born during the persecution, i, 157.

Chaumont. See Guitry.

————, de, one of the courtiers who lived familiarly with Henry IV, iv, 128.

————, Saint, lieutenant of the king in Lyonnois, makes head there against d'Alincourt, v, 81.

Chauvelen, Sebastien, counsellor of parliament, ii, 220.

Chaux viscount of, his offers to Henry IV, on the part of Spain, i, 105, 382.

Chef-boutonne, a French officer, goes into the service of the archduke, iii, 433.

Chelles. Henry IV, commits an error in choosing this post, i, 236, 7.

Chene, le, an officer in the army of Henry IV, i 142.

Chesy, the abbot of, concerned in the conversion of Henry IV, i, 360.

Chevalerie, la, this name intended to be assumed by Sully upon his taking upon him the government of the Bastile, ii, 459.

Chevalier, informs Sully of the intrigues of the duke of Savoy, iii, 391.

Chicot. The trick which he plays the marshal Lavardin, i, 115. His character and bon-mots, ibid.

Childerick. The reasons of his being dethroned, iv, 270.

Chilperic, assassinated by Bodillon, iv, 270.

Chisay, taken by Henry IV, i 140. Two remarkable accidents which happened at this siege, ib.

Chiverny, Henry Hurault of, attends Henry IV, into Burgundy, ii, 65.

————, or Cheverny, Philip Hurault, of chancellor, i, 452. The cognizance of the treaty of the duke of Guise taken from him by Henry IV, ii, 23. Enters into the new council of the finances, 36. Favours the designs of the dutchess of Beaufort, 46. Employed in the articles of pacification with the Protestants, 196. Assists the dutchess of Beaufort in her endeavours to be made queen, 237. Sum of money received by him for his treaty, 264. His death, 310.

Choart. See Buzenval.

Choirin, employed by Henry IV, to discover the secrets of the league, i, 324.

Choiseul. See Crastin.

Chouppes, Peter de, preserved at the massacre of Paris, i, 34. Comes to the assistance of Henry IV, at Cahors, 80.

Church, one besieged by Henry IV, i, 67. Churches built and repaired by this prince, iv, 180.

Church of England, conferences between its ministers and the Puritans, iii, 154.

Clairvant, Claude-Antoine de Vienne de, solicits forces in Germany for Henry IV, i, 139. Partly the cause of the defeat at Auneau, 170. See German horse, Swiss.

Clan, St. German de, one of the protestant chiefs, enemy to Henry IV, i, 118. His plots during the siege of Amiens, ii, 175. Sides with the duke of Bouillon against Henry and Sully, iv, 3. Endeavours to raise an insurrection in the assembly at Châtelleraut, 5. Supports the project of a protestant republic in France, 12. Sully excludes him from the general deputation, 18. Attempts to divert Henry from the enterprise upon Sedan, 72. Employed by Sully in the affair of Metz against the Jesuits, 103. Quarrel between this family and the family of La-Force, 244.

Clarencal, madam de, employed in the affair of Adrienne de Fresne, iv, 107. See Cotton.

Clavelle, la, attached to the queen, iv, 130. His obligations to Sully, and his counsel to him, v, 39.

Clausembourg, taken by the imperialists. See Baste.

Claye, a skirmish at this place, i, 236, 7.

Clement, James, a dominical friar, kills Henry III, i, 195. Particulars relating to this action, ib.

Clement VII, his conduct censured by Sully, iv, 200.

Clement VIII makes difficulties in receiving the abjuration of Henry IV, and granting his absolution, i, 378. Eulogium upon this pope, 446. Interests himself for the Jesuits in their process against the university. Grants absolution to Henry IV; the condition, ii, 68. Endeavours to procure a general peace, 197. Inclined to the dissolution of the marriage of Henry IV with queen Margaret, 214. Refuses a dispensation for the marriage of madame with the duke of Bar, 297. Resolves not to concern himself in the affair of the marquisate of Saluces, 328. Agrees to Henry's marriage with Mary of Medicis, 364. Henry's deference for him in the treaty of Savoy, 399. Presents made to his chamberlain, iii, 55. Henry satisfies him with regard to his armaments, 70. Disturbances in England by his endeavouring to establish an archpriest there, 97. Reciprocal civilities between him and the king of England, 99. Interests himself for the recal of the Jesuits into France: complains of the synod of Gap; establishes many religious orders, 172, 3. Promotion of cardinals, in which he has regard to the recommendation of the duke of Sully, 225. See Du-Perron, Olivary. His moderation to the protestants praised by Sully, 265. He exerts himself for the conclusion of the treaty of commerce with Spain, 313. Favours the design of Henry against Spain, 333. His death. Particulars of his death and character, 421.

Clergy of France, in the states of Paris, unite with Spain in favour of the duke of Guise, against Henry IV, i, 353. Their hatred to this prince, 358. See League.

————————, assembly of, in 1598, ii, 140. Opposes the marriage of the princes Catherine with the duke of Bar, 297. As likewise the registration of the edict of Nantes, and makes alterations in it, 303, 4. Project for their reformation by Henry. See Cabinet of Sate.

Clermont, taken by Henry IV, i, 202, 240. Danger of madam de Liancourt in her journey to this place, ii, 94.

————————, d'Amboise. See Amboise.

————————, Resnel. See Resnel.

————————, Tonnere. See Tonnere.

————————, de, commands the artillery at the battle of Coutras, i, 158. Advises the amendment of the edict of Nantes, ii, 302. Sent to Sully by the prince of Condé, v, 54.

Cleves, dutchy of, motives to undertake a war with the house of Austria, iii, 127. See political design. Death of its last duke. See Cleves, William, duke of. Account of this principality: of the princes and princesses of this name, iv, 385. The German princes who have claim to it, meet at Hall, and send a deputation to Henry IV, 402. Henry begins to march his troops to this place, 415. An extraordinary council held by Mary of Medicis upon this occasion, 475. See Sully. Sends an army to the siege of Juliers, 505. Conclusion of this affair, 506. Division of its succession, ib. See Henry IV, Sully, Medicis, Mary of, Rodolph, Brandenbourg, Newbourg, Leopold.

————, Ann of, right of Philip Lewis, count palatine of Neuburgh by her, to this succession, iv, 388.

————, Catherine of. See Guise, dutchess of.

————, John William, duke of, his death: his children: his alliances: several princes claim a right to his succession, iv, 385.

Cleves, John William of, son to the former. By his death, his sisters become his heirs, iv, 386.

————, Madeline of, right of John, count palatine de Deux Ponts, to the succession of Cleves by this lady, iv, 388.

Cleves, Mary of, married to Henry I prince of Conde, i, 19.

————, Mary-Eleanor of. Right of Albert-Frederick of Brandenbourg to the succession of Cleves, by her, iv, 387.

————, Sybile of, right of Charles of Austria, by her, to the succession of Cleves, iv, 388.

Clielle, la, yeoman of the mouth to Henry IV, iv, 125.

Clotaire I, and II, Sully's opinion of these kings. See Merovingiens, race of.

Cloud, Saint, Henry III, assassinated at this place, i, 195.

Clovis, Sully's opinion of this king, iv, 293.
Cluseau, Nicholas Blanchard de, killed at the taking of Ham, ii, 54.
Coasts of France. Sully causes plans to be drawn of them. iv, 264.
Cobham, Lord, visits Sully at Dover, ii, 428. One of the disaffected party in London, iii, 55. His advice to Sully, 86. Conspires against king James I, 154.
Cochefilet, house of, eminent, iii, 150.
————, Andrew, de. See Vaucelas.
———— Rachael de. See Sully, dutchess of.
Coconnas, Annibal de, beheaded by order of Catherine of Medicis, i, 49.
Coeme, Jane de, married to the prince of Conti, ii, 442. See Montaffié.
Coesnard, sent commissioner into Poitou, ii, 127.
Cœur, Bartholomew, ambassador from the grand signior, ii, 422.
Cœuvres, Francis Annibal d'Estrees, marquis of, reasons for his hatred to the duke of Sully, iii, 385, 6. The relations of mademoiselle de Melun refuse her in marriage to him, 405.
Cognac, one of the cautionary towns granted to the Protestants, i, 4. A conference held in it between Catherine of Medicis and Henry IV, 149.
Coire. The Grison league assemble at this place, iii, 338. Its bishop favours the Spanish party, iv, 174.
Colange, a commissioner in Languedoc, iv, 267.
Colas, seneschal of Montelimart, defends La Fere against Henry, IV, ii, 85.
Coligny, Gaspard de Chatillon, admiral of, commands the Protestant forces at Arnai-le-Duc, i, 3. Declared innocent of the murder of the duke of Guise, 14. See Guise, Poltrot. Resides at Rochelle, after the peace of 1570, 17. Marries the countess of Entremont, 19; magnificent offers made to him by the court, ib. See Charles IX, Medicis. Appointed Viceroy in the Low Countries; other favours conferred upon him by Charles IX, ib. Commands the Protestants at the enterprise upon Meaux, 23. Wounded by Maurevert, 28. Account of the proceedings of Charles IX, with regard to him, 28, 9. Opposes the advice given him to leave Paris, 32. His talents and great qualities; killed at the massacre of St. Bartholomew, 36.
Coligny-Chatillon, Charles de. See Andelot, d'.
————————, Francis de, son to the admiral, saves himself at Geneva at the massacre of Paris, i, 40. His advice upon the entry of the foreign forces into France, not followed, 141. Employed in the defence of Tours, 190. Gains the battle of Saveuse, 191. Carries the suburbs of St. Germain, 244. Takes Chartres, ib. His death, ib His eulogium, ibid.
————————, Henry, de, grandson of the admiral, killed at the siege

of Ostend: his great qualities: regretted by Sully, but not by Henry IV. ii, 434.

————————, Odet de, cardinal of Chatillon, i, 19. Particulars relating to his life and death, ib.

College, royal, intended to be founded by Henry IV, iv, 318. See Cabinet of State. Reflections upon colleges, and the instruction fit to be taught in them, ib.

Colombe, de Saint, a Catholic officer of Henry IV's party, i, 59.

Colombieres, Francis de Bricqueville de, a Protestant, i, 27. Killed at the massacre of Paris, 36.

Colony sent to the East-Indies iii, 186.

Colvil. Writes against king James I, and disapproved of by the pope, iii, 99.

Coman, Jacqueline Le-Voyer de, or d'Escoman, informs Henry IV of a conspiracy against him, iv, 431. Particulars concerning his law-suit, and different opinions upon the whole of that affair, 432.

Combaut, Sully's severity to him, iii, 43.

Combrailles. Sully visits his estates there, i, 214.

Como, a fort built upon this lake by the Spaniards: produces contests between them and the Grisons, iii, 335. See Fuentes, Grisons.

Comedians, Italian, brought into France by Henry IV, iv, 206, 7.

Comet in 1607. Superstitious application of this comet to the children of France, iv, 202.

Comnenus, Alexis, emperor of Constantinople, i, 7.

Commerce, ruined by war, ii, 263. Abuses in it corrected by Henry IV and the duke of Sully, 409. The treaty of commerce between Charles IX and Elizabeth disadvantageous to France, iii, 33. Edicts destructive to commerce granted by Henry IV, contrary to the advice of Sully, 163. Maxims of commerce, 185. Promoted by the joining of rivers and making of public roads, 299. See Rivers, Roads. Commerce with Spain prohibited, 304. Sequel of this affair, 312. Established by a treaty, 314. See Spain, Sully, Bufalo. Projects for the improvements of commerce, iv, 323. See Cabinet of State.

Commercy, lordship of, unjustly usurped by the Spaniards and the duke of Lorrain; and restored, iv, 264.

Comminges. See Sobolle.

Commissioners, sent into the provinces: regulations given them by Sully, iv, 183.

Compromise for the marquisate of Saluces, in the hands of the pope, ii, 327.

Comptants. Mary of Medicis continues the use of them notwithstanding the opposition of Sully: disputes on this subject betwixt him and Puget, v, 5, 6.

Conan, Conas, or Conac, baron of, defeated with the garrison of Soissons. ii, 44.

Conchini, or Concini, attends Mary of Medicis into France ii, 403. Gives her bad counsel, iii, 237. Henry's hatred to him: the queen makes him marry Leonora Galligai, and opposes the design of sending him back to Italy: abuses the confidence she puts in him: his ambition, iv, 227. Secret motives for the jealousy with which he inspires her against the king: his intrigues with the court of Spain against Henry IV, 303. Henry refuses to send him ambassador into Florence, 331. Endeavours to ruin Sully after the death of the king, iv, 462. Governs the queen-regent, 466. Joins himself with the count of Soissons, 472. His quarrels and reconciliation with the count of Soissons, 475. Advises an alliance with Spain, 485. Receives Sully's kind offers with disdain, 487. See Arnaud. Particular circumstances relating to his life and death, ib. The queen-regent publicly declares him her favourite, 503. Opposes the advice of Sully in the affair of Cleves, v, 2. He treats with the duke of Bouillon for the post of first gentleman of the bed-chamber, 3. Supports the demands of the count of Soissons, 5. Advises the queen-regent to continue the comptants, ib. Sully reproaches him for fraudulently using the deceased king's seal, 11. He quarrels with the nobility, 12. Dares not attempt to banish Sully immediately, 14. Visits him: their conversation, 20, 21. Posts and dignities conferred upon him by the queen-regent, 24. Joins himself with Villeroi and d'Alincourt against Sully in the affair of Lyons, 39. His death, 128.

Condé. A house belonging to the bishop of Evreux, where Sully treats with Medavy, i, 406.

———, Charlotte-Margaret de Montmorency, princess of. See Montmorency.

———, Charlotte-Catherine de La-Trémouille, princess of. See Trémouille Charlotte-Catherine de La.

———, Lewis I, de Bourbon, prince of, killed at the battle of Jarnac, i. 2. Commands the Protestants at the skirmish of Meaux, 23.

———, Henry I, de Bourbon, prince of, present at the encounter of Arnai-le-Duc, i, 3. Marries Mary of Cleves, 19. Charles IX uses injurious language to him at the massacre of St. Bartholomew: obliges him to go to mass: detains him prisoner, 40. Makes his escape, and declared chief of the protestant party, 49. Brings a foreign army into France. and joins with monsieur and the king of Navarre, 54. Separates from them 74. Challenged by the viscount of Turenne, ib. See Bouillon. Endeavours to form a sovereignty for himself: Henry IV obliges him to lay aside that design, 82. Fails in his attempt upon Angers, 125. Upon Brouage, ib. Danger in his retreat, 127, 8. Brings his forces to Henry IV, 141. His courage and conduct at the battle of Coutras, 157, 161.

His projects after this battle, 165. His death, 171. Particulars relating to it, 171, 72. Intended to have been married to madame, 178.

——, Henry II, de Bourbon, prince of. His birth, i, 170. The pope engages Henry IV, to educate him a Roman Catholic, 399. Henry IV, supports his rights, ii, 101. He joins the disaffected, iii, 226. Grants made him, iv, 200. Henry IV, discontented with his proceedings: proposes to marry him to mademoiselle de Montmorency, iv, 245. This marriage determined: motives which induced Henry IV to it, contrary to the advice of Sully, 303. Quarrels which ensued between Henry IV, and this prince, 349. Particulars upon the consequence of this jealousy, ib. Sully's bold discourse to him, 352. Carries, the princess of Conde into Flanders, 355. Particulars relating to this flight, ib. His letter to the king, 360. Returns into France after the death of Henry IV, and enters Paris, accompanied by Sully, 493. Received coldly by the queen-regent, 494. Follows the advice of Sully, 494. Afterwards becomes his enemy, 499. Means which he employs for that purpose, 501. Gifts bestowed upon him by the queen-regent, v, 22. Estates sold and exchanged between Sully and the prince of Condé, which he endeavours to have confiscated, 58, 9. His revolt, 125.

——, Mary of Cleves, princess of. See Cleves, Mary of.

Conferences of Baionne. See Medicis, Catherine of, Alva, duke of Baionne. Between Henry IV, and Marshal Biron, for a peace, i, 70. Between Catherine and Henry IV, at different places, 71. Others at Cognac, between the same; at St. Brix; St. Maixant, 149. Between Catherine, the cardinal of Bourbon, and the duke of Guise. See Barricades, Chalons, Sarry, Nemours. At Surenne, La-Villette, Mante, Pontoise, Andresy, Milly. See these names. At Boulogne. See Boulogne. A conference upon religion to convert the princess Catherine proves ineffectual, ii, 296. A public conference or dispute between Du-Perron and Du-Plessis-Mornay, 354. At Ratisbon. See Ratisbon. Between Sully and the English ministers and others. See Sully, James I, Cecil. At London for a peace between Spain and the United Provinces, iii, 321, 2. Between the members of the church of England and the Puritans, 154. At the Hague for a truce. See Spain, Holland. Upon the affairs of Cleves. See Cleves.

Confession. Proposals of the Jesuits, for confession by letters, iii, 241.

Conflans, taken by Henry IV, ii, 368.

Conspiracies against Henry IV. See Henry IV, Spain, Biron, Savoy, Malecontents, League, Ravaillac, Coman, Entragues, Verneuil. Against the king of England. See James I, English.

Consignations, receivers of; these offices united to the domaine iv, 186, 7.

Constables of France. Montmorency, Lesdiguieres. See these names.

Sully refuses the post of constable of France, offered him by Henry IV, iv, 213.

Constans, a malecontent, i, 335. Cabals during the siege of Amiens, ii, 175. Likewise during Sully's journey into Poitou, iii, 263. One of the schemers for a Protestant republic in France, iv, 12, 19.

———, A messenger of state, iii, 377.

Constantine. Bad policy of this emperor, v, 65.

Constantinople. Revolt of, ii, 463 See Turk, Mahomet III, Achmet.

Contenant de, officer of the League, i, 202.

Controllers-general. Incarville, De-Vienne, Castille. See these names.

Conti, Francis de Bourbon, prince of, brings forces to the assistance of Henry IV, i, 169. Is defeated at the battle of Craon, 301. Made president of the council during the war of 1595, ii, 47. Slanders raised on account of his friendship for Sully, iii, 390. His quarrels with the count of Soissons, with the prince of Joinville, iv, 244. The queen-regent admits him into her council, 467. Quarrel between him and the count of Soissons, 473. Sully's advice with respect to him, 496.

———, Jean de Coeme, princess of, employed to bring about a marriage between the duke of Vendome and mademoiselle de Mercœur, iv, 247.

Convents, Hospitals, &c., built or repaired by Henry IV, iii, 415, 16.

Conversations. That of Henry IV with Sully upon his journey to Flanders, and upon the duke of Anjou, i, 91, 2. Upon the designs of the league and the protestants, 117. Between the president de Thou and Montagne, concerning the views of Henry IV and the duke of Guise, 121. Between Henry and Sully, concerning the siege of Rouen and the mutiny among the forces, 263. Upon this prince's change of religion, 331. Between Sully and Villars concerning his treaty, 410, et seq. Between Sully and the cardinal of Bourbon on several subjects, 445, et seq. Between Sully and Bouillon upon the designs of the latter, ii, 5. Between Sully and the princess Catherine, concerning the amour between her and the count of Soissons, 99, et seq. Between Henry and Sully, after his return from the districts, 182, 83. Upon the error that prince committed in pardoning the prince de Mercœur, 196. Between Henry and the English and Dutch ambassadors, 206. A curious conversation between Henry and Sully, concerning the designs of this prince to marry again, 214. Between Sully, Henry, and the dutchess of Beaufort, concerning their quarrels, 242. Between the archbishop of Rouen and Roquelaure, upon the marriage of the princess Catherine, 300. Between queen Elizabeth and Sully, upon the means of humbling the house of Austria, 429. Between Henry and Sully upon the grants this prince intended to make him, ii, 514, 515. Upon the death of Elizabeth, and his embassy to London, iii, 19. Between the king of England and Sully, at

his first audience, upon different subjects, 73. Other private conferences upon the designs against the house of Austria, 93. Between Henry and Sully, upon his return from London, 146. Upon his silk manufactories, 177. Against recalling the Jesuits, 197. Upon the expenses of Henry, and his domestic broils, 226, 7. Between Sully and the marchioness de Verneuil, upon her treasonable practices, 281. Interesting and important conversation between Henry and Sully, in which they are reconciled, 384. Between their majesties and Sully, upon the subject of their disputes, iv, 61. Between Henry and Sully, upon the power of the house of Austria, 65, et seq. Between Henry, Sully, and the courtiers, upon the public news, 127, 8. Between Henry and Sully, upon the gallantries of this prince, 145. Upon the cabals of Spain against Henry, 156. Great offers made to Sully by Henry IV, 212, 13. Upon the subjects of complaint of Henry against the queen, and the marchioness de Verneuil, 222, 3. Between Henry, the queen, Sully, and the ministers, upon the domestic factions, 249, 50. Between Henry, Sully, and the courtiers, upon the great men of antiquity, 293. Between Henry and Sully upon the domestic and foreign plots against his life, 308. Upon the memoirs of the finances, 323. Upon the composition of a cabinet of state, 333. Between Sully and the prince of Condé, concerning the supposed causes of the discontent of the latter, 351. Between Henry and Sully on the same subject, 354. Upon the prince of Condé's flight, 357. Upon the manner of executing his great designs, 403. Upon the secret presages he had in his own mind of his approaching death, and upon the conspiracy against his life, 428. Between the prince of Condé and Sully, in which he gives that prince good advice, v, 495.

Coquet, master of the household to Henry IV, ii, 418.

Corbeil, taken by the duke of Parma, i, 242.

Corbie, taken by Henry IV, i, 248.

Corbiniere, la, a farmer of the king's revenues, ii, 90.

Cordier, le, an evidence against d'Entragues, iii, 369.

Cossé, Artus de, marshal of France, defeated by the protestant army, i, 3. Catherine de Medicis makes use of him to deceive the protestants, 17.

——, Charles de. See Brissac.

Cotton, John and Antony, father Cotton's brothers, iv, 148.

———, Peter, a Jesuit, how received by Henry IV at Metz, iii, 7. Endeavours to procure the establishment of his society in France, 192. Visits Sully, 203. Circumstances relating to his life, and Henry's friendship for him, 256. Joins the courtiers against Sully, 356. A great quarrel between Sully and him on account of the college of Poitiers, in which he is convicted of calumny, 357. Henry reconciles them: he deserts Sully in the affair of Grillon, 374. Takes some indiscreet steps in the affair of Adrienne de Fresne, iv, 105, 6. Supports father Seguiran

against the Rochellers; 153. Succeeds in his endeavours to bring about a marriage between the duke of Vendome and mademoiselle de Mercœur, 247. An imprudent letter written by him concerning the news of the court, 296. Henry and Sully disgusted with him upon this occasion, 298. Admitted into the secret council of the queen-regent, 466. He is involved in the guilt of Ravaillac's parricide: his justification, v, 165. See Jesuits.

Coucy, house of, allied to the ancient house of Austria, i, 8. To the house of Bethune: great persons which it has produced, iv, 379.

Coudrai, du, proposed for one of the deputies-general of the Protestant party, and rejected, iv, 17. See Chatelleraut.

Coulon, abbey of, given to Sully, iii, 11. He sells it, v, 54.

Council of state and of the finances, alterations made in it by Henry IV. Operations in the new council; quarrels amongst the members, ii, 36 et seq. A new council established by Henry IV, during the war of 1595, contrary to the advice of Sully, 47, 48. Their cabals against Sully. Abuses committed by them. Henry's irresolution to introduce Sully into this council, 121, but at last is received into it, 125. Their calumnies and artifices to deceive and ruin him, 128, 137. Sully gains the superiority in the council, 157. Henry disgusted with their proceedings, 181. Sully reforms the abuses in it, 248. An account of the several councils in the reign of Henry IV, 255, 6. Sully quarrels with the duke d'Epernon in full council, 268. Their jealousy of Sully, 273. New changes, by giving the post of superintendant to Sully, 311. Their hatred of him, iii, 383. They value the farms under borrowed names: this abuse corrected by Sully, 407. They oppose Henry's design of being made emperor; and his political design, 436. Their views in accepting the proposals made by the United Provinces of submitting to France. What passed in the council upon this occasion, iv, 165, 6. Sully's scheme of a new council not approved of by Henry IV, 191.

Council of regency, settled by Henry IV, during the execution of his grand design, iv, 422.

Council of the regency, public, different from the secret council. What is debated there, 467. Disputes and quarrels between the nobles and ministers there, v, 11. Affairs that are brought before it, 20. They alter the form of Henry IV, and Sully's administration. The hatred which the members of the council bear to Sully, 27.

Councils, extraordinary, reflections of Sully upon these councils. iii, 294. Upon the means of taking Amiens, ii, 163. Upon the brevet for the taille. See Taille. Upon the proposals of the United Provinces to submit to France, iv, 165.

Council-general of the Christian republic, v, 99.

Covoerdon, victualled by the prince of Orange, iii, 433.

Couronneau, a Protestant colonel, i, 202.

Coronation of Mary de Medicis. Motives which induced the malecontents to desire it, iv, 309. Henry IV's aversion to this ceremony, ibid. He endeavours to prevent it, 315. The queen determined to have it performed, 423. An account of this ceremony, 436.

Courts, sovereign, oppose the registration of the edict of Nantes, ii, 302. Regulations to which they are subjected by Sully. Reflections upon them, iv, 266. New ones to be established in case of necessity, 326.

Courtaumer, baron de, employed by Henry IV, in reconciling the nobles, iv, 244.

Courtenay, princes, and others of this name, i, 7, 8.

Courtenay, Gaspard de, engages in the interest of the princess Catherine and count de Soissons, i, 401.

Courtenay-Bontin, Ann de, Sully marries her, i, 110, 11. He goes to her assistance during the plague, 146. Exposed to great dangers on account of the persecution of the Protestants, 157. Her death; excessive grief of Sully upon that occasion, 193, 4.

Courtiers, soothe the passion of Henry for mademoiselle d'Entragues, iii, 283. Cabal with the Jesuits against Sully, 356. Likely to succeed in their endeavours, 358. Declare themselves for the Spanish policy, iv, 67. Endeavour to prevent the expedition to Sedan, 70. Favour the interest of Spain more than that of Henry, 156. The wise measures taken by this prince to stifle their quarrels, 218, 19. Other quarrels amongst them, 243, 4. Spread a malicious report that Henry endeavours to ruin them by deep play, 261. Their manner of thinking of Henry and Sully, 290. They spread malicious reports of Sully, upon account of Henry's natural children, 345. Dissatisfied with the great designs of this prince, 417. Involved in the parricide of Ravaillac. See Henry IV. Ravaillac. Endeavour to ruin Sully after the death of Henry IV, 467, v, 22, 33.

Coutras. Henry IV and Catherine of Medicis have a conference there, i, 71. The United Provinces send deputies thither to offer their crown to monsieur, 89. Battle of Coutras, 159, et seq. Faults committed at that battle; to what attributed, 161, 2.

Craon, battle of, gained by the duke of Mercœur against the royalists, i, 301.

Creil, taken by the two kings, i, 194.

Crequy, Charles de, defeated and taken prisoner at Aiguebelle, ii, 14. Takes the town of Montmelian, 367. Supports Sully's opinion in the council, 367. Made governor of Montmelian, 390. Colonel of the regiment of guards, 409. Treated with great haughtiness by the duke d'Epernon, 408. Henry procures a marriage between his daughter and the marquis of Rosny; preparations for it. His ingratitude afterwards to

Sully, iv, 210. His excessive losses at play, 261. His son proposed to be married to mademoiselle de Verneuil, 296.

Crequy, Frances de, married to the marquis de Rosny: preparations for this marriage: Sully dissatisfied with it, iv, 209, 210.

Crevecœur, de Montmorency, in Henry's party at the battle of Ivry, i, 224. The government of Caen taken from him, iii, 171.

Criq, Saint, a Catholic officer, burnt in Mirande, i, 64.

Crocans, defeated at Limosin by the royalists, ii, 116.

Croisic, a fort built by the duke of Mercœur, ii, 14.

Croix, la, killed at the taking of Ham, ii, 54.

Cros, du, deputy-general for the Protestants at the assembly of Châtelleraut, iv, 18.

————, one of those concerned in the conspiracy of la Flèche, iv, 366.

Crussol. See Beaudiner.

Crystal, manufactory of, established by Henry IV, iv, 420.

Cugnac. See Giversac.

Culand, an estate purchased by Sully, v, 53.

Cumans, des, an undertaker for the management of manufactories, 177.

Cumberland, earl of, one of the disaffected English lords, iii, 55.

Curates of Paris. Their law-suit against the Jesuits, i, 447, 8. Curée, Gilbert, Filhet de la, attends Henry IV to Aumale, 269. His eulogium, ibid. Present at the defeat of the convoy before Laon, 459. His opinion of this defeat, ibid. At the battle of Fountain-François, praised by Henry IV, ii, 65. Great actions performed by him before Amiens, 183. Henry refuses to give him the post formerly possessed by the baron de Luc, 178.

Cusco, king of, his correspondence with Spain, iii, 157.

Cusse, commissary in Brittany, reprimanded by Sully, iv, 186.

D.

Dadré, John, penitentiary of the church of Rouen, i, 381.

Dagobert. Character of that king, v, 66.

Dampiere. See Liéramont.

Damville, admiral de, receives an important service from Conchini, v, 8.

Dangeau, a Protestant officer, i, 123.

Danguin, captain, of great use in the affair of the revolt of the Moors, iv, 283.

Dansa, Simon, a Dutch corsair, iv, 298.

Danville. See Montmorency, Henry de.

Darius. An anecdote relating to this prince and Zopyrus, iii, 188, 203.

Darnetal, the quarters of Henry IV, at the siege of Rouen, i, 5.

Davilles, governor of Maillezais, i, 144.

Dauphin. His birth; rejoicings upon that account, ii, 437. Henry IV, orders la-Riviere to calculate his nativity, ib. Carried through Paris in his way to Saint-Germain, 439. The government of Burgundy given him by Henry IV, ii, 496. Brought to Fontainebleau, and shown in Paris, 344. His letters to madam de Montglat, iv. 60. Medals presented to him by Sully, ib. Ceremony of his baptism, 116. Queen Margaret gives up to him the estates of Catherine de Medicis, 180. Sick at Noisy, 202. Intrigues at court to procure a marriage between him and the infanta of Spain, 206. Designed by Henry for the heiress of Lorraine, 307.

Dauphiny. Success of the royalists at this place, ii, 44. Fortresses yielded up to Henry IV, by the treaty of Lyons, 401. Process of the third estate against the clergy and nobility, 521.

Davy. See Perron, du.

Deagent. Favours granted him by Mary of Medicis, v, 24.

Debts of the state, contracted during the League, iii, 413. Paid off by Sully, iv, 179.

Deffunctis, grand-provost of the Isle of France, ii, 492.

Dele, taken by the prince of Orange, ii, 531.

Delfin, ambassador from Venice to France, ii, 423. Henry IV sends him ambassador to Florence, iv, 381.

Demeurat, solicitor at Rome, ii, 190.

Dennis, Saint, the forces of the League defeated at this place, i, 301. Henry IV, makes his abjuration there. See Abjuration. Grants a second truce to the Parisians, and receives an envoy there from Spain, 382, 3. Escapes being assassinated there, 385. Mary of Medicis crowned there. See Medicis.

Denmark, kings of, Frederic III, Christian IV, See these names in the articles of Denmark.

————, Ann of, queen of England, her character and conduct; iii, 57. She comes to London in opposition to her husband, 80. See James. Vaucelas is appointed to deliver to her the letters of the king and queen of France, 141. Presents made her by Sully, 143. Her arrival in London, 152. She changes all on a sudden her conduct and policy, ib.

Denmark, Christiern IV, king of, his ambassadors in London, iii, 59. Bad policy of his court, 83. Enters into the alliance against the house of Austria, iv, 413. Boissise sent ambassador to this prince, 422.

Deodati, sends Beza's translation of the New Testament to Sully, iv, 39.

Deputies-general of the Protestant party, at court, iii, 445. A practice only tolerated. The origin of this custom, and regulations to be made in it, 448. Debated in the general assembly at Chatelleraut, 462. Terminated to the advantage of the king, iv. 16. The same disputed

in the synod of Rochelle, 151. In the general assembly at Gergeau See Gergeau.

Desbordes, deputy-general of the Protestants, iii, 173.

Descures, farmer of the revenues, ii, 89.

Desportes, treats with Sully in the name of Medavy, i, 387. Concludes the treaty, 406.

Despuilles, shamefully surrenders Saint-Bazeile, i, 135. His company defeated before Rochelle, 152.

Devese, la, a singular combat proposed betwixt him and Lavardin, i, 65.

————, advocate of Castres, his services and abilities, iv, 17.

Deuilly, madame de, mistress of de-Fresne, ii, 174.

Devonshire, earl of, ii, 428.

Deux-Ponts, John, count palatine of, his right to the succession of Cleves, iv, 388. See Cleves.

————, John II, duke of, visits Henry IV, at Metz, and marries Catherine de Rohan there, iii, 6. Sully accused of holding criminal correspondence with him, 391.

————, dutches of, presents made to her by Henry IV, iii, 421.

Dieppe. A skirmish before this city, i, 204.

Dijou, taken by marshal Biron, ii, 44. Its parliament disobedient to the king, iv, 182. See Bresse.

Dinteville, Joachim de, governor of Champaign, treats with the duke of Bouillon about the surrender of Sedan, iv, 91. Regretted by Henry IV, 199.

Dizimieux, surrenders Vienne and Montluet to the king, ii, 44.

Dollé, Lewis, advocate against the Jesuits, i, 451.

Dollé. The queen-regent admits him into her private council, iv, 466.

Domaine of the king. Abuses corrected in it, iii, 294. Usurpations of it discovered by Sully, 407. Sully redeems several parts of it, iv, 187, 8. The principal riches of the king does not consist in his domaine, 272, 3.

Dominge, a Protestant gentleman, i, 84.

Donawert. The emperor seizes this city, iv, 286.

Donfront, taken by the Protestants, i, 212.

Donon, comptroller of buildings, iv, 200.

Doria, Charles, commands the Spanish gallies in the Mediterranean, iii, 157.

Douarnenes. The Spaniards driven from this place, ii, 197.

Dourdon, lands of, purchased by Sully, v, 53.

Dourlach, prince of, accused of a criminal correspondence with Sully, iii, 391.

Dourlens. The French defeated before that place, ii. Henry IV raises the siege of it, 188.

Dover. The cause of queen Elizabeth's journey to that place, ii, 427. An

account of Sully's reception there, iii, 41. His stay there after his return from London, 145.

Dreuillet, engaged in the conspiracy of La-Flèche, iv, 367.

Dreux, taken by Henry IV, i, 233. Retaken by Sully, 368. The government of it denied him, 369. He there intercepts papers belonging to the League, 318.

Droit-Annuel. Different opinions upon this establishment, iv, 323.

Drou, madam de, governess to the queen's children, iv, 61.

Drouart, deprived of his post by Sully, iii, 303.

Drouet, an arret upon his marriage, iv, 197.

Dukes and peers. Sully created duke and peer: ceremony upon this occasion, iv, 70. The duke of Bouillon endeavours in vain to obtain the precedency of them, 115. They obtain the right of entering into the courts of the Louvre in their coaches, 316. A dispute for precedency betwixt the lords temporal and spiritual, determined in favour of the first, 463.

Duels. Of the duke of Bouillon and Duras. Of Breauté. See these names. Edict of Henry IV against them: sentiments of Sully upon this edict, ii, 527. His memorial upon the origin, custom, and the practices of different nations, in duels, iv, 50. Henry's easiness in pardoning them, the cause of their being so frequent, 244. Other edicts against them, and what passed in the council on that occasion, 343.

Dun, taken by the duke of Bouillon, i, 301.

Dunnes, a French officer, goes into the service of the archduke, iii, 433.

Durand, or Haute-Fontaine, the duke of Bouillon's agent in London, iii, 253.

Durandiere, la, preceptor to Sully, i, 24.

Duras, John de Durefort, viscount of, one of the Protestant chiefs, i, 27. Charles IX pardons him, 37. Goes over to the Catholic party, 74. Fights a duel with viscount Turenne; various opinions upon this duel, ibid.

Duret, one of the confidents of Mary of Medicis, iv, 130, 221, Of her secret council, 466.

Duret, advocate for the Jesuits against the university and curates of Paris, i, 450.

Duret, Lewis and Charles, authors of the third party, i, 323. Sully treats with them, 339.

E.

Eause, taken by Henry IV, i, 62, 3.

Eclipse of the sun, in 1605, iv, 38.

Edict of sixty-three articles. See Beaulieu, Protestants. Of July in favour of the League, i, 114. See Nemours. Treaty of, Henry III,

League. Of the 21st of July, still more advantageous, 156. Of Nantes. See Nantes. Upon the money. See Money. Petty edicts granted to private persons destructive to commerce, iii, 303. For the defence of commerce with Spain.

Edifices built or repaired by Henry IV, iii. 20. Sums expended in these iv, 180. In the city of Paris, 259, 60.

Edmonds, Sir Thomas, queen Elizabeth's agent in France. Sent by her to Calais, to compliment Henry IV, ii, 425.

Edward III, king of England. Sentiments of Sully upon this prince iv, 293.

Edouville, ii, 19. Defeats the forces of the League, 44

Egmont, earls and counts of this name: their rights to the dutchy of Guelders, iv, 386.

Egmont, Amorel, beheaded at Brussels, i, 220.

Egmont count of, his valour at Ivry; killed there, i, 220.

Eguillon, Henry de Lorrain, duke of, satisfies Henry with regard to his brother, iv, 239, 240. Procures Balagny to be assassinated, 243. Quarrels with Conchini and the ministers, v, 14. Grants made him by Mary of Medicis, 23.

Elbœuf, Claude de Lorraine, duke of, commands the army of the League in Normandy, i, 102. Fights for Henry IV, at Fontaine-François, ii, 65. Sum received by him on making his treaty, 264. Attends Henry IV in his expedition to Savoy, iii, 393.

Electors. Henry IV's design of restoring them to all their privileges, v, 93.

Elizabeth of France, queen of Spain, suspected of having been poisoned by Philip II, i, 20.

Elizabeth, queen of England, negociations to induce her to marry monsieur, i, 21. Sends an army to the assistance of Henry IV, 209. She demands Calais, which he refuses her, ii, 72. Sends an embassy to this prince, to dissuade him from the treaty of Vervins, 197, 202. Comes to Dover, 425. Beheads Essex; her conversation with marshal Biron on this subject, 452. Motives for her journey to Dover. Letters which passed between Henry IV, and her upon this occasion, 425. Subdues the rebels in Ireland, 460. Congratulates Henry IV, upon his quelling Biron's conspiracy, 511. Her death; Henry's grief for it; her eulogium, iii, 18, 19. A treaty of commerce made by her with Charles IX, 33. King James endeavours to tarnish her memory, 69. Her policy praised, 85. Supports the English priests against the Spanish cabal, 98. The king of England speaks contemptuously of her and of her council 105. A saying of this princess upon the union of France, England, Sweden, and Denmark, 126. Debts contracted during the League by Henry IV, to her, 413. Her share in the contrivance and disposition of the grand design, v, 80.

Eloi, Saint, taken by Joyeuse, iii, 14.

Embden. The Spaniards in vain endeavour to make themselves masters of that place, ii, 533.

Emilien, Saint, taken by Henry IV, i, 74.

Emperors. Charles IV, Charles V, Frederic III, Ferdinand, Maximilian I, Maximilian IV, Rodolphus. See these names.

Empire and emperor. Their true policy with regard to Spain, iii, 123, 124. Henry IV, is supposed to aim at being emperor, iv, 436. Pretensions of several emperors upon Cleves, 385. Henry's grand design in regard to the empire and emperor. Their true rights established. See Political design.

England, Anne of Denmark, queen of. See Denmark.

England and English. The Protestants deliver Havre de Grace to the English, i, 23. An English army comes to the assistance of Henry IV, 257. Serve him at the siege of Rouen, 259. The English assist marshal d'Aumount in Brittany, ii, 14. They join France against Spain in the war of 1595, 40, but do no great service. A conversation between Henry IV and the English and Dutch ambassadors, 206. See Cecil. Henry takes the farms of his revenues out of the hands of the English, 273. Piracies committed by the English upon the French Vessels, iii, 38, 39. Sully insulted by their vice-admiral, 40. The character of the English, ib. They hate the French, 50, 51. A continuation of the character of that people, 55. The manner in which we ought to act with them, 56. The English jealous of the Scots, 82, 83. Pretended claims of England upon Normandy, Guienne, Poitou, 87. Elizabeth supports the English clergy against the Spanish faction, 98. The manner in which the king of England is served at table, 105, Opposition made by the English ministers to Sully's negociation, and to the interests of the United Provinces, 109. Sully complains of them to king James, 117. Presents made by Sully to the principal lords and ladies of the English court, 143, 4. A conspiracy in London against king James, 154. Henry gives pensions and presents to the ministers and noblemen in this court, 156. The English take advantage of the prohibition of commerce between France and Spain, 310. Treaty between England and Spain, 325 6. State of the debts of France to England during the league, 413. Another conspiracy ag inst king James, iv, 136. Paul V forbids the English to take an oath of fidelity to king James, 176. Debts of France to England, 179. Jeannin is appointed ambassador to England during the war of Cleves, 422. Part of the great design relating to this kingdom, v, 85. Forces and money to be contributed by the English, 88. See also the names mentioned in this article.

Enhalt, or Anhalt, prince of, brings the German forces to Henry IV, at the siege of Rouen, i, 259. It is proposed to marry the princess Ca-

therine to him, ii, 295. Sully accused of holding a criminal correspondence with him, iii, 391. He joins in the great design, v, 102.

Entragues, Catherine Henrietta de Balzac d'. See Verneuil, marchiones of.

———, Francis de Balzac d', his intrigues with the Catholics against Henry IV, i, 332. He introduces the Spanish ambassador to Henry IV, and Sully, 383. See Nugnés. He cabals against Henry, 445, 49. Thwarts Henry's love for his daughter. See Verneuil, marchioness of. Enters into an association with Bouillon, Biron, and Auvergne, and endeavours to raise an insurrection, ii, 385, 391. His intrigues at the court of London, iii, 67. Farther account of his intrigues, 231, 254, 5, 269. Procures a marshal's staff, 270. Arrested, 279. Anecdote concerning Henry's love for his second daughter, 288. Motives which induced Henry IV, to pardon him, 348, 9, &c. Desirous of giving him his liberty, 352. Accused of being an accomplice in Ravaillac's parricide, v, 178.

———, Mary Touchet, countess of. See Touchet.

Entrees and Tithes, more reasonable than any other tax, iii, 408, 9. Regulations concerning them, iv, 323.

Entremont, Jaqueline de Montbel, countess of, marries the admiral Coligny, i, 19.

Epernai, besieged and taken by Henry IV, i, 312.

Epernon, John Lewis de Nogaret de la Valette, duke of, i, 2. The Rochellers refuse to admit him in their city, 49. He advises Henry III to suffer his guards to assassinate the duke of Guise, 172. Made admiral and governor of Normandy, 177. Quits Henry IV, after the death of Henry III, 200. His character: hated of Henry IV, and his behaviour in Provence, 305, 6. Bad conduct of his forces at Villemur, 310. One of the favourites of Henry III, ii, 18. Sully justifies himself against his complaints of him, 28. Accusations brought against him, 29, 30. Lesdiguieres and the duke of Guise drive him out of Provence: he submits to the king, 117. The sum given him for his treaty, 264. His cruelty in Provence, 268. Quarrels with Sully in the council; Henry IV, obliges him to ask pardon of this minister, 269, 70. Henry IV writes to him upon the dispute betwixt Du-Perron and Du-Plessis-Mornay, 357. He opposes Sully in the affair of Savoy, 371, 385. Sully justifies him, and prevents his being arrested in the affair of marshal Biron; he gives him good advice, which Epernon follows, 473, 8. Obliged to take the government of Metz from the soboles, iii, 2. Treated favourably by Henry IV, 267. Friendship for him, ibid. The affair betwixt him, Sully, and Grillon, for a colonel's commission, 365. Terminated by Sully to Henry's satisfaction, 368. His excessive haughtiness to the marquis de Crequy, 397. He commands the king's forces in Limosin, iv, 129. A

rupture betwixt him and Sully, upon account of the city of la Rochelle, 42. Summoned to the council upon the enterprise of Sedan, 81. Favours the Jesuits in opposition to the city of Metz, 112. His quarrel with Montigny, 244. Losses at play, 261. Opposes Sully with regard to the armament of Cleves, 407. Coman accuses him of being engaged in Ravaillac's conspiracy, 431. Makes an offer of his services to Sully after the death of Henry IV, v, 14. Mary of Medicis admits him into her secret council, 21. He votes for an alliance with Spain, contrary to the maxims of the last reign, 45. He unites himself with the prince of Condé, 12, 14. Quarrels with the nobles and ministers, 16. With Conchini, 19. Grants made him by the queen-regent, 23. Opposes Sully, 32. A remarkable speech of his to the president de Harlay, 183.

Epinoy, William de Melun, prince of, Sully takes the guardianship of him upon himself, ii, 340. His brother killed by Rambures, iv, 143. Sully obliges the princess of Ligne to do him justice, and makes restitution of his estates, 373.

———, Henry de Melun d', killed by Rambures: Henry IV and Sully drop that affair, iv, 143, 4.

———, Hippolita de Montmorency, princess of, brings her children to Paris, and puts them under the guardianship of Sully ii, 340. Refuses her consent to the marriage of the marquis de Cœuvres with mademoiselle de Melun, iii, 405.

———, Peter de Melun, prince of, Sully takes the guardianship of his children upon himself, ii, 340.

———, Robert de Melun, prince of, is favoured by monsieur, in opposition to Sully, i, 100.

Erard, engineer to Henry IV. Tenders an unseasonable service to the elector Palatine, iii, 171. Endeavours to turn Henry IV from the enterprise of Sedan, iv, 73. The cause of the discontent which he gives to Henry and Sully, 145.

———, the son of the former, his death greatly lamented by Sully iv, 196.

Erkel, d', the claims of this house upon the dutchy of Cleves, iv, 385. See Cleves.

Ernest, archduke of Austria, answers for the king of Spain to the proposals made by the League and the duke of Maienne, i, 321. The Spanish ambassadors and the Pope's legate offer to elect him king of France in the assembly of the states of Paris, 295.

Escoman. See Coman.

Escoubleau. See Sourdis.

Escures, Peter Fougeu d', of great use in the seizing of Biron, ii, 472, 80; and the count of Auvergne, 487, 488. Summoned to the council upon the affair of Sedan, iv, 296. Receives a gratuity from Henry IV, 340.

Esperian, commissary in Guyenne, iv, 111

Espinac, Peter de, archbishop of Lyons, his death, ii, 312.

Essards, Charlotte des, mistress to Henry IV, iv, 220. His children by her; and some circumstances relating to her life, ib. Sully disengages him from her, 233. Gratuity granted her by Henry, 342.

Essex, Robert d'Evreux, earl of, brings powerful succours to Henry IV at the siege of Rouen, i, 257. Offers to fight admiral Villars in a single duel. Beheaded by Elizabeth, ii, 452.

———, earl of, the friendship of king James for him, iii, 83.

Estampes, taken by the two kings, i, 210. Retaken by Henry IV, 156.

Estouteville, messieurs d', Sully purchases Villebon of them, v, 147.

Estrees. Sully's opinion of this family, iii, 405.

Estrees, Angelica d', abbess of Maubisson, ii, 91.

———, Francis Anibal d'. See Cœuvres.

———, Gabrielle d', called successively the Fair Gabrielle. Madam de Liancourt, marchioness of Mônceaux, and dutchess of Beaufort, i, 247. Henry's passion for her, ib. Leads his army into Picardy, that he may visit her, 298. Her motives to wish for his conversion, 371. Regrets the death of the superintendant d'O, ii, 19. Anecdotes relating to her amours with Henry IV, and her marriage with M. de Liancourt, 34. Her design of getting Franche-Comté for her son, 46. She procures the government of La-Fère for him, 36. The danger she escaped in her journey to meet the king at Amiens, 94. She favours Sully's admission into the council of finances, 119. Obtains the post of master-general of the ordnance for her father, 180. Her motives for soliciting a pardon for the duke of Mercœur, 191. Sully dissuades Henry from marrying her, 221, 224. Her plots to engage the pope in her interest, 235. She causes her son to be baptised with the ceremony of a son of France, 236. A quarrel between her and Sully upon this occasion. Henry reconciles them, 241, 2. She takes advantage of Henry's sickness to forward her design, 245. Her great weakness with respect to astrology, and the predictions that are made her, 314. An account of what passed at her separation from Henry IV at Fontainebleau, 315, 16. Her discourse to the duke and dutchess of Sully: her imprudence in speaking of herself, 317. Circumstances relating to her death; different opinions on this subject, 319. Henry's excessive grief for her death, 323. Sully endeavours to comfort him, ib. Circumstances relating to the life of the dutchess of Beaufort: her good qualities, 324. After her death, the dissolution of Henry's marriage with Margaret earnestly solicited, 342. She had been engaged in the interests of the duke of Savoy in the affair of the marquisate of Saluces, 343. Her children by Henry iv, 247.

Estrees, John Antony de, father of the Fair Gabrielle, i, 247. Made master-general of the ordnance, ii, 179. Resigns this post to the duke of

Sully; in whose favour the king declares it one of the great offices of the crown, 343.

———, Juliette Hippolita d'. See Villars.

Estienne, Saint, a Protestant gentlemen, escapes the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i, 34.

Eu, city of, taken by Henry IV, i, 203.

Europe. Reflections upon the abuses that prevail in it, with regard to war, and upon its true policy, iii, 77. Idea and strength of the different factions into which it is divided, 92. Designs of the house of Austria upon this part of the world, iv, 66, 7. The necessity of changing the political system, v, 71. Henry's views by his great design: its utility for all Europe, 77, 8. The divisions of its states and kingdoms, 98.

Eure, or Erre, d', contributes towards seizing the count of Auvergne, iii, 278.

Evora, Don Diego d', leaves Paris at the surrender of that city to Henry IV, i, 424.

F.

Fachon, Antony, the council of finances purchase the farms under his name, iii, 407.

Farms, large, Sully takes them out of the hands of foreigners and the French lords: the method and order he puts them in, ii, 272—iii, 303. His labours in this part of the government, 406, et seq.

Favas, a Protestant officer, i, 57. Present at the battle of Coutras, 160.

Faye, La, a Protestant preacher; Henry IV's answer to him, i, 329.

———, La, mentioned in the affair of Adrienne de Fresne, iv, 108.

———, La, a suppositious letter signed with this name, iv, 364.

Fayelle, governor of Chizai for the League, i, 140.

———, Bertrand de Melet de, commands the artillery at the siege of Rouen, i, 262.

Fenouillet. Sully secures the bishopric of Montpelier for him, iv, 260.

Ferdinand I, Emperor of Austria; Philip II endeavours to deprive him of the empire, ii, 287.

Ferdinand II, of Austria. King of the Romans, and of Hungary, iv, 390.

Fere, la, taken by the Protestants, i, 76. Retaken by Montignon, 114. A great convoy of Spaniards defeated near this city. Henry begins the siege of it, ii, 83. Circumstances relating to this siege: a great causeway built, 85: Henry seized with an indisposition: the place surrenders, 85.

Feria, Laurent Suares de Figueroa, duke of, plenipotentiary from Spain to the States of Paris: his plots, and the errors he commits there, i, 351.

Leaves Paris upon its surrendering to Henry IV, 424. His speech of Henry IV, and Henry's of him, ib.

Fernandes, Edward, a Portuguese banker, lends money to Henry IV. and the courtiers for play, iv, 260. The debts Henry owed him discharged, 341.

Ferrand, an officer of the chamber of accounts, prosecuted by Sully, iv, 339.

Ferrier, a Protestant minister, one of those concerned in the sedition, iii, 172.

———, du, deputed to Sully by the assembly of Chatelleraut, iv, 81.

Ferté-Milon, besieged by Henry IV, i, 347.

Fervaques, Andrea d'Allegre, countess of, endeavours to procure a marriage between her son and mademoiselle de Sully, ii, 161. Henry IV causes this marriage to be broken off. See Laval, Bethune, Margaret de.

———, William de Hautemer de Grancy, marshal of France, sent to the court of Henry III, to demand the princess Catherine, i, 56—90—94. Demands mademoiselle de Sully in marriage for M. de Laval, ii, 161. Sully's friendship for him caluminated, iii, 444. Summoned to the council upon the designed expedition to Sedan, iv, 81. Cured of a dangerous indisposition, 264. Appointed one of the members of the council of regency by Henry IV, 422.

Fescamp, taken by the League, and retaken in a very extraordinary manner by Bois-rosé; a dispute about this fort, i, 389.

Feugeres, attached to Sully, ii, 333.

Feuquieres, Pas, de, a Protestant officer, i, 125, Slain at the battle of Ivry, 221.

Feydeau, Dennis, farmer-general of the aides; his process against the city of Lyons, iv, 189.

Fiefs, masculine, and feminine, make a very important distinction for the dutchy of Cleves and the United Provinces, iv, 386. See Cleves.

Figeac, surprised and abandoned by the royalists, i, 75.

Fin, James de la, his character, ii, 456. Betrays Biron, 457. His examination and depositions, in which he impeaches Sully, 458. Continues to deceive Biron 480. Du-Perron solicits his return into France, iii, 428.

—, Prégent de la, vidamme of Chartres. See Chartres.

Finances, and Financiers. Disorder in the finances, and a new council established, i, 205. Rogueries of the financiers, and causes of the abuses in the finances, ii, 36, 37. Hatred of the financiers to Sully. See Council. Their fraudulent practices, 128. They endeavour to impose upon him, but do not succeed, 129. Sully's labours in the finances, 135, 6, 7. He undertakes to produce a reformation in the finances, 247. A fine portrait of a good manager of the finances, 249. See Mi-

nisters. The finances of France charged with excessive debts, 263, et. seq. Foreigners excluded from any share in the farms, 272. The frauds committed in the finances examined into; alterations made in the management of them, 275 et seq. The post of the superintendant of the finances established in favour of Sully, 311. Regulations made in this part of the revenue, &c. 407, 8. Against the luxury and excessive wealth of the financiers 410, 11. Officers of the finances suppressed, 417. Sully prosecutes the fraudulent financiers, 521. Luxury and magnificence of the financiers, iii, 181. Several operations of Sully in the finances, 293, 4. His great care and assiduity in the discharge of this office, 298. His labours in the finances: general abstracts of them presented by him to Henry IV, iv, 130. Other details and operations; the debts owing to the contractors acquitted, &c. 183. New regulations made by Sully in the finances, 265. Memoirs and schemes upon this subject. See Cabinet of State, 317. Methods of raising money in cases of necessity, 325. Many different affairs and details of the finances, 341. The form of government in the finances totally changed after the death of Henry IV, 467.

Flanders, the Low Countries, United Provinces. Charles IX sends an army thither: deceives the Protestants, i, 21, Catherine de Medicis endeavours to obtain the sovereignty of the Low Countries for the duke of Anjou, 89. Origin of the revolt of the United Provinces, ib. They offer themselves to the archduke Matthias; afterwards to monsieur, ib. The expedition of that prince to Flanders, 94 The treachery at Antwerp renders him odious, 101. The Flemings send fifty vessels to the assistance of Henry IV, while he is engaged in the siege of Rouen, 257. They are very useful to him at this siege, 262. Unite with France against Spain in the war of 1595, ii, 1, 39. A conversation of Henry IV, with their ambassador, 207. See Nassau, Nantes, &c. Philip II, gives these provinces as a portion with his daughter the Infanta Isabella; the archduke Albert renews the war, 294. Henry IV, succours them privately 339, 40. Albert loses the battle of Nieuport, 404. Expeditions during this war, 434. Henry IV, sends them troops secretly, 448. The defeats of Spinola's squadron and a father account of this war, 532, iii, 12. The deputies from the states general to the court of London meet with a bad reception from James, 61. Sully's conversation with those deputies, 63, 4. A proposal said to be made by Spain to the United Provinces, to unite themselves with her against France, 85, 6. Sully represents to the king of England the necessity of supporting them, 95; but the council of this prince oppose his arguments, 101, 2. See Cecil. Several conferences on this subject, 106, 7. Sully in a private conference with James, again insists upon this point, 119. Methods proposed for driving out the Spaniards from the Low Countries,

126, 27. The king of England promises to assist them, and receives their ambassadors favourably, 150. Form of the treaty in which the kings of France and England provide for their mutual defence, 136. They reject the proposals made them by Spain, 148. Beat the Spanish fleet twice, 156; and likewise the Portuguese gallies, 161. Their concern in the affair of thirty per cent. 326. They defend themselves bravely against Spain: the war very expensive to them: their obligations to France, 328. Spain seems to treat them favourably, with a view to make an agreement with England, 344, 353. Malicious report raised against Sully, accusing him with carrying on criminal correspondencies with the Flemings, 391. Debts contracted by France to them during the league, 413. Farther account of their wars with Spain, 431. The first proposals towards a peace or a truce, iv, 133. Henry IV, by advice of Sully, refuses to receive the towns in hostage, and other offers made him by the States, 135. The Dutch present the king, by Aersens, their agent, an account of the voyage they had lately made to the East-Indies, 136. The United Provinces renew the offers they had made to Henry IV, to submit themselves to the French domination, and to give certain towns in hostage, which Sully dissuades him from accepting 165. A great naval battle gained by them against the Spaniards, 168. The treaty for a suspension of arms concluded, 169, 70. A long truce negociated, 273. The ingratitude of the Flemings to Henry IV, 277. The succours he gives them, 369. Treaty for a truce, and the mediation of the kings of France and England, 370. Contains an article in favour of the prince of Epinoy, 375. The United Provinces join the confederate princes assembled at Hall upon the affair of Cleves, 402; and assist them in taking Juliers, iv, 504. That part of the great design which related to them, consisted in erecting them into a republic, v, 88, 96, 7. What forces they agree to contribute towards its execution, 107.

Flanders, ancient counts of, the family of Béthune descended from them, i, 6, iii, 429.

Fleche, La, Henry's journey thither, ii, 112. He gives that house to the Jesuits, iii, 241. His liberalities to them, iv, 105. He consents that his heart should be deposited in their chapel; a bon-mot on this occasion, 156. A gratuity granted by Henry IV to this college, 296. Another denied by Sully, 309. A conspiracy formed in this city against Henry's life, 365.

Fleix, Le, Catherine de Medicis and Henry IV, have a conference there, i, 71. The peace between this prince and monsieur concluded there, 90.

Fleury. The children of France reside in this house, iv, 117.

———, Stephen, counsellor of parliament, deputed to the states of Paris: maintains there the rights of Henry IV, to the crown of France, i,

356. Employed in the conversion of this prince, 361. Draws up the process against marshal Biron, ii, 490.

Flour, Saint, the count of Auvergne designs to seize, it, ii, 455.

Flushing, the hatred which the inhabitants of this place bear to the English, iii, 324.

Foix. Henry IV, carries the court of Catherine de Medicis to that province, i. 73.

——, house of Henry IV, has a law-suit with the family of Nevers for the estates of this house, iv, 188.

Folembray, forest of, Sully riding out there to take the air discovers the Spanish army, and gives notice of their approach to Henry IV, i, 463.

Fond, La, Sully's valet de chambre procures him the acquaintance of mademoiselle de Courteny, and persuades him to marry her, i, 109. Employed by Sully to prevail upon admiral Villars to treat with Henry IV, 266. He enters again into Sully's service after the death of Villars, ii, 57—95. Employments and gratuities bestowed upon him by Henry IV, iv, 340. The advice which Sully gives him upon his quitting the administration, v, 40.

Fontaine, La, deputed from the United Provinces to the court of London, his conversation with Sully, iii, 61.

Fontaine-Françoise, battle of, ii, 62, 3.

Fontaine-Martel, Francis de, governor of Neufchâtel for the League, i, 202. Not able to prevent the taking of Louviers, 253, 4.

Fontainebleau. Henry IV in danger of his life there, i, 387. A phantom called the Great Hunter appears there, ii, 282. Henry IV first hears of the death of the dutchess of Beaufort there. See Estrees, Gabrielle de. Gives a magnificent reception to the duke of Savoy there, 346. A dispute between du-Perron and du-Plessis at that castle, 354. Henry makes a discovery there of l'Hote's treason, iii, 214. Henry IV embellishes that place, 415. Makes frequent journies thither, 43. Orders the ceremony of the baptism of the children of France to be performed there, iv, 116. His stay there at different times, 140, 203. New embellishments made there by Henry IV, 259.

Fontange. His daughter forcibly carried away, he besieges the castle of Pierrefort, iv, 196.

Fontenay-Le-Comte, taken by the duke of Montpensier, i, 50. Besieged and retaken by Henry IV. A comical adventure which happens during this siege, 143.

Fontenelles, Guy-Eder de Beaumanoir, baron of, broke upon the wheel, ii, 497.

Fontrailles, Astruc de, has a suit at law with Henry IV for the earldom of Armagnac, ii, 190.

Force, James Nompar de Caumont, duke de La, implores a pardon for

marshal Biron of the king, ii, 494. Supports Sully's advice with regard to the expedition of Sedan, iv, 81. A quarrel between his family and that of St. Germain, 244. The services he does the king in Navarre and Béarn, 334.

——, madame de La, serves Sully with the princess Catherine, ii, 115.

Forget, Peter. See Fresne.

———, president, draws up the contract for the purchase of Monceaux for the queen, ii, 440.

———, one of Sully's enemies at court, iii, 385.

Fortifications, built or repaired by Henry IV after the peace of Vervins, ii, 262. Sums delivered out of the treasury by Sully for that purpose, iv, 180.

————, superintendance of, and of buildings given to Sully, ii, 264, 311.

Fosse, La, a contractor, for re-uniting the domaine, iv, 181.

Fosseuse, takes Mende, ii, 205.

Foucrainville, a village where the battle of Ivry was fought. See Ivry.

Fountains built or repaired in Paris by Henry IV, iv, 180.

Fouquerolles. Present at the siege of Laon, and the defeat of the great convoy, 457.

Fouquet, William. See Varenne, La.

Fourcy, an officer of the household of Henry IV, iv, 130. Purchases the superintendance of the buildings from Sully, v, 54.

Fourges, a gentleman in Sully's service, causes Gizors to be taken, i, 242. His father is seized by Sully with a boat richly laden, 256.

Foussac, Raymond de Sognac de, solicits a pardon of Henry IV for several gentlemen concerned in the rebellion, iv, 31.

Foi, Saint, a Protestant synod held in this city, ii, 9.

France. The deplorable condition to which the civil wars had reduced this kingdom, ii, 190. The true policy to be pursued by her, 207. Henry labours in conjunction with Sully to restore her to her former grandeur, 263. Policy of Philip II with respect to France, 286. What her conduct ought to be with respect to England, iii, 52. Her provinces threatened by an union between Spain and England, 86. The fertility and other advantages of this kingdom, 178. Arts and professions to be cultivated in it, 182. Sully's opinion upon the character and policy of some of her kings, 308. Opulence and plenty brought into France by Henry IV, 413. Usages and customs observed there in duels, iv, 50, et seq. A restitution of the usurpations made on its frontiers by Spain and Lorrain, 264. Reflections upon her kings, her different governments, &c., 271. Origin of her monarchy, v, 66, Advantages of her situation: judgment upon her wars and government, 68. What policy fittest to be pursued by her, 70, 71. The great designs of Henry IV considered with

respect to this kingdom, 84. Her religion, 86. And policy, 95, 6. Forces and money to be employed on this occasion, 108.

France, house of, Sully's sentiments upon the alliances of this house with those of the other princes of Europe, iii, 329.

———, children of, the ceremony of their baptism, iv, 116. Their residence at Noisy, 202. Henry's tenderness for them, ib. Their sickness in the year 1608, 255. Henry's great tenderness for them, ibid, 368. Their fondness for Sully, v, 19. Women and officers about their persons: their grief for Henry's death, ib.

France, Christiana of, second daughter of Henry IV. The ceremony of her baptism, iv, 116. Henry designs to marry her to the prince of Wales, iv, 307.

———, Elizabeth of, eldest daughter of Henry IV, her birth, ii, 550. She falls sick: recovers, iii, 85. Henry designs to marry her to the duke of Savoy, iv, 78. Ceremony of her baptism, 116. She is seized with another indisposition, 255. Henry's scheme for her marriage, 307.

———, Gaston-John-Baptiste of, third son of Henry IV, duke of Anjou, afterwards of Orleans. See Orleans, duke of.

Franche-Comté. The campaign made by Henry IV in this province reckoned superior to all others: towns taken, and other military expeditions during this campaign, ii, 58. A restitution made of the Spaniards' usurpations upon this frontier: as likewise of those of Lorrain, iv, 264.

Francheses, Don Juan-Idiaque, his correspondence with Nicholas l'Hote, iii, 210.

Francis I, king of France, the cause of his losing the battle of Pavia, ii, 85. Value of the taille under his reign, iv, 271. He assists the German princes against Charles V, 395.

Francis II, king of France, gives an uncontrolled power to the house of Guise: his death: a saying of Francis duke of Guise concerning this prince, i, 13. Value of the taille under his reign, iv, 272.

Francourt, Gervas Barbier de, chancellor to the king of Navarre, one of those who advise him to go the court of France, i, 21. Murdered at the massacre of St. Bartholomew, 36.

Franks or French, origin of their settlements and of their monarchy in Gaul, v, 65.

Frederick III, emperor. The house of Austria, through him, claims a right to the succession of Cleves, iv, 389.

French. Their character; their licentiousness among foreigners, iii, 47. Their advantages over all other European nations, 178 Their passion for duels, iv, 49. Their character with respect to government, policy, &c., 269.

Fresne, Adrienne de, supposed to be possessed by a dæmon. See Cotton.

———, Leon de, seizes Angers for the Protestant party; loses it again, and is slain there, i, 124.

Fresne, Peter Forget de, secretary of state, made one of the members of the new council of finances, 124, 128. Supports the fraudulent financiers, 109. Quarrels with Sully, ii, 172. Devoted to the interests of the dutchess of Beaufort, 238, 9, 357. Cause of his enmity to Sully, iii, 385. Favours the Jesuits on occasion of the dispute which happened between the Rochellers and father Seguiran, iv, 153. The letter he writes after the prince of Condé's flight, 363.

Friars and monks. They form themselves into a regiment at the siege of Paris, i, 235. Endeavour to assassinate Henry IV, 385. A great many religious orders established by Clement VIII, iii 173. Others who fix in France, 345.

Friesland. The prince of Orange defends this province against the Spaniards, iii, 432, 3.

Frontenac, a Protestant officer, his quarrel with Sully, i, 59, ii, 167.

Frontiers, Sully causes plans to be drawn of them, and obliges the Spaniards and the duke of Lorrain to make a restitution of those places they had usurped there, iv, 264.

Fuentes, count of, defeats the French at Dourlens, ii, 54. Opposes the conclusion of the treaty of Lyons, 401. Corresponds with marshal Biron, 512. Takes possession of the marquisate of Final, 532. Continues to cabal against France, iii, 160. Miscarries at the assembly of Coir, 339. His cabals among the Grisons, iv, 174.

G.

Gabelle. Henry IV, occasions some murmurs by his design of establishing this tax over all the kingdom, iii, 407. Sully's maxims with respect to this branch of the finances, 409, 10. Several regulations, iv, 216. Augmentations to be made in it when necessary, 323.

Gabrielle, the Fair. See Estrees.

Gadagne. See Botheon.

Gadancourt, de, defeats the forces of the League, ii, 44. Goes with Sully to London, iii, 48.

Gages for combat. See Duel.

Gaillon. Henry IV, designs to purchase this house, ii, 17.

Galati, a Swiss colonel, the saying of Henry IV, to him at the battle of Arques, i, 207.

Galerande, George de Clermont d'Amboise, de, i, 128.

Galigai, Stephen, obtains the archbishopric of Tours, iv, 474. An account of his person and character, ib.

Galigai, Leonora, comes into France in the queen's train, ii, 403. Henry IV dislikes both her and her husband, iv, 310. She marries Conchini: Henry intends to send them to Italy, which the queen will not consent

to iv, 228. See Conchini. She engages in the conspiracies against the designs and life of Henry IV, 309. Gratuities procured for her by the queen, 341. Admitted into the secret council of the queen regent, 465. Whose favourite she is, 503. She quarrels with the nobles and ministers of state, v, 40.

Gallies, armament of, fitted out by Sully; the captains of gallies sued by him, iv, 195. See Marine.

Gamache, Nicholas Rouhalt de, a Protestant lord, i, 27. Charles IX, grants him his life, 37.

Gand, viscount of. See Melun.

Gap, synod of, where the Protestants propose the doctrine that the pope is antichrist, ii, 253. The doctrine of Gap resumed in the synod of Rochelle, iv, 147.

Garde, Baron de La, endeavours to sieze Rochelle by stratagem, i, 22. Surrenders Caudebec to the prince of Parma, 284.

———, Francis Du-Jardin, called captain La, his history; his trial on occasion of Ravaillac's conspiracy, v, 191.

Gargouille, La, the origin of this fable. See Romaine.

Garmare, count of, sent by the duke of Savoy to Paris; receives a present from Henry IV, iv, 176.

Garnache, taken by Henry IV, i, 182.

———, Nemours de la, takes his mother prisoner, and is taken by her in his turn, 145, 6.

———, de Rohan, lady of La, takes her son prisoner, after having been made prisoner by him first, i, 145, 6.

Garnet, Henry, a Jesuit, what share he had in the conspiracy against the king of England, iv, 176.

Garnier, preacher to the king, the gratuity he receives, ii, 385. He assists Biron in his preparations for death, ii, 493.

Gatine, Philip de, tumult about the cross of Gatine, i, 24.

Gaucherie, La, preceptor to Henry IV, i, 11.

Gaudin. See Babou, Estrees.

Gaul. In what manner the French settled there, v, 65.

Gautiers. See League, Montpensier.

Gelais, Guy de Saint, escapes the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i, 34, 128. See Lansac.

Gendarms, of the queen, company of, Sully yields up the command of it, iii, 313.

———, of the duke of Orleans, company of created, iv, 194.

Gendre, le, one of Sully's secretaries, iv, 61.

Geneva. Sully visits that city during the war with Savoy, and frees the inhabitants from their apprehensions, ii, 393, 4. Henry IV, permits them to demolish Fort St. Catherine, ib. The duke of Savoy fails in

his attempt upon this city, which is followed by a treaty of peace through the meditation of the Swiss cantons, 533. Henry IV, takes Geneva under his protection, and forms magazines there, iv, 175. Du-Terrail, in endeavouring to surprise this city, is taken prisoner and beheaded, 377.

Genevois, prince of. See Garnache.

Geniés, Elie de Gontault de Badefou de Saint, brother-in-law to Sully, i. 461. Serves the king in the affair of the Moors revolt from Spain, iv. 382.

———, mademoiselle de Saint, marshal Biron proposes a marriage between her and his brother, i, 461. See Blancard, Saint. She is married to him, ii, 493. The two families endeavour afterwards to procure a divorce, iv, 334.

Genis, Saint, assists in seizing the two Luquisses, iv, 9.

Genlis, John d'Angest d'Ivoy, of, defeated in Flanders with the connivance of the court of France, i, 31.

George, d'Aussonville de Saint, commands the troops of Lorrain in Burgundy, his successes there, ii, 43. The part he has in the battle of Fontaine-Françoise, ii, 61.

———, court of Saint, commands the Spanish forces in Flanders, iii, 160.

Geran, de Saint, present at the battle of Aumale, i, 269. And Fontaine-Françoise, ii, 65. His friendship for Sully caluminated, iii, 390.

Gergeau, taken by the two kings, i, 194. Sully obtains the government of it, iii, 177. General assembly of the Protestants held in this city: Sully does the king great service there, iv, 257.

Germain, Saint, suburb of taken by Henry IV, at the first onset, i, 211. Fair of St. Germain, Henry IV, loses money there at play, iv, 199.

———, Saint, de-Beaunie. See Beaupré.

———, Saint, de-Clan. See Clan.

Germain-en-Laye, Saint, the friends of the two princes make an attempt to carry them off from that place, but fail, i, 49. Henry IV's buildings and embellishments there, iii, 78. Henry's residence in this castle, and his indisposition there, 33. Sends the children of France to reside in it, iv, 202.

German-horse and foot. Their march into France imprudently concerted, i, 141. Defeated at Auneau, 170. They and the Lansquenets betray Henry IV, at the battles of Arques and Ivry, 206, 220. They are slaughtered, 223. The duke of Bouillon makes a new levy of these forces, and leades them to the siege of Rouen, 258. They refuse to pursue the prince of Parma, 295.

Germany. Its ancient dukes descended from the house of Habsbourg. See Habsbourg. Henry's design advantageous for the electors and princes of Germany, ii, 309. Their true policy with regard to Spain and Austria, iii, 126. They resolve to unite with Henry, 333. Customs of

duels in Germany different from those in France, iv, 54. Henry makes new allies, 68. Debts of France to the princes and cities in Germany discharged, 179. Affairs of Germany; and the commotions that happen there, 286. Henry engages the princes in his interests, 307. They send a deputation to him from Hall, on occasion of the succession of Cleves, 402. See Cleves. They enter into a more strict alliance with France, 415. Ambassadors appointed to reside there during the execution of the great design, 422. Part of the great design which relates to its princes and circles, v, 102. Forces and money to be contributed by them, 188.

Gêvres, Lewis Potier de, secretary of state, signs the duke of Guise's treaty, ii, 26, iii, 270.

Gibraltar. The Flemings gain a naval battle over the Spaniards before this town, iv, 168.

Giez, plots with d'Entragues to release the count of Auvergne out of the Bastile, iii, 353.

Gillot, James, counsellor of the parliament, concerned in the affair of Adrienne de Frêsne, iv, 106.

———, secretary of the ordnance. The benefits he receives from Sully, and the advice he gives him at his retreat, v, 41.

Gisors. Taken by Sully; he is denied the government of it, i, 242. Henry's kindness to the poor receiver there, ii, 190.

Giversac, Mark de Cugnac, de, a Protestant gentleman of the disaffected party, iv, 31.

Givry, Anne d'Anglure de, attaches himself to Henry IV, after the death of Henry III, i, 200. Present in the battle of Aumale; his eulogium, 269. Defends Neufchâtel but indifferently, 281. Defeats the supplies which the Spaniards endeavour to throw into Laon, 457, 463. Assits at the defeats of the grand convoy, and draws the army into danger by some false advices, ib.

Givry, cardinal, lends money to Henry IV, iv, 199. Is proposed for the bishopric of Metz.

Glasgow, James de Bethune, archbishop of, recommended to Sully by the cardinal of Bourbon, i, 448. Anecdotes relating to his extraction and his life, 449. Henry IV grants him his protection, 455. Sully's letter to him upon the accession of king James iii, 29.

Glass, manufactory of, established by Henry IV, iii, 419.

Gobelin, keeper of the royal treasure, ii, 136.

Gondy, Albert de, duke of Retz. See Retz.

———, Charles of. See Belleisle.

———, Peter, cardinal of, bishop of Paris, the pope refuses to give him audience when sent to him by Henry IV, i, 360. Returns to Rome in

the name of Henry IV, 377. Is made head of the council of reason, ii, 154.

Gondy, a contractor, iv, 179. Debts to him discharged by Sully, 228.

Gontault. See Biron, Salignac, Blancard, Geniés.

Gonthier, a Jesuit: his character, iii, 192. His plots at court to ruin Sully, 355. Henry IV gives him a severe reprimand for his seditious manuer of preaching, iv, 347.

Gordes, Bertrand de Simiane de, endeavours to save the Protestants at the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i, 44.

Gourdon, de Terride, viscount of, author of the enterprise against Cahors, i, 77. Relieves Villemur, 310.

Gournay, taken by Henry IV, i, 203. This prince in danger of his life there, 385.

Government. Maxims and reflections upon government, ii, 414; iii, 125, iv, 269, 522. The great difficulty of correcting the abuses which had crept into it before his reign, iv, 189, 90.

Gradenigo, ambassador from Venice to France, ii, 423.

Grain, regulations concerning it, ii, 231; iii, 228.

Grammont, Antony I, de, a Protestant lord, i, 27. Charles IX saves him from the massacre of St. Bartholomew, 37, 59.

————, Antony II, de, Sully's friendship for him calumniated, iii, 390. The spoils he takes from the Spaniards, iv, 163.

————, Phillibert de, quits the party of Henry IV, i, 74.

Grange, Francis de la. See Montigny, Arquien.

Grange le Roi, one of the members of the new council of the finances, ii, 36. One of the deputies to the districts of the kingdom, 126. Opposes Sully in the council, 172.

Gratz, archdukes of. See Austria, Margaret, Ferdinand of.

Grave, taken by the prince of Orange, ii, 531.

Gravelines, some forces defeated there, i, 14.

Gravesend, Sully's reception there, iii, 44.

Gray, military exploits in the neighbourhood of that city, ii, 65.

Great Britain. See England.

Grec, captain, lieutenant for the league in Angers: killed there, i, 123.

Gregory XIII, Pope, rejoices at the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, i, 35.

Gregory XIV, sends troops to the assistance of the league, i, 267.

Grezin, bridge of, article of the treaty of Lyons, concerning this bridge and the pass there, ii, 401.

Grey, lord, conspires against king James, iii, 154.

Griffin. Sully sees him at Dover, ii, 428. One of the disaffected lords, iii, 55.

Grillon, Lewis Berton de, gives Henry III good counsel on the day of the barricadoes, i, 172. Henry IV writes a letter to him, after the battle of

Arques, 207. His valour at the siege of Rouen, 267. He rails at marshal Biron in the king's presence, 395. Bon-mot of his upon the superintendant d'O, ii, 19. The adventure at Charbonnieres which creates a friendship between him and Sully, iii, 366. His character, ib. An affair between him and Sully, relating to the post of colonel of the guards, 369. His whimsical humour, and arrogant manner of speaking to the king, 371.

Grillon, Thomas Berton, commandeur de, endeavours to deprive Boisrosé of Fescamp, i, 391.

Grisons, Henry IV unites them with the Venetians, ii, 529. Origin of their differences with Spain, iii, 334. They declare against Spain, 339. Enter into a league with France and the republic of Venice, iv, 174. Debts due to them by France discharged by Sully, 179. How concerned in the great design, v, 93.

Gueldres, count and counts of this name, iv, 385. Disputes concerning this succession. See Cleves.

Guesse, La, dissuades Henry III from having the duke of Guise assassinated, i, 172. Kills James Clement, 195. One of the courtiers who oppose the measures of Sully, ii, 376; iii, 270.

Guerche, George de Villequier de La, defeated at the pass of Vienne, i, 301.

Gueretry, Antony de Marazin, de, murdered at the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i, 36,

Gueret, John, a Jesuit, involved in the conspiracy of Châtel, ii, 43.

Guiche, Diana d'Andoin, countess de la, beloved by Henry IV, i, 105. Sends him forces at her own expense: the answer made by her son to this prince, ib. Henry presents her with the colours taken at the battle of Coutras, 168. Favours the amours of the princess Catherine and the count of Soissons, 401. Gives bad counsels to this princess, ii, 103. Letters from Henry IV to her, v, appendix.

———, Phillibert de La, master-general of the ordnance, mutinies at the siege of Rouen, i, 443.

Guidi, Chevalier, agent for the grand duke of Tuscany, in France, iv, 378. Henry IV attaches him to himself, 381.

Guignard, John, a Jesuit, is hanged on account of his being concerned in Châtel's conspiracy, ii, 43. An examination of this fact, ib. See Jesuits.

Guise, house of, establishes itself in France, i, 14. Their ambition and projects, 113, 172, et seq. Friendship between them and Sully, iii, 379. Sully justifies them to Henry IV, iv, 160, and does them great service, 239. Henry's aversion to that family, 245.

Guise, Catherine of Cleves, dutchess of, her character and eulogium, ii, 20. Henry grants her a pardon for the prince of Joinville, 506. Agree-

ableness of her conversation, iii, 233. Friendship between her and Sully, iv, 124. She gives Sully informations of the new court, v, 11.

Guise, Charles of Lorrain, duke of, makes his escape from the castle of Tours: a saying of Henry's concerning this escape, i, 254. His squadron defeated at Bar, 239, and afterwards at Yvetot, 286. His designs, plots, &c. with the states of Paris disconterted, 312. Sully concludes his treaty, ii, 25. He comes to court: praises of his conduct in Provence, 28. Reduction of Marseilles, and other brave actions of this duke, 31. He drives the duke d'Epernon from Provence, 117. The sum of money he receives upon this treaty, 263. His reception of the archduke at Marseilles, 293. An adventure between him and Grillon, iii, 365. Sully takes his part against Henry. iv, 163, 245. The queen-regent makes him one of the members of the new council of state, 466. He quarrels with the count of Soissons, 472. Continues attached to Sully, against all his enemies, v, 11. Gratuities which he procures from the queen-regent, 23.

Guise, Francis de Lorrain, duke of, rekindles the war between France and Spain, i, 14. He is put the head of the council and the armies, 15. In disgrace after the death of Francis II, 16. His death, his titles, 14. He forms the plan of the League.

Guise, Henry of Lorrain, duke of, Catherine de Medicis unites with him, i, 16. Charles IX opposes his marriage with Margaret of Valois, attempts to murder him, 18. Author of the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, 28. Leads the assassins to admiral de Coligny; pursues Montgomery, 36. Friendship between him and the king of Navarre, 53. Henry III hates him, 69. The weakness of his party in its beginning, 114. Accused of being indifferent about all religions, 121. Defeats the foreign forces at Auneau, 170. Day of the barricadoes, 172. Different opinions concerning his views in this enterprise, 173. His conference with Catherine de Midicis, 180. Assassinated at Blois, 179. His character; his projects, &c., ib.

Guise, Lewis of Lorrain, cardinal of: assassinated at Blois, i, 178.

Guise, mademoiselle de, Margaret of Lorrain. Solicits Henry IV in favour of her brother, ii, 20. Designed to be married to the king, 217. Her gallantries, ib. She is employed in the marriage of M. de Vendome with mademoiselle de Mercœur, iv, 245.

Guitry, John de Chaumont de, author of the scheme for carrying off the queen-mother from Saint Germaine, i, 48, 60. Negociations in Germany for the Protestant party, 159. Is partly the cause of the defeat at Auneau, 170.

Guitry, present at the siege of Laon, and the attack of the grand convoy, i, 458.

II.

Habsbourg, Raoul, or Rodolphus de, first author of the grandeur of the house of Austria, i, 5. The States conquered by him, iv, 67.

Hacqueville, de Vieuxpont d', surrenders Pontaudemer to the prince of Parma, i, 429.

Hall, assembly of, and a deputation sent to Henry IV by the German princes, iv, 402.

Hallot, Francis de Montmorency de, wounded at the siege of Rouen, i, 260. Assasinated by d'Allegre, iv, 197.

Hallot, Michael Bourrouge du, governor of Angers for Henry III, his punishment, i, 123.

Ham, taken at the first assault by the French, ii, 53.

Harlay, Achilles de, first president. His resolute reply to the duke of Guise, after the action of the barricadoes, i, 174. He draws up the process against marshal Biron, ii, 490. Opposes the return of the Jesuits, iii, 193. Appointed one of the council of the regency by Henry IV, iv, 422. A speech of his to the duke of Epernon after the assassination of that prince, v, 188.

Havre-de-Grace. Delivered up to the English by the Protestants. i, 23. Taken by the forces of Henry IV, 212. Surrenders to this prince, 433. The sum paid for its reduction, ii, 264.

Hague. Treaty between Spain and the United Provinces; and that of the mediation of the kings of France and England concluded in this place, iv, 370.

Hayes, des Gasque, a Protestant gentleman, makes his escape at the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, i, 34.

Hebert, Charles, an agent of marshal Biron, obtains the king's pardon, ii, 497. Continues his plots at Milan, iii, 160.

Heemskerk, Jacob, the Dutch vice-admiral, gains a great naval victory over the Spaniards; killed in the battle, iv, 168, 9.

Henry II. King of France. A saying of his to the prince of Navarre, i, 11. A rupture between this prince and Philip II, 13. He is killed in a tournament, 15. Value of the taille in his reign, iv, 272. He succours the German princes against Charles V, 395.

Henry III, King of France. Accused of being the author of the prince of Condé's assassination, i, 2. The discourse of this prince to Miron, his first physician, 28. He is elected king of Poland, and raises the siege of Rochelle, 47, 48. At his return from Poland, he declares war against the Huguenots; raises the siege of Livron, 52. Marries the princess of Vaudemont, ib. His aversion to monsieur, ib. He concludes the peace of 1577, out of hatred to the Guises. Rosny deputed to him by Henry

IV. Receives monsieur coolly, at his return from Flanders, 107. Reproaches Henry IV on account of Margaret of Valois, 105. Quarrels with, and is afterwards reconciled to the League: forced to unite with it, 116. Loses an opportunity of re-uniting the Low Countries to France, ib. Supports the League through timidity, 122. Beginning of the negociation for the union of the two kings, 136. A saying of his concerning the Protestants of the League, 135. Cause that the foreign troops were defeated at Auneau, 170. Bad policy of his council, 147, 148. Puts the duke of Joyeuse at the head of his army, 151. Errors committed on the day of the barricadoes, 172. Conversation between him and Sully, 177. Sully negociates with him for a union between the two kings, 186, 88. Henry IV praises him, 140. The success of his arms; he besieges Paris, 194. Is wounded at St. Cloud, and dies: the friendship he expresses for Henry IV, 195. His favourites, ii, 17. It is proposed to him to marry the princess Catherine, 295. Debts contracted by him through the League, iv, 7. Augmentation of the taille under his reign, iv, 272.

Henry IV, King of France, particulars relating to his birth, his education, and his happy qualities, 10. Titles borne successively by him, 11. His talents for war, ib. Declared chief of the Protestants party, 17. Plot between him and the duke of Alençon to strangle Catherine de Medicis, 16. He goes to reside at Rochelle, after the peace of 1570, 17. A project of marrying him to Margaret of Valois, 18. Overhears something concerning the result of the conference at Bayonne, 22. Marries Margaret, 30. Cannot be prevailed upon to leave Paris, 34. In what manner he escapes death at the massacre of St. Bartholomew, 39. Means made use of by the queen-mother to embroil him with monsieur, 53. Rejects with horror the proposals of murdering that prince: his friendship with the duke of Guise, ib. He escapes from court, 54. Is abandoned by monsieur, 55. Takes up arms again, but with little success, 57. Besieges Marmande, 60. He takes Eause by storm, 62. Other military exploits, 64. A bold action of his at Nerac, 69. Quarrels with the prince of Condé, 69. Has conferences with the queen-mother, 70, 71, 141. His gallantries with her maids of honour, ib. Takes Fleurence and Saint Emilion, 73. Takes Cahors by assault, 76. Disconcerts the prince of Condé's scheme, 83. Takes Monsegur, and shuts himself up in Nerac, 84. The friendship he conceives for Sully, 86. A conversation between him and Sully, in which he foretells what will happen to monsieur and him in Flanders, 91. His answers to the sharp letters he receives from Henry III, 106. An attempt to poison him, 112. He makes preparations for resisting the forces of the League: his indignation at the treaty of Nemours, 114. His confidence in Sully, 119. Deputies sent him from the court, 120. His true sentiments concerning religion, 121. His party worsted at Angers, 124. Fights against

the three armies of Maienne, Joyeuse, and Matignon, 132. Goes to Rochelle, 133. Takes Talmont, 140. Chizay, Sanzy, Saint-Maixent, and Fontenai, 140, 42. Takes Maillezais, Mauleon, La-Garnache, 144, 5. Loses Nyort, Parthenai, and retires to Rochelle, 147. His danger at Saint-Brix, 149. Joyeuse takes Saint-Maixent and Maillezais from him, 152. The advantages he gains over this army, 153. He wins the battle of Coutras, 161. The faults he commits, which hinder him from deriving any advantage from this victory, 163. He goes to Bearn, and there makes a discovery of the plots of the count of Soissons, 168. His grief for the death of the prince of Condé; justifies Charlotte Catherine de la Tremouille, 171. Offers his person and forces to Henry III, after the action of the barricadoes, 175. A saying of his upon the assassination of the Guises, 180. Endeavours to disconcert the designs of the chiefs of the Protestant party, falls sick at La-Mothe-Frélon, deputes Sully to Henry III, and takes Garnache and Nyort, 182; and afterwards Châtelleraut and Argenton, 185, 6. Has a conference with Henry III, after the treaty of Plessis-les-Tours, 183. Forces the duke of Maienne from Tours, 190. The great services he does Henry III, and the danger to which he exposes himself, 194. Henry III, jealous of him, ibid. He visits this prince when wounded: the marks of affection which he recives from him, 196. He asks advice from Sully, 197. Acknowledged king of France by some of the chief officers in the royalist party, and abandoned by others, 199. Retires from Paris: he surprises Meulan, takes Clermont and other cities of Normandy, 200 Gains a victory at Arques, 207. He harasses his enemies; the danger he is in at Dieppe, 208. Loses Vernon, and advances towards Paris; attacks the suburbs, but without success, 211. Takes Estampe, and several other towns, 210. Raises the siege of Meulan, 214. Fights the battle of Ivry, 217. Caresses Sully highly, and confers the order of knighthood upon him, 229. Takes Dreux, and loses Sens: causes of his not taking advantage of this victory, 233. He carries the suburbs of Paris, and lays siege to the city, 234. Raises the siege through tenderness to the inhabitants, 238. Commits an error by posting himself at Chelles, 240. Takes Clermont, 213, and pursues the prince of Parma: saves the life of the baron de Biron, 239. Goes to Cœuvres to visit the Fair Gabrielle, 242. He takes Chartres, 246, and Corbie, ib. His passion for mademoiselle d'Estrees, 247. A letter from Henry IV, to Sully, ib. The taking of Noyon, and other advantages gained over the league, 249. Defeats Sully's enterprise against the duke of Maienne, at Mante, 252. He surprises Louviers, 253. Takes possession of a part of Normandy, 254. Goes to Compeigne to visit the fair Gabrielle, 255. Favours a marriage between the viscount de Turenne and mademoiselle de Bouillon, ib. He undertakes the siege of Rouen, 257. He goes to meet the

prince of Parma, 270. A saying of his upon the death of Sixtus V, 268. Marches and encampments of this prince, 270. He defeats a squadron of the duke of Guise, 271. Battle of Aumale, in which he is wounded, 274—77. Forces the duke of Parma to repass the Somme, 278. Mutiny in his army, 280. Raises the siege of Rouen, 282. He offers the prince of Parma battle, 282. Divides his forces, 283. Joins them again, and defeats the advanced guard of his enemies, 285. Gains other advantages, 286. Greatly perplexed how to keep his army together, 294. Disbands it, and leads the Protestant troops into Picardy, 298. His secret motive for this journey, 300. He disconcerts the plots of the count of Soissons in Bearn, 303. Takes Epernay, and disbands his troops, 313: The great confidence he places in Sully, 326. Conversations between him and Sully, wherein the latter urges him to change his religion, 331. Conditions proposed to him by the league, 346, which he rejects, 348. His claim to the crown incontestible, 357. He raises the siege of Selles, ib. His ambassadors rejected at Rome, 358. He endeavours to gain the pope, and agrees to a conference with the Catholics, 359. He is present at the conference held between the Catholics and the Protestants, ib. Besieges and takes Dreux, 367. The sincerity of his conversion, 371. His conduct towards the protestants, 372. The letter he wrote to his mistress on this subject, 373. Particulars relating to his abjuration, 375. He sends a deputation to Rome, 377. The wise conduct he observes with Spain, with the league, and the Huguenots, 379. He grants a truce to the deputies from the city of Paris, 380. Receives a Spanish deputy, 383. Saying of his concerning his abjuration, 382. Bon-mot concerning La-Varenne, 384. He resumes his conferences upon religion: the Catholics jealous of the Protestants about his person, 386. He commences a treaty with admiral Villars, 388. Succours Fescamp, 392. Is received into Meaux, &c. ib. Crowned at Chartres, 396. He is received in Paris, where he pardons all his enemies, 422, 24. Particulars and bon-mots of his on this subject, 325, 326. Present made by him to Sully, 438 His reception of Villars; several cities submit to him, 439. He goes into Picardy, 443. Lays siege to Laon, ib. Prevents the Spaniards from succouring Laon, 459. His army in danger of being surprised by the Spaniards, 462. The military qualities of this prince extolled, 464. He conceals the causes he has for complaint against Bouillon, ii, 2. Deputes Sully to him, ii, 4. Makes his entry into several towns of Picardy: the success of his arms in the provinces, 13. The familiar manner in which this prince lives with his courtiers, 27. His amours with the fair Gabrielle, 35. Conversation between him and Alibour upon this subject, ib. Change which he makes in the council of finances, 36. Declares war against Spain, 39. Is wounded by Chatel, 41. First success of his arms

against Spain, 44. He goes to Burgundy, 45. His amour with the Fair Gabrielle, 46. A new council settled during his absence, 47. Conversation between him and Sully at Moret, 49. Campaign of Burgundy: battle of Fontaine-Françoise, 60. Henry returns to Paris, 66. Conditions upon which the pope grants him absolution, 68. Loses Calais, 72. He provides for the security of Picardy, 74. He reproaches the duke of Montpensier with the part he had in the criminal designs of the grandees, 75. Reproves the duke of Bouillon, 77. Is desirous of sending Sully with him, 78. Lays siege to La Fere, 84. Is seized with an indisposition, 85. Loses Arras, 86. Angry with his council, 89. Gives audience to the deputies from Provence and Languedoc, 97. Commissions Sully to break off the marriage between the princess Catherine and the count of Soissons, ib. Is angry with Sully upon this occasion, and without cause; but makes him reparation, 108. The different fortunes of his arms in several provinces, 115. After much irresolution, and many obstacles, he obliges the council of finances to receive Sully amongst them, 117. The duke of Maienne makes a treaty with him, and comes to pay him his obedience, 124. He orders Sully to visit the districts, 126. Recalls him, in consequence of some bad counsels he had received; does him justice, rewards and supports him against Sancy and the council, 130. His speech to the assembly des notables, 144. The prudent conduct he observes towards them, 153. Project for the siege of Arras, 158. The great concern he expresses for the loss of Amiens, 162. He leaves Sully at the head of the council, and departs for this expedition, 170. His labours at this siege 167. His solicitude for Sully's safety, whom he makes use of to disconcert the pernicious designs of the Protestants, ib. He bestows the post of master-general of the ordnance upon d'Estrées, 180. Retakes Amiens, 183, 4. A fine saying of Henry's with regard to marshal Biron, 184. Several military expeditions, in which he has different success, 188. The king returns to Paris, 189. He listens to negociations for a peace, 193. Suffers himself to be moved in favour of the duke of Mercœur, 195. He pacifies Brittany, 196. A bon-mot of his upon Elizabeth, the archduke, and himself, 204. A fine conversation which he holds with the English and Dutch ambassadors, upon the necessity of a peace, 206. He puts the last hand to the edict of Nantes, 211. Speaks and acts with authority to Bouillon and the Protestants, ib. Resides some time at Rennes; a curious conversation between him and Sully upon the dissolution of his marriage, 214. His extreme weakness with respect to his mistress, 222. He goes into Picardy, 225. His pleasant replies to those that harangue him, ib. He signs the peace of Vervins at Paris, 226. Henry applies himself to the affairs of government; regulations and establishments which he makes in the militia, fortifications, police, and the belles-letters, 230, 32. He

interests himself in the question of the true or false Don Sebastian, 233. His great confidence in Sully, 257. Sums paid by Henry to the chiefs and cities of the league at their treaties, 263. He takes Sully's part against d'Epernon, 268, and the grandees, 273. Talents of this prince for government, and his great knowledge in the finances, 280. Reforms the edict of Nantes, 302. His prudent conduct in the affair of Martha Brossier, 309. He makes Sully superintendant of the finances, buildings, and fortifications, and grand surveyor, 311. His excessive grief for the death of the dutchess of Beaufort, 322—24. A bon-mot of this prince's to Henry de Joyeuse, 325. Goes to Blois, 331. He writes to Margaret upon the dissolution of his marriage with her, 333. He falls in love with mademoiselle d'Entragues, 334. Is weak enough to give her a promise of marriage, 336. He gives the post of master general of the ordnance to Sully, 343. His reception of the duke of Savoy, 346. Henry supports Sully against the commissaries, and avoids the snares laid for him by the duke of Savoy in the affair of the marquisate of Saluce, 351. Is present at the dispute between the bishop of Evreux, and Du-Plessis Mornay, 354. Writes a letter to d'Epernon upon this occasion, 357. His departure for the expedition of Savoy: takes the marchioness of Verneuil along with him, 358. He is stopped by the artifices of the duke of Savoy, 363. Is married by proxy to the princess of Tuscany, 364. Relies upon Sully for the management of this war, 368. Comes to the siege of Charbonniers, 377. To that of Montmelian, and exposes his person there imprudently, 386. The reception he gives to the deputies from Geneva. 394. Ceremonies and particulars of his marriage with Mary of Medicis, ib. Ill served by the commissoners for the peace, 396. His perplexity occasioned by the intelligence between his courtiers and the duke of Savoy, 398. He concludes an advantageous treaty, and returns to Paris, 401, 2. He corrects the abuses in money and trade, &c. 409. Prohibits the wearing of gold or silver stuffs, 411, the simplicity of his own dress, ib. Prohibits likewise the transportation of gold and silver coin out of the kingdom, ib. Establishes a chamber of justice, 413. Takes a journey to Orleans, 417. Motives of his journey to Calais, 420. The magnificient titles which the grand signior gives him by his ambassadors, 423. An embassy to him from the Venetians, 423. Letters which pass between him and Elizabeth, 425. They are calumniated on this account, 426. Henry sends Sully to Dover to confer with queen Elizabeth, 428. He informs Sully of the birth of the Dauphin, 436. Orders La-Riviere to calculate his nativity, 437. Sends him to St. Germain to be nursed, 439. Procures a restitution of the isles of Pomégue, &c. from the grand duke, 440. Letters from this prince to Sully upon D'Ornano, and upon his stud of horses at Meun, 444. Endeavours to fix Biron in his allegiance, 447.

Gives him a considerable gratuity, 449. Sends him ambasssador to London, and to Switzerland, 451. Receives notice of his conspiracy against him, 455. The amusements of this prince at the Arsenal, 464. Disconcerts the designs of Biron, 466. A secret council held to determine upon the manner of arresting Bouillon, d'Auvergc, and Biron, 472. Sully dissuades Henry IV from arresting d'Epernon, 473. He shows himself in Poitou, Limosin, and Guyenne, 478. He causes Biron and Auvergne to be arrested, 487. Causes the baron de Fontenelle to be executed, and grants a pardon to all the other conspirators, 497, et seq. He endeavours, but in vain, to draw Bouillon to court, 508. Reproaches Spain on account of marshal Biron's conspiracy, 511. His adventure with the attornies, whom he causes to be whipt, 520. His journey to Calais, 529. Legitimates his son by the marchioness of Verneuil, 530. Goes to Metz, iii, 4. Banishes the Soboles, 5. Reconciles several German princes, who come to pay their respects to him there, 6. Receives the Jesuits there favourably, 7. Frees the pope from his apprehensions, on account of his armaments, 11. Continues to support the Flemings against Spain, 12. His answer to the elector palatine, who wrote to him in favour of Bouillon, 15. His grief for the death of queen Elizabeth, 18. His conversation with Sully on this subject, 20. The private and public instructions which he gives to Sully, 24. Henry dangerously ill at Fontainebleau: his great confidence in Sully: he recovers, 26. His letters to the king and queen of England, 35. This prince's reasons for taking the part of the English clergy, 98. Henry caresses Sully highly at his return from London, 146. Praises him in public, and justifies him against the malicious aspersions of the count of Soissons, 149. Secret conversations on the subject of this embassy, 151. Remonstrances made by Sully to Henry IV upon the abuses of small edicts, 162. He retracts a grant which he had been surprised into by the count of Soissons, 163. Defends Sully against the resentment of this prince and the marchioness of Verneuil, 167. Henry visits Normandy, 170. Is taken ill at Rouen, 171. New discontent given by Bouillon and the Protestants, ib. He gives the government of Poitou to Sully, 174. Establishes silk manufactures, contrary to the advice of Sully, 177. et seq. His great expenses at play, for his mistresses, &c., 185. Sends a colony to Canada, ib. A fine answer made by Henry to the nuncio on the death of the dutchess of Bar, 189. He recals the Jesuits, notwithstanding all the reasons urged by Sully against it, 192, 202. He gives them La-Fléche, 204. His stay at Chantilly, 205. He discovers the treason of l'Hote, and causes him to be pursued, 212. His treatment of Villeroi, 220, 21. Henry sends his cardinals to the conclave, 224. Makes frequent visits to Sully at the Arsenal, his conversation with him upon his domestic disquiets, 226. He is offended with Sully for his resolute opposition to him, 227. Makes

him an apology for it, 229. Confides to him his uneasiness, occasioned by the queen and the marchioness of Verneuil, 230. Writes a letter to the marchioness full of reproaches, ib. Demands from her the promise of marriage, which she refuses, 232. The faults he attributes to the queen, 233. Cannot follow Sully's advice, 236. And prevails upon him to try gentle methods, 237. Cannot resolve to act with authority in his domestic affairs, 242. His weakness with regard to madam de Verneuil, 246. His health endangered by these domestic troubles, 250. Favours queen Margaret in her process for her mother's estates, 252. Labours to prevent the plots of the count of Auvergne with Spain and the Protestants against him, 262, et seq. Projects with Sully a journey to the south of France, which the courtiers endeavour to dissuade him from, 256, 7. Calumnies spread against him, 258. He sends Sully into Poitou, ib. Good consequences of this journey, 264. Henry gets the promise of marriage out of the hands of madame de Verneuil, 270. He causes the count d'Auvergne to be arrested, 279; his reply to the countess d'Auvergne, ib. Likewise d'Entragues and the marchioness de Verneuil, ib. Cannot resolve to banish the marchioness; particulars relating to this affair, 284. The gallantries of this prince, and the dangers he runs by visiting his mistresses, 288. Deposits his money in the Bastile; his speech in full council upon this occasion, 29, 1, 2. Establishes a chamber justice, 294. Other operations in the finances, 296, et seq., and regulations in the militia, 305. The royal hospital for disabled soldiers, 306. Talents of this prince for government, 308. His too favourable maxims for war, ib. He unseasonably prohibits any commerce with Spain, 310. He repairs this error by concluding a treaty of commerce, 314. He continues secretly to support the United Provinces, 320. His discourse with the constable of Castile, upon the agreement between Spain and England; and with Sully, upon the same subject, 326. His reception of this ambassador, 332. The part he takes in the affair of the Valtoline, 334. He gets possession again of the bridge of Avignon, 342. Purchases the earldom of St. Paul from the count of Soissons, 343. Procures his natural son to be received into the order of Malta, 345. His buildings for his manufactures, ib. The religious orders he allows to be stablished in France, ib. He renews his correspondence with the marchioness of Verneuil: pardons the counts of Auvergne and d'Entragues, contrary to Sully's advice, 350. Quarrels again with the queen, 351. Permits the Jesuits to demolish the pyramid, 353. Does Sully justice in the great dispute he has with father Cotton, and reconciles them, 355, 363. He discovers his error, and excuses himself, 383. The interesting conversation between them, 384. His credulity in believing false reports, 397. He places all his confidence in Sully, and gives him the first place in his friendship, 397. Justifies him against the slanders of the courtiers, 398.

Quarrels with him, and is again reconciled, 399. Concludes a marriage between mademoiselle de Sully and the duke of Rohan, 400. Gratuities and favours which he bestows upon Sully, 401. Denies him others, which he had solicited for his brother and son-in-law, 401, 2. Orders Sully to demand mademoiselle de Melun in marriage for the marquis de Cœuvres, 402. An account of the debts of the state at his accession to the throne, 413. His donations to several persons, 418. He established his silk manufactures, 419. Becomes a mediator between the princes of Europe; present made by him to them, 420. Has the principal share in the election of pope Leo XI and pope Paul V, 424. Gives orders to Spinola, who is passing to Flanders, 431. Dissatisfied with his subjects who serve in the archduke's army, 433. Causes some prizes taken from Spain to be restored, 434. His politics disapproved by his council, 435. Thought to have a design of making himself emperor, 436. Receives notice of some seditious plots against him, 439. His uneasiness about the assembly of Protestants held at Châtelleraut, and sends Sully thither, 440. Attacked by a fit of the gout at Saint-Germain, 444. Receives some information against the assembly at Châtelleraut, 452. Letters from him to Sully, 454. He causes the Luquisses to be arrested, iv, 8. Is very attentive to the motions of the Protestant assembly, 9. Complies too much with the desires of Lesdiguieres in the affair of Orange and Blaccons, 21. The reception he gives Sully at his return, 27. Makes preparations for his journey into the southern provinces of France, 29. The rout he takes; he seizes several fortresses belonging to the duke of Bouillon, 32, 36. He causes the chamber *des grand jours* to be held by Sully in Limosin, and returns to Paris, 37. He decides in favour of Sully, in his dispute with the count of Soisson, 39. His obliging behaviour to the deputies from Rochelle, 41. He causes the castle of Usson to be dismantled, 45. His too great indulgence for duels; his blameable notion concerning the predetermination of the last moment, 55. Several instances of good fortune which he had met with, 56. John de Lisle attempts to stab him; he pardons him, ibid. Henry's engaging and tender behaviour to his queen, 61. His conversation with Sully relating to the means of humbling the house of Austria, 66. Henry's intention of taking Sedan, 69. Creates Sully duke and peer, and honours the entertainment he makes on this occasion with his presence, 70. His irresolution with regard to the affair of Sedan, 71. He is at length determined by Sully, 75, whom he orders to write first to Bouillon, 78. His departure and the rout he takes, 85. Consents to the conference proposed by Bouillon, 89, and concludes a treaty unknown to Sully, 91. A saying of Henry upon the reduction of Sedan, 95. He supports the city of Metz against the Jesuits, 104, 105. His donations to them at Flèche, 105. He blames father Cotton in the affair of Adrienne de Fresne, 106. Refuses to publish the

council of Trent, 110. He restrains the Protestants also, and terminates the differences between them and the Catholics at Rochelle, 113. Disgusted with the family of Rohan, 112. Escapes drowning at Neuilly, 117. Gratuities granted by him to Sully and other persons, 118. Regulations for the finances, 119. His expenses at play, 123, for the public works, ib. A conversation between him and Sully, and some of the courtiers, upon different subjects, 129. He asks Sully's advice concerning the affairs of Flanders, 135. The calm and peaceable life of this prince, 137. He takes the seals from Bellievre and gives them to Sillery, 139. His tenderness for his children, 140. His fondness for hunting, 141. His friendship and esteem for Sully, 142. He puts a stop to the prosecutions of the young d'Epinoy, 143. Quarrels with Sully, but is immediately after reconciled with him, 145. Employs him in the synod of Rochelle, 153, 155. A conversation between him and Sully, concerning the plots of the court in favour of Spain, 161. He consents, that after his death, his heart should be carried to La-Flèche, a smart saying on this occasion, 156. His hatred of the family of Lorrain: Sully re-assures him, and they labour together to suppress these cabals, 160. He causes some prizes taken from Spain to be restored, 163. Follows Sully's advice to refuse the offer made him by the United Provinces to submit themselves to the dominion of the French, 164. The part he takes in the treaty for a truce between those provinces and Spain, 169. Causes the fort of Rebuy to be demolished, and supports the Grisons against Spain, 174. Henry protects the republic of Geneva, 175, and the Italian princes, 176. Reconciles pope Paul V and the Venetians, 177. Re-unites the finances of Navarre to those of France, and pays the debts of the nation, 178. Punishes the disobedience of the parliaments of Toulouse and Dijon, 182. A bon-mot of his upon l'Argentier, a farmer of the revenue, 187. A law-suit between him and the house of Gonzague for the estates of the houses of Foix and Albret, 188. Assists Fontange in the siege of Pierrefort, 196. His great care to bestow public employments upon men of merit, 199. Gratuities to several persons, debts discharged, and his losses at play, ib. His expenses in buildings and manufactures, 130. Henry's frequent journies to his several palaces, his indisposition, his tenderness for his children sometimes indiscreet, 201. Quarrels between him, the queen, and marchioness of Verneuil, 203. He restores Sedan to the duke of Bouillon, 204. His occupations and amusements, 207. Proposes to Sully a marriage between the marquis of Rosny and mademoiselle de Crequey, 209. Makes him great offers upon condition that he will embrace the Roman Catholic religion, 213. He re-assures him against the artifices of his enemies, 218. The great wisdom of this prince in dissipating factions, 219. His amours and mistresses, 220, 21. A long conversation upon political and domestic

plots formed against him in the queen's household, by the family of the marchionesss of Verneuil, &c., 222. His respect for the queen, 231. The friendship he shows Sully upon this occasion, ib. Employs him in the cabals of court, 232. Banishes the prince of Joinville for his gallantries with madam de Verneuil, with whom he quarrels, and is afterwards reconciled, 234. Joinville has another intrigue with madame de Moret, 237. He disgraces Sommerive for an intrigue with the same lady, 238, and d'Eguillon for procuring Balagny to be assassinated, 242. Other quarrels in his court, occasioned by his easiness in pardoning duels, 244. He obliges the family of Mercœur to accomplish the marriage between mademoiselle de Mercœur, and the duke of Vendome, 245. Receives informations against the house of Guise and a new faction, 247. Sends Sully to the assembly of Protestants at Gergeau, 251: Henry's residence in his several palaces, the private life and indispositions of this prince, his tenderness for his children, 255, 6. He gives the bishopric of Metz to the duke of Verneuil, ibid. His expenses for play, 260. He relieves the people after the rising of the Loire, 261, 2. Disposes of the bishoprics according to Sully's recommendation. 263. Obliges Spain and the duke of Lorrain to make restitution of their usurpations upon his frontiers, 264. Regulations in the finances, 265. Economy and diminution of the imposts under his reign, 272. His reception of the duke of Mantua, 273. The part he has in the agreement between Spain and the United Provinces, 274. A pleasant saying of his to Don Pedro, ib. He follows Sully's advice in this affair, 275. He obliges Spain to do him justice with regard to the boundaries of Navarre and Bearn, 280. Refuses to have any hand in the revolt of the Moors, 281. He stays two days at the Arsenal, 291. He accuses Sully with indiscretion concerning the secrets revealed to him by father Cotton, 295. Goes to the Arsenal to communicate his uneasiness to Sully, 301 et seq. Sully endeavours to remove his apprehensions, advises him, excuses the queen, and labours to make her alter her conduct, 311. Henry hastens the execution of his great designs, 316, and employs himself with Sully in composing a cabinet of state, ib. Conversation between them upon the several methods of raising money, 322. Of the droit annuel, 323. Design of restoring the office of the ancient Roman censor, 327. Of destroying all tricks and unfair practices in the law, and other pieces of the cabinet of state, 328. Another conversation upon this subject, 332. Henry's character of his three ministers, 336. Debts discharged, and gratuities and expenses of this prince in play, buildings, &c, 340. Edict against fraudulent bankrupts and duels, 343. The prince of Condé and the king complain of each other, 350; high words passed between them on account of the princess of Condé, 351. Plots against Henry, for which his passion for that princess is the pre-

tence. Sully gives him notice of the prince's designs, 353. Henry's grief for the prince's flight, 355. False informations given him against the Protestants, 364. Conspiracay against his person at La-Fleche, 366. Henry's journeys to his several palaces, 368. Treaty of the mediation of the kings of France and England, between Spain and the United Provinces, 370, Henry protects the rights of the prince of Epinoy, 373. He objects to the title of sovereign lord of Sedan assumed by the duke of Bouillon, 376. He consoles the queen for the death of the grand duke, 378. Contracts a friendship with his successor, 380. Permits the grand signior to have a resident at Marseilles, 383. A conversation between Henry and Sully upon the death of the duke of Cleves, &c, 384. The emperor Rodolphus seeks his friendship, 390. The plots of the courtiers to dissuade him from his great design, 401. The princes of Germany send a deputation to him, 402. He suffers himself to be prejudiced against the counsels given him by Sully: another conversation between them 407. The sentiments with which he endeavours to inspire the duke of Vendome for Sully, 412. Preparations made for the execution of the great design, 418. He talks of his design indiscreetly before his courtiers, 417. Conversations and letters between him and Sully: other dispositions and preparations for the great design, 418. Letter to the archduke on this subject, 424. Conspiracy against this prince, 425. Pretended prognostics and Henry's own foreknowledge of his approaching death: conversations between him and Sully, and other particulars, 426. Information of a conspiracy given by Schomberg, and the affair of La Coman, 432. Assists at the coronation of the queen, 437. Malicious reports spread against him concerning his motives for making war, 438. His assassination, 441. Particulars relating to him a few days before his death, 442, &c. Sully complains of the neglect that was shown in prosecuting them, 450. The character of Henry IV, ib. The ten wishes of this prince, 453. His death greatly regretted, 459. Different sentiments of the courtiers upon his loss, 462. The new council governed by maxims of policy very different from his, 467. The great design broken by his death, 476. The ingratitude of the court and the ministers with respect to him, 482. The different opinions concerning the authors, and the causes of his assassination examined into, v, 159.

Henrichemont, principality of, purchased by Sully, v, 53.

Henrichmont, Maximilian III, Francis de Bethune, prince of, grandson to Sully, v, 136.

Heran, de Saint, de Montmoren, refuses to obey the orders of Charles IX, at the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, i, 44.

Hertray, René de Saint Dennis de, takes possession of Alençon for the king of Navarre, i, 54.

Hesse, William Landgrave of, visits Henry IV, at Metz, iii, 7. Sully accused of holding a criminal correspondence with him, 391. Caumartin prejudices him against the duke of Bouillon; iv, 6. Gains France some allies in Germany, 128. His claim to the succession of Cleves, 388. Joins France against Austria, v, 102.

Heudicourt, one of the members of the council of finances, ii, 47.

Heures, d', present at the defeat of the great convoy before Laon, i, 459. Follows Henry IV, into Franche-Comte, ii, 65.

Holland. See Flanders. Manufactory for linen cloth in Paris of the same kind as that made in Holland, iv, 200.

Holstein, duke of, satisfaction which he gives Henry IV, iii, 421.

Honfleur, taken from the League by the Royalists, i, 214.

Honorio, brother, a Capuchin friar, gives Henry IV, information of a conspiracy against his life, ii, 339.

Honorius, emperor of the West, v, 65.

Horn, prince of, beheaded at Brussels, i, 220.

Hortes, viscount of, refuses to obey the orders of Charles IX, to massacre the Huguenots, i, 44.

Hospital, Michael de l', chancellor, Charles IX, takes the seals from him, i, 23.

Hospital of the bridge of Avignon, serving brothers of, misapply the funds destined for its repairs, iii, 241.

Hospitals, built, or repaired by Henry IV, iii, 415.

Hote, Nicholas l', one of Villeroi's secretaries, iii, 210. An account of his treason, 211, et seq.

Höstrate yielded to the prince of Orange, ii, 531.

Hottoman, Henry's agent in Germany, iv, 391.

Houdan. The duke of Maienne fails in his attempt upon this place, i, 250.

Howard, lord, admiral of England, receives the count d'Aremberg, iii, 44. Serves the Spanish faction against Sully, 54.

Huberson, Jean, and her cousin, discover the conspiracy against Henry IV, carried on at La Flèche, iv, 366.

Huet, Sully resides in this castle, i, 146.

Hugh-Capet. Sully's opinion of this king, iv, 293.

Hume, lord, engaged in the Spanish faction at London, iii, 54. Conducts Sully to Greenwich, 91, 115.

Humieres, Charles d', brings succours to the duke of Maienne after the battle of Ivry, i, 225, He forces the Spanish intrenchments at Ham, and is slain there, ii, 53. His eulogium, 54.

Hungary. The emperor Rhodolph makes war against that people, ii, 340. and against the Turks, 404. Further account of this war, 534, 5.

J.

Jacob, Francis a Jesuit involved in the prosecution against Châtel, ii, 43.
Jacob or Jacop, agent and commissioner from the duke of Savoy, in the affair of the marquisate of Saluces. Comes to compliment Henry and Sully. Discontented with the queen-regent. See Saluces, Savoy.
Jacome, Saint, taken by Henry IV, ii, 368.
James king of England, the great importance of securing his friendship, iii, 19. His accession to the throne of England notified to France, 29. The design of Sully's embassy to him, 30. Is prejudiced against the count of Beaumont, 34, and against Henry IV, and Sully: his character and conduct, 56. The French Protestants endeavour to engage his protection, 66. He sends to compliment Sully upon his arrival, 67. Gives him his first audience, honours which he pays him, and the public conversation between them, 71. His invective against the king of Spain, and his council, 74. Praises Henry IV, ibid. His passion for hunting, 75. The terror and hatred with which a plot of the Jesuits inspire him against Spain and the archdukes, 79. He gives a second audience to Sully, who gains his approbation of Henry's designs upon Spain and the United Provinces, 90. He promises not to support Bouillon, 96. Complains of Henry's having supported the English priests, 98. Reciprocal civilities between the pope and him, 99. Dissatisfied with the count d'Aremberg and the Spaniards, 103. Invites Sully to dine with him, 151. Promises to give satisfaction for the piracies of the English, 155. Gives Sully a third audience, and has a long conversation with him, 105. Takes Sully's part against his ministers, 130, and signs the form of a treaty, 138. Sully has his audience of leave; the obliging behaviour of James to him, and the promises he makes him, 141. Reciprocal presents made by the king and Sully to each other, 143, 4. The fears of this prince upon the arrival of the Spanish ambassador at London, 147. His clemency in punishing the conspirators against his life, 154. New troubles in his court: he banishes the Jesuits from his dominions, ib. Sends the treaty signed to Sully, 155. A scheme laid by the Pope, Spain, and the Jesuits to dethrone him, 206. Takes advantage of the prohibition of commerce between France and Spain, 311, and afterwards endeavours to compose this difference, 312. Is prevailed upon to make an agreement with Spain contrary to his treaty with Henry, 323. Gives the name of Great Britain to his dominions: the bad consequences of his pacific dispositions, 324. He procures a treaty between Spain and Flanders, 324. He again seeks the assistance of Henry and Sully against Spain, 435. His friendship for Sully, 437. He discovers and punishes a conspiracy against his life, iv, 136, 176. His bad policy in endeavouring to procure

a treaty for a suspension of arms, and a truce between Spain and the United Provinces, 178. He obliges his subjects to take a new oath of fidelity to him, 176. Treaty of mediation of him and Henry between Spain and the United Provinces, 371. Part of the great design relating to him. See Political design.

James, company of, serves as the forlorn hope in the battle of Ivry, and is distinguished there, i, 218, 228.

Jard, abbey of, Sully disposes of it, v, 54.

Jarnac, battle of, i, 11.

Ibarra D. Diego d', one of the Spanish plenipotentiaries to the states of Paris: afterwards plenipotentiary from Spain and Flanders, iv, 170.

Jeannin, René, makes proposals from the league to Henry IV, i, 296. Memorial of the demands and offers he makes to Spain from the league likewise, 318. He proposes conditions to Henry, 345, 9. The oath which he is accused of having made to the league against this prince, 361. Obliged to give up Leon to him, ii, 12. His advice to the duke of Maienne, 14. Employed in the composition of the edict of Nantes, 210. Assists in Henry's name at the conference of Boulogne, 234. Made secretary for foreign affairs, 257. Allows an article in the edict of Nantes, which he is obliged to alter, 305. One of the commissioners for the treaty of Lyons, 395. Serves the king in Biron's conspiracy, 480. Solicits him in favour of the Jesuits, iii, 8, 192. His service in Flanders in the affair of the suspension of arms, 167. Concludes the treaty of truce, and that of the mediation of the kings of France and England, 370. Serves Sully with the archduke in the prince of Epinoy's affairs, 373. Is appointed ambassador to Flanders and England, 422. Mary de Medicis makes him one of her secret council, 465. He is put at the head of the finances, 467. Joins Conchini against Sully, 487. Is used ill by the duke of Nevers and other lords, iv, 14.

Jesuits, concerned in the plot of Barriere, i, 385. Their process against the University and the curates of Paris, 447. Involved in the process against Châtel, and banished, ii, 42. The pope requires Henry to recal them, 69. The council rejects their petition, 234. Henry's kindness to them, and the promises he makes them at Metz, iii, 7. Solicitations of d'Ossat, &c. in their favour, 7. Commotions raised by them in England in the affair of the English priests, 97. King James's aversion to them, 142. The affair of their re-establishment discussed, 192, 197. They solicit Sully's protection, 203. Henry gives them the college of La-Flèche, 204. They foment disputes between the Catholics and the Protestants among the Grisons, 336. Obtain leave to demolish the pyramid: their hatred to Sully, and other particulars, 353, 4. A great quarrel between them and Sully on account of the college of Poitiers, 358. Their cabals with the courtiers against Sully, 355. They endeavour in vain to settle

in Metz, iv, 104. They endeavour to get father Seguiran a preacher, received into Rochelle, 153. Henry IV supports their college of Poitiers, 156. They cabal at court and throughout the kingdom in favour of Spain, 156. The Venetians refuse to let them settle in their dominions. They establish themselves in Bearn, 258. Involved in the conspiracy of La-Fleche, 367. They serve the emperor Rodolphus in the cruelties he exercises upon the Protestants of Germany, 413. Sully insinuates that they were accomplices in the assassination of Henry IV, 450. They endeavour to ruin this minister. The queen-regent calls them into her secret council. See Cotton. They unite with the pope and Spain against the Protestants, 482. They endeavour to dissaude the council from the expedition of Juliers, 504. Accused of having been concerned in the parricide committed on the person of Henry IV, 163.

If, isle and castle of, proceedings relating to them, ii, 440.

Ignatius, Armand, provincial of the Jesuits, Henry IV's kindness to him at Metz, ii, 7. He endeavours to procure the re-establishment of the society in France, iii, 192. An imprudent letter written to him by father Cotton, iv, 295.

Imbercourt, taken by assault, ii, 87.

Incarville, comptroller-general of the finances, ii, 48, 84; iii, 408.

Inchi, Charles de Guare d', receives monsieur into Cambray, monsieur's treachery towards him, i, 95.

Infanta of Spain, Anne-Marie-Mauricette of Austria, her birth, ii, 440. Plots in the queen's household to marry her to the dauphin, contrary to Henry's design, iv, 306.

Infanta of Spain, Clara-Eugenia of Austria, the scheme of marrying her to the cardinal of Bourbon rendered ineffectual by the French lords, i, 353.

Infanta of Spain, Isabella of Austria, made governess of the Low Countries, ii, 294.

Invalid soldiers, an establishment made for them, iii, 305.

Joannani, agent from the grand duke of Tuscany for the marriage of Mary de Medicis with Henry IV, ii, 338.

Joigny, Clermont Tonniere, unsuccessful in an attempt upon this place, i, 244.

Joinville, Claude de Lorrain, prince of, cabals with Spain, ii, 507. Disgraced for his gallantries with the marchioness of Verneuil and the countess of Moret, iv, 237. Quarrels with the prince of Conty, 244. Grants which he procures from the queen-regent, v, 23.

Jon, Du, one of Henry IV's courtiers, in, 455. His advice to Sully after the death of that prince, ib.

Jousseaume, receiver-general of the finances, hanged, ii, 521.

Joyeuse, Anne duke of, marshal of France, heads the royalist army against the Protestants, i, 114, 116. Leads the army of Henry III and the League into Guyenne, 130. Marches against Henry IV into Poitou, 151. He takes St. Maixant, Maillezais, &c., 152. An instance of his generosity, 154. Defeated and slain at the battle of Coutras, 163.

———, Antony Scipio, knight of Malta, afterwards duke of, his party in Provence, i, 307. Besieges Villemur, 308. Is defeated there, and drowned in the Tarn, 312.

Joyeuse, Claude de. See St. Sauveur.

———, Francis de, cardinal, endeavours to justify, at Rome, the assassination of the Guises, i, 179. Is sent by the duke of Maienne into Spain, 391. Commissioned by the pope to dissolve the marriage of Henry IV with Margaret de Valois, ii, 333. Advises Henry to give the government of Poitou to Sully, iii, 174. Is sent to Rome to the conclave, 224. Sully confers with him upon the means of pacifying the two religions, iv, 102. Is proxy for Paul V at the baptism of the dauphin, 116. Employed by Henry to compose the differences between the pope and the Venetians, 177. He prejudices Henry against Sully in the affair of the armament of Cleves, 407. Is appointed by that prince one of the council of the regency, 422. Mary de Medicis makes him one of the public council, 466.

———, William de, i, 146.

———, Henry, count of Bouchage, duke of, one of Henry III's favourites, ii, 18. Concludes a treaty with Henry IV, 87. Sum paid him at his treaty, 264. He marries his daughter to the duke of Montpensier; a smart saying of Henry's upon him, ii, 325. His death, ib.

———, Henrietta-Catherine de, marries the duke of Montpensier, ii, 325.

Ireland, the rebels there subdued, ii, 396.

Is, an estate purchased by Sully, v, 53.

Isle-Adam, L', taken by the royalist army, i, 194.

Issot, Fort, built on the Scheld by the Spaniards, iii, 325.

Issoire, a victory gained there by Henry IV's party, i, 230.

Italy. Part of the great design relating to it, iii, 125; v, 81, 104. Henry IV gains the friendship of the princes of Italy, 333. The debts due by France to Italy discharged by Sully, iv, 179. Comedians sent for from Italy by Henry IV, 206. The princes and states of Italy unite with Henry against the house of Austria, 307.

Juliers, dutchy and dukes of this name, a dispute concerning the succession to it, iv, 385. Siege and reduction of this place by the confederate princes, 504.

Jumeaux, governor of Vendome, v, 9.

Jurisdictions. Offices to be created in them upon occasion, iv, 326.

Ivry, battle of, phenomena which preceded it, i, 215. Errors committed there, 217.
Juvigny, or Divigny, one of Sully's enemies iii, 389.

K.

Kintore, one of the Scotch faction at London, iii, 54. Deputed by the count of Aremberg, 104. Favours the French interest, 152.
Knighthood, order of, intended to be instituted by Henry IV, iv, 334.

L.

Lagny, taken by the prince of Parma, i, 237.
Lambert, sent to France by the prince of Orange, his artifices, iv, 277.
Landereau, Charles Rouhaut du, attempts to surprise La Rochelle, i, 22.
Langlois, sheriff of Paris, contributes to get Henry IV received into that city, i, 424. Agent for Margaret de Valois in the dissolution of her marriage with Henry IV, ii, 333.
Langoiran, de Montferrand de, makes his escape at the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i, 33. Sully takes his part against Bouillon, 59.
Languedoc. Deputies from this province to Henry IV, ii, 97. Henry transfers the states to the Lower Languedoc, 445.
Lansac, the younger, attempts to surprise Rochelle, i, 22.
Lansquenets. See under German horse.
Laon. Besieged by Henry IV, i, 456. The succours which Maienne endeavours to throw into this place, defeated, 461. The Spaniards unable to prevent its being taken, 459, 467.
Large, baron de La, defeats a detachment of the duke of Aumale's army, i, 249.
Larry, Saint. See Bellegarde, Thermes.
Laval, taken by Henry IV's party from the League, i, 212.
Laval, Charlotte de, first wife to the admiral Coligny, i, 19.
——, Guy de. Son of Dandelot. See Andelot.
——, Guy, count of. Proposed for a husband to mademoiselle de Sully, ii, 161; iii, 171. This marriage broken off, 400.
——, Urbain de. See Bois-Dauphin.
Lavardin. John de Beaumanhoir de, marshal of France, i, 57. Takes Sully's part against Frontenac and Bouillon, 59. He and La-Devese propose a combat of six against six, 65. He quits the party of Henry IV, 74. A trick played him by Chicot, 115. Forced to abandon the post of Cou-

tras, 159. Commands the king's forces in Burgundy, 496. Made governor of Perche, and Maienne, iii, 175.

Laurens. Andrew du, physician to Henry IV, ii, 320; iv. 44.

League, the, the cause of the great power of the Guises, i, 70. Raise the standard of rebellion, 113. Its origin: weak beginnings: and its progress, 114. The heads of the League assemble at Châalon, 116. Oblige Henry III to join them, and dispose of his troops as they please, ib. They send three armies against Henry IV, 130. Towns and fortresses which they take and lose, 141, 151. They defeat the foreign forces at Auneau, 170. The day of the barricadoes, 172. The weakness and the errors of this prince's conduct give them courage, and they oblige him to grant all their demands, 178. The success of the arms of the two kings against them, 194. And of Henry IV after the death of Henry III, 209. Sixtus V foretells their defeat, ib. They are unsuccessful at Meulan, and take Pontoise, 214. Seize Rouen, 216. Beaten at Noyon: other losses sustained by them, 249. Henry deprives them of great part of Normandy, 254. They send troops to the siege of Rouen, 269. Gain the battle of Craon, 301. Their distrust of one another, 311. Sully negociates with them for Henry IV, 339. The conditions which they want to impose upon the king, 346. They disagree with the states of Paris, 352. Their plots, and the oath they take against Henry IV, 361. They send a deputation to this prince, 371. They employ some monks to murder Henry, 385. They retire to Soissons at the reduction of Paris, 425. They support the Jesuits in their process against the University, &c., 448. Their partizans for the duke of Maienne in Burgundy defeated, ii, 15. They oppose the declaration of war against Spain, 40. Are driven out of Dijon and Talan, 58. Defeated with the Spaniards at Fontaine-Françoise, 62. They submit to Henry IV, 86. Their partizans set Martha Brossiere to work, 309. They murmur at Sully's embassy to London, iii, 20. Their motives for hating Sully, 157. The partizans of the League cabal with the Spanish ambassador against the power of Henry, and his designs, 149. The aversion of Henry to the policy and favourers of the League, 272. They labour to dissuade him from his great designs, 392.

Lennox, earl of, one of the Scotch faction at London, iii, 54, 86. Sully makes him presents, 143.

Lenoncourt, Philip, cardinal of, deputed to the court of Henry IV, i, 120, 138. Assists at the conferences between Catherine de Medicis and the duke of Guise, 178.

Leo X, pope, his conduct blamed by Sully, iv, 101.

Leo XI, pope, great rejoicing in France for his advancement to the pontificate: his death, iii, 424.

Leopold, archduke of Austria. The emperor Rodolphus gives him the in-

vestiture of Cleves: his proceeding with Henry IV upon this affair, iv. 390. See Cleves.

Lepanto, battle of, i, 12.

Lecques, Antony du Pleix de, succours Villemur, i, 310.

Lerma, duke of, favourite of Philip III, iii, 75.

Lesdiguieres, Francis de Bonne de, constable, commands the forces of Henry IV in Dauphiné, i, 133. Disconcerts the designs of Spain and the duke of Savoy in Provence, 307. He drives the duke of Epernon from Provence, ii, 31. Other exploits against the duke of Savoy and Epernon, 117. Informs Henry IV of the duke of Savoy's designs, 345. Serves during the campaign of Savoy, 379. Is made marshal of France, and governor of Piémont, 391. Accused of corresponding with Bouillon, iii, 258. Thanks Sully for procuring the post of colonel of the guards for the marquis of Crequy, 409. His deputies excluded from the assembly of Châtelleraut, 463. The rage with which he acts against Blaccons in the affair of Orange, iv, 22. Bouillon's jealousy of him, 55. His plots at Châtelleraut disconcerted by Sully, 61. Henry IV is apprehensive of his designs, 75, 151. His conferences with the heads of the Protestants under him suspected, 186. Henry IV resolves to give him the command of the army in Italy, 414. Villeroi rails at him in the queen-regent's council, and Sully defends him, v, 29.

Leucate. The designs of the rebels upon this place, iii, 453.

Levis, Gaston de, escapes at the massacre of Bartholomew, i, 39.

Lewis le Debonnaire, his character, v, 66.

Lewis-Saint, his edict against duels, iv. 51. Commands his son to abolish the taille, 270. His character, 293.

Lewis Hutin. Takes an oath at his coronation, to submit to the authority of the states of the kingdom, iv, 271.

Lewis XI. Value of the taille in his reign, iv, 273. His character, 293.

Lewis XIII. His fondness for Sully iv, 461. He holds his bed of justice, and confirms there the regency of Mary de Medicis, 462. Preparations made for his coronation, 503. The reception he gives Sully: his happy dispositions, v, 19. He rewards Sully's services, 132. He is against him in his process with his grandson, 136.

Lewkenor, master of the ceremonies in London, disobliges Sully, iii, 41.

Liancourt, Nicholas d'Amerval de, marries the fair Gabrielle. See Estrees particulars relating to this marriage, ii, 322.

Liancourt, du Plessis, first equerry of Henry IV, receives this prince at Liancourt, ii, 120. Appointed by Henry IV one of the members of the council of regency, iv, 422.

———, madame de. See Estrees, Gabrielle d'.

Lieramont, Francis de Dampierre de, governor of Catelet, ii, 19.

Ligne, l'Amoral, prince of, endeavours to deprive the princes of Epinoy of their estates, ii, 340. Refuses to marry mademoiselle de Melun to the marquis de Cœuvres, iii, 405.

Ligné, John de, count of Aremberg. See Aremberg.

Ligny, Mary de Melun, princess of, iv, 373.

Ligny, his party in Provence, i, 307.

Lille, John de, a madman, who attempts to assassinate Henry IV, iv, 56.

Limueil. Taken by the duke of Bouillon, iv, 18.

Limosin. Military exploits between the two parties in this province, ii, 116; iv, 29.

Linghen, taken by Spinola, iii, 432.

Livarot, John d'Arces de, one of the favourites of Henry III, ii, 18.

Livron. The duke of Montpensier fails in his attempt upon that place, i, 50. As likewise Henry III, i, 53.

Lognac, the assassin of the duke of Guise, dies miserably, iii, 418.

Lognac, a Protestant captain, gratuities granted him by Henry IV, iii, 418.

Loire. Advantages from joining it with the Seine and the Soane, iii, 299. The canal of Briare, ib. See Briare. A great inundation of this river in 1608, iv, 261.

Lombardy, kingdom of, a project for establishing it in favour of the duke of Savoy, iv, 68.

Lomenie, Antony de Brienne de, ii, 166, 257.

Loncaunai, a Protestant gentleman escapes the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, i, 34.

Londe, la, mayor of Rouen for the League, i, 202.

London. Sully's magnificent reception there, iii, 45.

Longueville. This family supports Sully, v, 11.

Longueville, Henry d'Orleans de, continues with Henry IV after the death of Henry III, i, 200.

Loppes, a Protestant gentleman, present at the defeat of the great convoy sent to Laon, i, 459.

Lorges. Surprises Châteaudun, i, 168.

Lorrain. The forces of Lorrain defeated, and Dun, Stenay, &c., taken by the duke of Bouillon, i, 301. Lorrain separates from Spain, and unites with France, ii, 39. Success of the arms of Lorrain in the war of 1595, 36. Restitution made by Lorrain of its usurpations upon the frontiers of Champaign, iv, 264. Henry IV designs to re-unite that territory to France, by marrying the heiress to the dauphin, 307.

Lorraine-Guise, family of. See under Guise, Maienne, Aumale, Mercœur, Elboeuf, Montpensier, Sommerive, Joinville, Bar, Chaligny, and Vaudemont.

Lorraine, Charles, cardinal of, i, 14. His death, 178. He forms the scheme of the league at the council of Trent, 114. His real sentiments upon religion, 121. His pretensions upon Metz, 173.

Lorrain, Charles, cardinal of, bishop of Strasbourg, iii, 6. His death, iv, 258.

———, Charles II, duke of, his plots with the states of Paris useless, i, 352. His treaty with Henry IV at the extinction of the league, ii, 263. The princess Catherine refuses to marry him, 295. He makes an agreement with Henry for the possessions belonging to the dutchess of Bar, iii, 190. Godfather to the princess Christina, iv, 116. Disputes with him concerning the boundaries of the country of Messin, terminated, 359. Grants made him by the queen-regent, v, 77.

———, Claude de, a stem of the house of Guise. His children, i, 14.

———, Francis de, grand prior of France, i, 14.

———, Lorraine, Mary de, de Guise, queen of Scotland, i, 15, 455.

———, dutchess of, falls dangerously ill, iv, 293.

Loudun, assembly of Protestants held in this city: Sully's services there, v, 131.

Loustrange, Lewis Francis de, one of the chief royalists in Limosin, ii, 116. His services, 366.

Louviers. Sully not able to take it, ii, 202. Taken by Henry IV, 253.

Louvre. Henry IV begins to build the great gallery there, iii, 20.

Luc, Francis d'Epinoy de Saint, master-general of the ordnance, i, 422. Present at the siege of Laon, ii, 18. One of the favourites of Henry III. His exploits in Brittany, 167. His death and character, 178.

Luc, Saint, goes to London with Sully, iii, 35. Receives him in Poitou, 263.

Lullins. Agent and commissioner from the duke of Savoy in the affair of Saluces, ii, 329.

Luquisses, Provençal gentlemen, their imprisonment and process, iv, 8. Their punishment, 37.

Lusignan. Taken by the duke of Montpensier, i, 51.

Lux, baron de, negociates the conversion of Henry IV, i, 360. The part he had in the battle of Fontaine-Françoise, ii. 62. He advises Biron to go to court, iii, 15. Obtains his pardon, after he had made a free confession to Henry IV, and to Sully, ii, 498. Is deputed by this prince to the parliament of Dijon, iv, 182.

Luxembourg, Henry de, duke of Piney, ambassador to Rome, ii, 235. His process with the parliament, 517.

———, Mary de. See Martigues.

Lyons. Seized by the princes, i, 24. Surrenders to Henry IV, 449. Process carried on by this city against Feydeau, iv, 189.

Lyre, abbey of, belonging to cardinal du-Perron, iii, 430.

M.

Macary, Saint. The Protestants unsuccessful in an attempt upon that place, i, 57.

Madame Catherine de Bourbon, dutchess of Bar, is sent back to Henry III, to her brother, i, 56. Her taste for diversions, 62. Her love for the count of Soissons, 167. She gives him a promise of marriage, 393, which she afterwards puts into Sully's hands, 405. Sully is sent to her by Henry IV, to break off this marriage: conversation between them, ii, 97. She endeavours to deprive him of the king's favour, 109. Henry takes the farms from her which she enjoyed in his name, 273. Several matches refused by her: she at length consents to marry the duke of Bar. Obstacles raised to this marriage by Rome and the clergy, 296. A conference is held to persuade her to change her religion, but to no purpose, 297. Visits the king at Metz, and receives him at Nancy, iii, 6, 18. Particulars relating to her death, her character, and the dispensation for her marriage, ib.

Madrid, castle of, or Bois de Boulogne. Queen Margaret resides there for some time, iv, 46.

Maes. The utility of joining this river with the Saone, iii, 299.

Mahomet III, His character: the Janizaries and the city of Constantinople revolt against him, ii, 463.

Maienne. Charles of Lorraine, duke of, takes Brouage, i, 69, 70. Commands the army of the league in Guyenne, 133. Marches to Tours, where he narrowly misses taking Henry III, and is driven from thence by Henry IV, 188. Defeated at Arques, 207. Forced to abandon Dieppe, and marches towards Paris, 209. He takes Pontoise, and fails in his attempt upon Meulun, 214. Loses the battle of Ivry, 222, 23, Encounters at Noyon, &c., 250. Loses Mante and Houdan, 256. Punishes the insolence of the sixteen, 268. Joins his forces with those of the prince of Parma, 280. Cause of the checks this prince meets with in the neighbourhood of Rouen, 285. Proposals made by him to the king of Spain, 319. The arts he practises against the Spanish party and his own nephew, and the faults he commits at the meeting of the states of Paris, 352. The parliament oppose him, 355. The measures taken by him to exclude Henry IV from the throne, 357. He endeavours to render the kings's abjuration useless, 378. Opposes the deputation from the Parisians to this prince, 381. Demands a new truce, 391. Takes the governmont of Paris from the count of Belin, 421, 423. Baffles the designs of the duke of Nemours, 440. Marches to the assistance of Laon, 467. Endeavours to secure Burgundy, ii, 15. Errors in his conduct upon that occasion, 59. He makes his treaty with Henry IV, 125.

Sum of money paid him upon making his treaty, 263. He gives Henry satisfaction for the behaviour of the count of Sommerive, his son, iv. 238. He refuses to sell his domain of Antibes to the king, iv, 288. One of the council of the regency, 422. Mary de Medicis makes him one of her public council, 466. Grants which he procures from the queen-regent, v, 23.

Maienne, Mademoiselle de, Henry IV, refuses to consent to her marriage with the marquis of Rosny, iv, 209.

Maienne, city of, taken by Henry IV, i, 211.

Maignan. Sully's valet de chambre: gives him a seasonable assistance at the siege of Paris 194. Saves his life at the battle of Ivry, 228. Carries him in triumph to Rosny, 283. Of great use to him at the siege of Rouen, 263.

Maillezais. Taken by Henry IV, i, 145. Retaken by the league, 152.

Mailly, James de. See Beneheart.

Mainfroy. Competitor with Charles of Anjou, i, 7.

Maintenon, Lewis d'Angennes de, misses taking Chartres for the league, i, 190. Makes an agreement with the Maintenons for the abbey of Coulon, iii, 11.

Maisses, Andrew Hurault de, his services against the rebels, i, 452. He is admitted into the council of finances, ii, 36. Where he unites with Sully, 157. Commissioner in the affair of the marquisate of Saluces, 347: and in that of the earldom of Saint Paul, iii, 343.

Maius, Alexander, a Jesuit, an accomplice of Châtel, ii, 43.

Maius, or Maio, Laurence, a Jesuit, labours to procure the settlement of his society in France, iii, 192. His promise to Henry IV, in the name of this society, 201.

Maixant, Saint, retaken by the league, i, 152. Henry IV, and Catherine de Medicis confer together at this place, 149.

Mallassise, de, i, 4. Deputed by Catherine de Medicis to Rochelle, 17.

Malderet, deputed by the United Provinces to Henry IV, v, 102.

Malicorne, John de Chourses de, unable to succour Talmont, i, 140. Resigns the government of Poitou in favour of Sully, iii, 175.

Malta, knights of, take and destroy Passava, ii, 464. Henry IV procures his son Alexander to be received in that order, iii, 373.

Mandelot, Francis de, his humanity to the Protestants on Saint Bartholomew's day, i, 44.

Mandercheidt, John: See Strasbourg.

Mandoza, Bernardin de, proposals made by him from Spain to Henry IV, i, 106.

Mandoza, Ignatius de, one of the Spanish plenipotentiaries to the states of Paris, i, 351.

Manicamp, Philip de Longueville de, lieutenant for the duke of Vendome

in the government of La Fere, ii, 86. Sent to Flanders upon the prince of Condé's flight, iv, 363.

Manou, John d'O, de, one of the Catholic leaders in the party of Henry IV, i, 332.

Mansfield, Charles, leads a Spanish army into France, i, 351. Takes Noyon, 357, and La Capelle, 442. Unable to prevent the loss of Laon, 467. Defeated by the duke of Bouillon, ii, 44. Loses an opportunity of fighting with the army of Henry IV, at Amiens, 182.

Mantc. The government of it refused to Sully, i, 232. The duke of Maienne fails in his attempts upon it, 250. Conferences upon religion held there, 370, 380. Sully causes a bridge to be built there.

Mantau. In what manner this principality passed into the family of Gonzague, iv, 115. The designs of Henry IV upon the territory of Mantua, 307.

——— Vincent de Gonzague duke of, brother-in-law to the queen, iv, 114. The reception given him by Henry IV, at Paris, 273.

——— Eleonora de Medicis, dutchess of, godmother to the Dauphin, takes precedence of the princes of the blood, at his baptism, iv, 114.

———Eleonora de Gonzague, princess of, Henry IV proposes to marry her to his third son, iv, 273.

———, Margaret de Gonzague, princess of, Henry IV proposes a marriage between her and the duke of Bar, iv, 421. She is taken ill, iv, 73.

Manufactures of fine stuffs. Do not succeed at first at Tours, ii, 341. Henry IV, establishes them contrary to the advice of Sully, iii, 177.

Mar, earl of, one of the Scotch faction at London, iii, 54. Deputed to Sully, 100—130.

Marais, Mademoiselle du, daughter-in-law to the duke of Sully, married by Henry IV, to La-Boulaye, iii, 401.

Marc, Saint, driven out of Meulan by d'Aumont, i, 200.

Marchand, Charles La, gives his name to the bridge Marchand, iv, 259.

Margaret de Valois, queen of France, celebration of her nuptails with Henry IV, i, 30. She leaves him and returns to court, 106. Negociations for the dissolution of her marriage commenced, ii, 215. Sully endeavours to procure her consent to it, 223. Particulars relating to her life, 225. Her hatred to the dutchess of Beaufort, 237. The affairs of the dissolution of her marriage resumed, and completed, 332. Henry IV obliges the count of Auvergne to do her justice with regard to the inheritance of Catherine de Medicis, iii, 252. Sully confers with her concerning the cabals of the disaffected party, 453. She quits the castle of Usson, and resides in the castle of Madrid: honours which she receives there from the king and queen, iv, 45. Her death and character, 46. Makes presents to the duke and dutchess of Sully, 65. Assists at the baptism of the children of France, 116.

Marie, Saint, regretted by Henry IV, iv, 199.

Marillac, engaged in Henry IV's gallantries, iv, 221.

Marine, its deplorable condition at the time of the peace of Vervins, ii, 262.

Marion. Sully's letter to him, iv, 267.

Marivaut, Claude de l'Isle de, present at the attack of the prince of Parma's vanguard, i, 269. At the siege of Laon, 457. At the defeat of the grand convoy, 459.

Mark la, how this principality became united to the dutchy of Cleves, iv, 386, 7.

Mark, William Robert de la, brother to the dutchess of Bouillon: his death and last will, i, 256.

Mark, Robert de la, father to the dutchess of Bouillon, i, 255. He held Sedan under the protection of Francis II, iv, 83.

Mark, Charlotte de la. See Bouillon, dutchess of.

Markham, conspires against the king of England, iii, 154.

Marle, castle of, Henry IV resides there in his youth, i, 462.

Marmande. Henry IV unsuccessful against that place, i, 60. Skirmishes before this town, 81.

Marmoutier. Henry IV narrowly escapes being taken there by the duke of Maienne, i, 188.

Marquemont, Denis de, archbishop of Lyons, endeavours to procure a dissolution of the marriage between Henry IV and Margaret de Valois, ii, 214. Is refused a cardinal's hat, iii, 225.

Marquette. A Flemish officer: commands the succours to Ostend, iii, 318.

Marseilles. Its reduction by the duke of Guise, ii, 31. Deputation from thence to Henry IV, 97. Biron's party endeavour to get possession of this city, 455. Insurrections which happen there upon the prohibition of commerce with Spain, iii, 310. Schemes of the disaffected party to seize it, ii, 440. The troubles in this city pacified, iv, 127.

Marsilliere, de, a Protestant officer: deputed to Germany, i, 139.

Marteau, Michael, de la Chapelle, traverses Villars's treaty with Henry IV, i, 409, 429.

Marthe, messieurs de Saint, justify Sully against the calumnies of father Cotton, iii, 361.

Martigues, Mary de Beaucaire, dutchess of, intercedes for the duke of Mercœur with Henry IV, ii, 195. Visits Sully, 199. Raises obstacles to the marriage of the duke of Vendome, with mademoiselle de Mercœur, iv, 245.

Martin, Charles le Clerc de Saint, slain at Cahors, i, 77.

———, de Saint, first gentleman of the bed chamber to the king of Navarre, ii, 114.

Mastin, madam de Saint, wife of the first president, ii, 114.

Mastin, madam de, her reception of Sully her nephew, i, 104.
Martinbault, member of the parliament of Rouen. In the party of Henry IV, ii, 96.
Martinengue. His party in Provence, i, 307.
Matelet, governor of Foix, throws himself into Calais; and surrenders it to the Spaniards, ii, 72.
Matignon, James de, marshal of France. Takes Montgomery prisoner, i, 49. Commands an army in Guyenne: loses Costets, 132. Refuses to succour Villemur, 309. Henry makes him one of the council of finances, ii, 36. Defeats the Crocans, and raises the siege of Blaye, 117.
Matignon. Odet de. See Thorigny.
Matthias, archduke of Austria, the United Provinces offer him the sovereignty over them: but are afterwards disgusted with him, i, 89.
Maugiron, Francis de, a favourite of Henry III, ii, 18.
Maulcon. Taken by Henry IV, i, 145.
Maupeou, appointed by Henry IV one of the council of the regency, iv, 422.
Maurevert, Nicholas de, wounds admiral Coligny, i, 28.
Maurier, Benjamin Aubery du, his letter to Bouillon, ii, 39; iii, 15, The service he does him in the affair of Sedan, iv, 89. Benefits conferred on him by Sully, v. 38.
Maximilian I, emperor, Philip II endeavours to deprive him of the empire, ii, 286. His claims upon the Low Countries contestible, iv, 386.
Maximilian II, emperor, his dispositions with regard to the territories of Cleves, Juliers, &c., iv, 390.
Meaux, enterprise of, i, 23. Vitry surrenders this city to Henry IV, 392.
Medavy, Charles Francis Rouxel de, one of the general officers of the league, i, 202. He commences a treaty with Sully, 338. Concludes it, 408.
Medicis, house of, of late date, iv, 378.
Medicis, Alexander de, cardinal of Florence, negociates for the peace of Vervins, ii, 228. Sully receives him at Paris, and at St. Germain, 246. He is made pope. See Leo XI.
Medicis, Catherine de, queen of France. Unsuccessful in the war against the Protestants, i, 3. Deceives them by the peace of 1570, 4. Her artifices to draw the Huguenots to Paris, 23. Her schemes for the establishment of her children, ib. Charles IX hates her, ib. Her artifices to disunite Henry IV and monsieur, 55. She deceives them both by the peace called Monsieur's peace, 56. Her letter to the prince of Condé, 83. Her schemes to procure the sovereignty of the Low Countries and the kingdom of Algiers for the duke of Anjou, 89. Her treachery in treating with Sully, 106. Loses an opportunity of suppressing the league, and of uniting the Low Countries to France, 116. She goes into Poitou, and has

several conferences with Henry IV, 149. Her indifference about religion, 150. Several negociations between her, the duke of Guise, &c. after the action of the barricadoes, 178. Reconciles Henry III and the Guises, ib. Her death and character, 180. Her last will in favour of her daughter, iii, 251. The value of her estates, 252.

Medicis, Eleonora de. See Mantua, dutchess of.

———, Ferdinand de, grand duke of Tuscany, marries Mary de Medicis in the name of Henry IV, ii, 365. He surrenders the isles of Pomegue, Ratoneau, and If, to this prince, 440. His death, iv, 378.

———, Côme II de, grand duke of Tuscany, succeeds Ferdinand, iv, 378. Henry engages him in his interests, 414.

———, Francis Marie de, grand duke of Tuscany: marriage of his daughter to Henry IV, ii, 338.

———, D. John de, a bastard uncle to the queen: comes with her to Paris, ii, 403. The queen forces him to leave France, iv, 226.

———, Mary de, married to Henry IV, ii, 338. Arrives at Lyons, 395. Comes to Fontainebleau, afterwards to Paris, 403. Goes to keep the jubilee at Orleans, 417. Is delivered of the Dauphin, 436. She follows the king to Blois, 465. The king discloses to her the design of arresting Biron, 485. Birth of the princess Elizabeth of France, 530. Uneasiness which she gives the king by her jealousy and bad temper, iii, 231. Sully's advice to her on this subject, 240. Grants which she procures from the king, ib. Sully persuades her to write a submissive letter to the king, ib. They are reconciled and quarrel again, 231. Mutual complaints between her and Sully, 248. Other quarrels between her, the king, and the marchioness of Verneuil, 250. Presents made to her by Henry IV, 270. She attends the king in his journey to Auvergne, &c., iv, 32. Visits and honours paid by her to queen Margaret, 45, 6. A curious conversation between her, the king, and Sully upon their disputes, 58. She makes complaints to Henry, 63. Presents made by her to Sully, 65. Favours the Spanish policy against that of the king, 68. Favours the duke of Bouillon, 86. Escapes being drowned at Neuilly, 117. A familiar dialogue between her and the king, 130. Birth of her second son, 140. New quarrels between her, the king, and the marchioness of Verneuil, 200, 223. She pawns her jewels, 200. Birth of her third son, 231. She gives the king dangerous advice against the Protestants, 249. She goes to Chartres, 296. Her friendship for father Cotton, ibid. Grants which she procures for Leonora from Sully, 341. Consequences of her jealousy of the princess of Condé, 349. He appoints her regent during the execution of his great designs, 422. She insists upon being crowned in opposition to the desires of Henry, 423. Account of her secret council, and conduct after the death of Henry IV, iv, 459, et seq.: v, 1, et seq.

Munel, house of, and distinguished persons of this name, i 7. See also under Epinoy, Ligne, Roubais.

Melun, Hugh de, viscount de Gand, i, 9. Sully loses his inheritance, 90.

———, Anne de, lady de Rosny, i, 8, 91.

———, N. de, Henry IV, gives him the abbey of Moreilles, iii, 402.

———, mademoiselle de, her relations refuse to marry her to the marquis de Cœuvres, iii, 404.

Melvil, Andrew, a Scotch minister, iv, 151.

Menager. Deputed from the states of Blois to Henry IV, i, 67.

Mende. Taken by Fosseuse, ii, 205.

Menehoult. The agreement of Saint, v, 124, 5.

Menelay, the marchioness of, takes the habit of a nun, iv, 298.

Mercœur, Philip Emanuel de Lorrain, duke of, made governor of Brittany, i, 210. Defeats the royalists at Craon, 301. His schemes disconcerted by Sully, 318. His plots with the states of Paris ineffectual, 352. His success in Brittany, ii, 115. A bon-mot of his with regard to his pretended claims upon Brittany, 192. Methods which he makes use of to obtain his pardon, 195. His party in Brittany suppressed, 198. The sum he receives upon making his treaty, 264. He goes into Hungary to serve the emperor in his wars, 340. He is made lieutenant-general there, 404. Takes Albe-Royale from the Turks, 462. Particulars relating to his death, 534.

Mercœur, Frances de Lorrain de, contracted to the duke of Vendome, ii, 195. Great difficulties in accomplishing their marriage, iv, 245.

———, Mary de Luxembourg, dutchess of, the methods she makes use of to move Henry IV in favour of her husband, ii, 195. Sully is reconciled to her, 199. Obstacles raised by her to the marriage of her daughter with the duke of Vendome, iv, 245.

Merovingiens. Character of this race, v, 65.

Mesmes, N. de, i, 4. Deputed by Catherine de Medicis to Rochelle, 18.

Mesmes, John James de. See Roissy.

Mesmin, mademoiselle de Saint, Sully falls in love with her, but afterwards subdues his passion, i, 109.

Mesnil, du, captain of the old palace of Rouen in the king's party, ii, 97.

Messillac, Raymond de Rastignac, de, succours Villemur, i, 310.

Messin, termination of a dispute respecting its boundaries, iv, 342.

Metz. Henry IV, goes thither, and drives out the Sobolles, iii, 3. Sully supports this city against the Jesuits, iv, 104. The duke of Verneuil is made bishop of it, 256.

Meulan. Taken by d'Aumont, and Sully, i, 200. The league make a fruitless attempt upon it: Henry IV runs great dangers in succouring it, 214, 335.

Meyrargues, baron de, his crime and punishment, iv, 37.

Michau, captain, an adventure which Henry IV has with him, i, 112.

Michael, Vaivode of Transilvania, defeated by George Baste, ii, 462.
Michel, Saint, this town taken by Henry IV, ii, 368.
Michel, Saint, deputed by Henry V to Sully, iv, 249. He informs Sully of the assassination of Henry IV, 441.
Mignon, Nichole, attempts to poison Henry IV, her punishment, ii, 345.
Mignonville, a Protestant officer, i, 140. Commands the artillery at Coutras, 160.
Milly, conferences of, the subject treated of there, i, 386.
Milon, a Protestant officer, occasions the taking of Monsegur, i, 84.
Mines of gold and silver, &c. discovered in France, ii, 527.
Miolens. A city taken by Henry IV, ii, 368.
Miossens, Henry d'Albert, baron de, one of the Protestant lords, i, 50: ii, 115.
Mirande, a snare laid by its inhabitants for Henry IV, i, 64.
Mirebau, James Chabot de, his behaviour at the battle of Fotaine-Françoise, ii, 60.
Mirepoix, Louisa de Bethune, marchioness of, her ingratitude to the duke of Sully, her father v, 55.
Miron, first physician to Henry III, his speech to this prince. See Henry III. He assists at the conferences after the barricadoes, i, 178.
———, Francis, lieutenant civil, and intendant of Paris: Biron's discourse to him upon the scaffold, ii, 490. His death, iv, 258. His opposition to the registring the rents: particulars relating to his life: Sully's generosity to his family, ib.
Mistresses of Henry IV, their names: the children he had by them, iv, 220.
Mole, Joseph Bonniface de la, beheaded, i, 49.
———, Edward, his opposition to the duke of Maienne. See States of Paris.
Molina, a Jesuit; his opinion concerning grace, iii, 204.
Momier, keeper of St. Germain en Laye, ii, 246.
Monaco. Spain usurps this principality, iii, 333.
Monarchy, universal, proofs that Charles V, Philip II, and Philip III, formed schemes for it, iv, 66.
Monceaux, marchioness of. See Estrees, Gabriel de.
Moncontour, battle of, i, 2.
Mondoucet, Claude, resident in the Low Countries, i, 31.
Money, regulations respecting it, i, 387; ii, 408, 409, 410.
Mons. Taken by the prince of Orange, i, 20.
Monsegur. Taken by the Protestants, i, 84.
Monsire, Gamaliel de, sent by Henry IV, to draw out the garrison from Sedan, iv, 204.
Mont, Du, or Des Monts. Sent into Canada, iii, 185.
Montaffié, house of, in Piedmont. Sully dissuades Henry IV, from pur-

chasing the estates of that house, ii, 442. A quarrel on this occasion between the count of Soissons and Sully, iv, 472. The queen-regent favours the count of Soissons in this affair, v, 5.

Montaffie, Lewis, count of, marries his daughter to the count of Soissons ii, 442.

Montagu. Taken by the Protestants, i, 76.

Montataire. Deputed to Sully by the prince of Condé, iv, 490.

Montauban. A cautionary town given to the Protestants, i, 4. It maintains its privileges, 45. Assembly of Protestants held in this city: tumults among them, 117. Their eulogium upon Henry IV, iii, 176. Taken by Lewis XIII. Sully's services at this siege.

Montausier. A protestant officer. Present at the battle of Coutras, i, 160.

Montbazon, Lewis de Rohan, duke of, i, 122. The reception he gives Sully, 130. Present at the battle of Bonneval, 191. Is killed at Arques, 207.

———, Hercules de Rohan, duke of, Sully's friendship for him censured, iii, 390. Henry IV, lives with him at Livry, iv, 381. Appointed one of the regents, 422. Deputed to Sully by the queen-regent, 458.

Montespan. Attends Henry IV, in the campaign of Savoy, ii, 393.

Montferrat. Henry IV, has a design upon this principality, iii, 13.

Montglat, Lewis de Harlay de, first steward of the household to Henry IV. He is sent by that prince to meet the foreign army, i, 169. An interview between Henry and Sully at his house, iii, 56. Resident from France in Germany, iv, 136. Appointed ambassador to the Porte, 422.

Montglat, madam de, governess to the children of France, iii, 345. Presents made her by Henry IV, iii, 418. Of Sully, iv, 60. Carries the children of France to Noissy, 202.

Montgomery, Gabriel, count of, kills Henry II, in a tournament, i, 15. Escapes at the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, 35. Returns into France, 48, 49. His death, 50. His son, 59, 60.

Montignac-le-Comte, taken by the duke of Maienne, i, 135.

Montigny, Francis de la Grange de, present at the defeat of the grand convoy sent to Laon, 459. Henry refuses him the post of master-general of the ordnance, ii, 178. Makes him governor of Metz, and the country of Messin, iii, 5. Sully's friendship for him calumniated, 390. A quarrel between him and the duke of Epernon, iv, 244.

Montluc, Blaise de, marshal of France: commands in Languedoc, i, 45. His opinion concerning the siege of Rochelle, 46.

Montluc, John de, bishop of Valence, i, 34.

Montluc-Balagny. See Balagny.

Montluel. Taken from the league, ii, 44.

Montluet, Francis d'Angennes de, sent by Henry IV to Bouillon, iv, 4. Opposes the enterprise of Sedan, 73.

Montmartin. Treats for the government of Poitou for Sully, iii, 176. Sent to the Grisons on the affair of the Valtoline, 338. Assists at the synod of Rochelle, iv, 150.

Montmelian, a conversation between the duke of Savoy and Sully, concerning this place, ii, 347. Operations against it, 370.

Montmorency, Anne de, constable of France, an account of his ministry, i, 14.

————, Charles de, de Damville, admiral: an important service done him by Conchini, v, 8.

————, the chevalier de, seizes the Luquisses and other rebels, iv, 8.

————, Francis de, called the marshal de Montmorency, i, 17, 20, 35.

————, William de. See Thore.

————, Henry, constable de; he joins the Protestants, i, 49. He gives the Protestants good council, 119. Commands the troops of Henry IV in Languedoc, 133, 141. Supports his party in Dauphine, 307. Succours Villemur, 310. His success in Dauphine, ii, 44. Opposes Sully's entrance into the council of finances, 119. One of the commissioners in the affair of the marquisate of Saluces, ii, 347. Commands the troops left in Piemont, 402. Suspected of being an accomplice with Biron, 497. Henry IV retores him to his favour at the intreaty of Sully, 500. He and his family intercede for the count of Auvergne, 503. He does Sully a service, 529. He favours the repeal of the Jesuits banishment, iii, 192. Is employed in the prohibition of commerce between France and Spain, 313. Appointed one of the members of the council of regency by this prince, 422. He offers his services to Sully after the death of Henry IV, iv, 458. The queen-regent makes him one of her council, 466. Takes Sully's part against Bouillon, v, 10. His quarrels with the grandees and the ministers, 11.

————, Charlotte de. See Angouleme, dutchess of.

————, Charlotte Margaret de, 209, 245. Married to the prince of Condé contrary to Sully's advice: motives of this marriage, and the passion of Henry for this princess, iv, 302. The plots and discontent of the prince of Condé, 350. Her Husband carries her to Flanders, 355.

————, Hippolita de. See Epinoy.

————, Louisa de Budos, wife to the constable, her death, ii, 313.

Montpazier and Villefranche, surprised by the inhabitants of each other, i, 58.

Montpensier, Francis de Bourbon, duke of, takes Fontenai and Lusignan. i, 50.

————, Francis de Bourbon, duke of, raises the siege of Livron, i, 50. Attends monsieur in Flanders, 103.

Montpensier, Henry de Bourbon, duke of, commands the royal forces in Normandy, i, 210. Henry III to blame in taking the government of Brittany from him, ib. An account of this expedition, 225. He loses the battle of Craon, 301. Is wounded at the siege of Dreux, 368. Sully reconciles him and the count of Soissons, 396. Receives a recompense from Henry IV, 398. Henry sends Sully to him upon some false accusations, ii, 95. And designs to marry him to the princess Catherine, 97. He marries the heiress of the house of Joyeuse, 325. Is suspected of being concerned in Biron's conspiracy, 497. His death, iv, 213. Henry IV destines his only daughter for the second son of France, 307.

———————, Catherine Maria de Lorrain, dutchess of, the clemency and generosity of Henry IV to this lady, i, 425.

———————, Mary de Bourbon, only daughter of Henry duke of Montpensier: she is contracted to the second son of France, iv, 307.

Montpezat, Henry des Pres de, sent by the duke of Maienne, into Spain, i, 391. Serves the league, ii, 97.

Montreuil. Henry IV makes his entry there, ii, 13.

Montrichard. Henry III and Henry IV have a conference there, i, 183.

Montricoux. An estate purchased by Sully, v, 55.

Montrond. An estate of Sully's v, 13. Improvements made by Sully on this castle, 151.

Moors. In Spain, i, 12. They revolt and implore assistance from France, iv, 284. Banished out of Spain, 285.

Moreilles, abbey of, given to a nephew of Sully, iii, 402.

Moret. Sully receives the king there, ii, 48. Henry purchases that house, iv, 119.

Moret, Jaqueline de Beuil, countess of, presents which she receives from Henry IV, iv, 122. Her character, ib. He goes to see her, 140, 220. Her children by him, 200. An intrigue between her and the prince of Joinville, 238. She endeavours to ruin Sully, 346.

Morette, count of, one of the duke of Savoy's commissioners in the affair of Saluces, ii, 347.

Morgan, the count of, Auvergne's agent, iii, 269.

Morienne, Saint John de, taken by Henry IV, ii, 368.

Morlaix, taken by d'Aumont, ii, 14.

Morlas, one of the heads of the Protestants: he changes his religion, and is greatly esteemed by Henry IV, i, 335.

Mornay, Philip Du Plessis, i, 129. He cures Henry IV at La Mothe-Frélon, 183. He is made governor of Saumur, 186. A letter which Henry IV sent to him upon his treaty of union with Henry III, 188. A letter from him to Henry IV after the battle of Aumale, 278. He interposes in the conversion of Henry IV, 360. Serves Villeroi in his treaty with the king, 427. Cabals in the Protestant party during the siege of Ami-

ens, ii, 175. Causes an article to be inserted in the edict of Nantes, by which it is obliged to be amended, 307. His public dispute with Du Perron, 354. His plots at London, iii, 66. The king of England speaks to Sully in his favour, 77. He plots in favour of Bouillon, and against the pope, 172. He excites the Protestants to rebellion, ib. Sully excludes his deputies from the assembly of Châtelleraut, and disconcerts his schemes there, 463, iv, 14. He endeavours to break off the enterprise against Sedan, 68. Farther account of his plots with the Protestants, 248. Sully justifies him to the king against a slander that was raised against him, 365. He openly supports Sully's party against the court, and the council of the queen-regent, v, 121.

Morosini, John Francis, the pope's nuncio. Henry dares not oppose him, i, 183.

Morsan, Barnard, provost of, procured justice to be done to the Huguenots at Rouen, i, 17.

Mulberry-trees. Ordered by an edict to be planted in the kingdom, ii, 427. Henry has them cultivated contrary to Sully's advice, iii, 177. Stuffs made of the bark of these trees, 419.

Muscovy. Part of the great design relating to this state, v, 85.

Mothe, Valentine de Pardieu de la, brings troops to the assistance of the league at the siege of Rouen, i, 269. His death, ib.

Mothe-Frélon, la, Henry IV is taken ill there, i, 182.

Motte, bridge of the, the two kings have an interview there, 188.

Motteville, member of the parliament of Rouen. In the party of Henry IV, ii, 97.

Moussy, Bouthillier de, ii, 19. Defeats a body of forces belonging to the league, 44.

Moussy, father, a Jesuit. His letter on occasion of the quarrel about the college of Poitiers, iii, 362.

Moutiers, taken by Henry IV, ii, 368.

Mouy, Isaac Vaudré de, a Protestant officer, i, 125. Present at the battle of Bonneval, 191. Does not arrive till after the battle of Ivry, 225. Advises the amendment of the edict of Nantes, ii, 266.

Murat, treasurer of France, contributes to the seizure of the count of Auvergne, iii, 272. Gives information of the seditious cabals, iv, 434. His connections with Lesdiguieres render him suspected, 151.

Murat, treasurer of the extraordinary of war, attached to Sully; advice, and marks of confidence which he receives from him, v, 39

Mustapha, aga of Cairo, his letter to Sully concerning a resident from the Porte at Marseilles, iv, 383.

N.

Nangis, goes into the service of the archduke in Flanders, iii, 433.

Nangis, Beauvais, his conversation with the duke of Guise. See Guise; Henry de.

Nantes edict of, extorted by the Protestants, ii. 39. Henry IV, employs himself in drawing up articles, 191. His stay at Nantes for that purpose, 202. Opposition made to its being registered, 211, 308. They find it necessary to make some alterations in it: treachery of those who were employed to compose it, 303. And proposed by Henry IV, as a fundamental writing in the assembly of Châtelleraut, iii, 445.

Naples. Henry IV proposes to give this kingdom to the pope, iii, 332.

Narbonne, the rebels endeavour to seize this place, ii, 455, iii, 439.

Narbonne, viscounty of, purchased by the house of Bourbon, i, 10.

Nassau, William de, prince of Orange. See Orange.

———, Henry de, ambassador from the United Provinces to London, iii, 61.

———, Justin de, ambassador from the States-General to France: a conversation between Henry IV. and him, ii, 105.

———, Lewis, de, or count Lodovic, one of the heads of the Protestant party in France, i, 25, iii, 74.

———, Maurice de, prince of Orange. See Orange.

———, Philip de, brings troops to the assistance of Henry IV, at the siege of Rouen, i, 257. He defeats the count of Mansfield, ii, 44.

Navarre, kingdom of, usurped by the Spaniards, i, 12. Design of Catherine de Medicis to purchase it, and exchange it with Spain, 90. Claims of the house of Rohan upon the estates possessed by that of Albret there, iii, 400. The finances of Navarre reunited to those of France, iv, 178. A dispute concerning the boundaries of this kingdom terminated to Henry's advantage, 280. Part of the great design which relates to this state, i, 106. See Political design.

Navarre, Antony de Bourbon, king of, i, 2. His death, 13. Particulars relating to his life, ib.

Navarre, Henry d'Albert king of, particulars relating to this prince at the birth of his grandson, i, 10.

———, Henry de Bourbon, king of. See Henry IV.

———, Jean d'Albret, queen of, i, 10. Retires to Rochelle at the peace of 1570, 17. Motives which determine her to go to Paris, 19. Her death, 32.

Nemours, Charles Emanuel de Savoy, duke of, fights for the league at Ivry, i, 223. Defends Paris against Henry IV, 235. His party in Provence unsuccessful, 307. As likewise his designs and plots at the states

of Paris, 352. The city of Lyons surrenders to Henry IV, notwithstanding his endeavours to the contrary: the treatment he receives there, 440. The constable de Montmorency defeats his troops, and takes his towns, ii, 44. His death, 87. Sum paid him at his treaty, 263.

Nemours, Henry de Savoy. See Saint Sorlin.

———, la Garnache. See Garnache, la.

Nerac, a brave action of Henry's before this town, i, 71.

Nerestan, Philibert de, captain of the guards, arrests the count of Auvergne, iii, 278. Supports Sully's opinion upon the enterprise of Sedan, iv, 82. First grand master of the order of Mount Carmel, 196.

Nery, Madam de, prevails upon d'Estrees to treat with Sully for the post of grand master of the ordnance, ii, 243.

Nesle, marquis of, slain at the battle of Ivry. See Ivry.

Netancourt, John de, count of Vaubecourt, deputed by Bouillon to the king, iv, 90. Henry IV makes him governor in Sedan, 95, 204.

Neubourg, Philip Lewis, count palatinate of, his claim to the succession of Cleves, iv, 388. He divides it with the elector of Brandenbourg, 507.

Nevers, Charles de Gonzague, duke of, wounded at the siege of Buda: his eulogium, ii, 534. He serves in the expedition of Sedan, iv, 88. Processes between him and Henry IV, for the estates of the house of Albret, 188. He is sent ambassador to Rome, 257. The ministers treat him ill, v, 14. Grants which he procures from the queen-regent, 23. Estates purchased by Sully of him, 53.

Nevers, Lewis de Gonzague, duke of, makes himself dreaded by Henry III, i, 184. Attaches himself to Henry IV, after the death of that prince, 242, Brings troops to the king, and endeavours to procure the chief sway in his council, 243. Excites the Catholics to mutiny at the siege of Rouen, 269. The cause of another misfortune which happens to the king at Bully, 272. He becomes one of the heads of the third party, 324. His plots with the states of Paris, 354. Henry IV, sends him to Rome, 378. Made governor of Champaign, ii, 23, and head of the new council of finances. 36. His quarrels with Sully, 38. He commands the king's forces in Picardy, 46: his ill success, 52. His death, 87.

Nevers, dutchess of, engaged in the intrigues of Henry IV, iv, 309.

Neufchatel. Taken by Henry IV, i, 203. Ill defended by Givry, 281.

Neuville. See Villeroi, and Alincourt.

Neufvy, Bertrand de Melet de Fayolles de, an officer in the party of the league, i, 131.

Neuvy, madam de, gives bad advice to the princess Catherine, ii, 103, 107.

Neuilly, the king and queen are in danger of being drowned there, iv, 117.

Nicholas, Simon, his gay disposition: freedom and liveliness of his jests, ii, 474.

Nieuport, battle of, ii, 404.

Noailles, quarrels between this family and that of Roquelaure composed by Sully, iv, 118.

Noailles, Francis de, ambassador to the Porte, i, 75. He commands the forces at the siege of Hierrefort, iv, 196.

Nocle, Beauvais la. See Beauvais.

Nogent le Bethune, buildings there by Sully, v, 147.

Noirmoutier, marchioness of. See Sauves.

Nompar. See Force, La.

Norfolk, duke of, one of king James's privy counsellors, iii. 44.

Normandy, places taken by the royalists in that province. Military operations, &c. by the duke of Montpensier, i, 254. Normandy sends supplies to Henry IV, for the siege of Rouen, 257. Its towns and governors submit to that prince, 420. Sully supports the interests of this province, iv, 120.

Northumberland, earl of, one of the factious lords at London, iii, 55. Conducts Sully to his audiences, 71—91. His abilities; Sully gains his friendship, 78. He receives some advice of importance from him, 86. Appointed one of the commissioners to confer with him, 100. Sully makes him presents, 143. Quarrels with colonel Vere, 154.

Notables, assembly of, at Rouen, Henry IV's conduct there, and reflections on this subject, ii, 145.

Noue, Francis de La, defeated in Flanders, i, 31. Eulogium of this officer, ib. He takes the suburb St. Germain by assault, 212.

Noue, Odet de La, proposed for deputy-general of the Protestants, iv, 3, 17. Opposes the expedition of Sedan, 83. Employed by Sully in the affair of Metz against the Jesuits, 104. Serves the king in the Synod of Rochelle, 148.

Noyon. The forces of the League defeated there, i, 247, 259. Taken by count Mansfield, 351.

Nugnes or Ordognes. Sent by Mendoza to Henry IV, i, 382.

Nuys, taken by marshal Biron, ii, 44.

Nyort, Henry IV, repulsed there, i, 147. but afterwards taken by him, 182.

O.

O, Francis d', de Fresne, &c. superintendant of the finances, attaches himself to the service of Henry IV, after the death of Henry III, i, 199, but governs his finances badly, and suffers him to be in want of every thing, 231. Endeavours to have the chief sway in this council,

243. Hinders the Catholics from obeying him at the siege of Rouen, 266; and raises a mutiny among them, 295. He becomes one of the heads of the third party, 324. Interposes in the affair of Henry's conversion, 360. Procures the government of Paris, 422. Opposes the cardinal de Bourbon and Sully, 449. Solicits for the Jesuits in their process with the University, 454. His profusion: his vices, ii, 18. Particulars relating to his death, 19. He rents the farms under borrowed names, iii, 407.

O, John d', de, Manou. See Manou.

Odou d', serves the king in the affair of the Moors' revolt against Spain, iv, 282.

Offices of the finances and the bar suppressed, ii, 417. Creation of offices to be made upon occasion, iv, 322.

Officers of the crown and others, Sully alters the form of their payments and pensions, ii, 271. Suppresses part of them in the finances and the bar, 317.

Ognies, Lewis d', contributes to the defeat of the duke d'Aumale, i, 248.

Oise, George de Brancas-Villars chevalier d', surrenders le Havre to Henry IV, i, 433. Obtains a pension for it, ii, 17. Attends the king in the campaign of Franche Comté, 65. Sum paid him at his treaty, 264.

Oldicorne, Edward, a Jesuit, engaged in the conspiracy of the English lords against James iv, 136, 176.

Oleron, isle of, taken by the Protestants, i, 4.

Olivari, Seraphin, Cazailla, his reply to Clement VIII, who refused to give Henry IV absolution, i, 378. Sully procures a cardinal's hat for him, iii, 225. Debts paid to him by Henry, iv, 229.

Onau, Biron d', or de Dona, defeated at Auneau, i, 170.

Ondevous, agent from the duke of Bouillon, ii, 398.

Oraison, marquis d', accompanies Sully to London, iii, 47. Employed in the affair of the marriage between mademoiselle de Mercœur and the duke of Vendome, iv, 199.

Orange. A dispute concerning this place and Blaccons, iii, 449. Henry IV shows too much indulgence to Lesdiguieres upon this occasion, iv, 21.

———, William de Nassau, prince of, takes Mons from the Spaniards, i, 20. Lieutenant general to the archduke Matthias, 89. He escapes being murdered at Antwerp, 99. He foresees and renders ineffectual the designed treachery at Antwerp, 101. Endeavours in vain to reconcile monsieur and the Flemings, 102.

Orange, Maurice de Nassau, prince of, gains the battle of Nieuport against the archduke Albert, and raises the siege of that place, ii, 404. Endeavours to carry the war into the neighbourhood of Dunkirk, 418. Takes Rhimberg and loses Bolduc, 419, Takes Grave, iii, 1.. Drives the Spaniards out of Vactendonk, ib. Takes Cadsan and Sluys, 317. Other

military operations, 433. Interests himself in the affair of Orange and Blaccons, 449. His disagreement with Barnevelt, one of the principal causes of the truce, iv, 133. He loses Antwerp, 164. He prepares a suspension of arms, 173, and plots in France to prevent it, 274. He consents to the treaty of truce, 370. He joins the German princes assembled at Hall, 402. Takes Juliers at the head of the confederates, 504. His part in the great design, v, 97, 102.

Orange, princess of, Sully entertains her at Rosny, ii, 316. Letters which she writes to Bouillon on the part of Henry IV, iv, 77. She receives a letter from Henry IV, 99. Letters wrote by her to Sully, on the affair of the truce, 277.

Orbitello. Spain unjustly takes possession of it, iii, 332.

Orleans. Taken by the Protestants, i, 25. Surrendered by La-Chatre to Henry IV, 392. Sum paid for it, ii, 264. The king and queen keep the jubilee there, 417. Henry passes some time there in his journey to Auvergne, iv, 33,

————, Gaston, John Baptist of France, duke of Anjou, afterwards duke of. See Anjou.

————, N. de France, duke of, his birth, iv, 140. He is taken ill, iv, 259. Is contracted to mademoiselle de Montpensier, 307. Sully presages his death, cause of it, v, 19.

Ornano, Alphonso d', marshal of France, gives Henry III good advice on the day of the barricadoes, i, 173. He supports the party of Henry IV in Dauphiné, 304. Supports the Lionnois against the League, 440. Helps to defeat the troops of the dukes of Savoy and d'Epernon, ii, 117, 167. Services done by him to Henry IV after the death of the dutchess of Beaufort, 273. The king is disgusted with him, 444. Sully's friendship for him calumniated, iii, 390. Sully takes his part against Epernon, iv, 40, 200. He disapproves of the outrageous sermons of father Gonthier, 347.

Orval, Francis de Bethune count of, particulars concerning him, v, 52, 134.

Oseray, L', groom of the chamber to Henry IV, ii, 324.

Osorio, a Spanish officer, defends La-Fere, ii, 84.

Ossat, Arnaud d', cardinal, accused of favouring the League, ii, 70. An examination into his conduct and sentiments, 70. Employed in the dissolution of Henry's marriage with Margaret de Valois, 214. Obtains a dispensation for the marriage of the princess Catherine and the duke of Bar, 296. His conduct in this respect examined, ib. He serves Henry IV at Rome in the affair of Martha Brossiere, 310. Further particulars of his negociation for dissolving Henry's marriage, 333. The treaty which he makes with the grand duke of Tuscany for the restitution of the isles, &c. blamed by Sully, 441. Accusations of this minister against

him, iii, 7. Mortifications which he receives from Sully, 10. He is made coadjutor of Brieux, 11. His opinion concerning the affair of the English clergy, 97. Sully presents a memorial against him to the king, 205. Heads of the accusations contained in this memorial, 207. His justification: particulars relating to his birth, his life, and his death, 208.

Ostend. The archduke Albert lays siege to it, ii, 419. Châtillon-Coligny and some other Frenchmen are slain there, 434. Farther account of this siege, iii, 11. The Spaniards endure great fatigue, and are very unsuccessful, 318. The surrender of this place, 321. In which the long resistance made by the Flemings almost exhaust Spain, ib.

P.

Pajot, a treasurer, a petition presented against him, iv, 355.

Palatine, elector, a design to make him the protector of the French Protestants, i, 118. Henry IV withdraws the farms from his hands, ii, 271. And refuses to pardon Bouillon at his request, iii, 14. He continues to support Bouillon, and endeavours to procure him the protection of king James, 66, 213. His fears occasioned by the expedition of Sedan, iv, 87. He writes a polite letter to Sully, 272.

Palcheux, a Protestant officer, present at the battle of Arques, i, 205. At that of Ivry, 224. Is unjustly put under an arrest for the surrender of Neufchâtel, 231.

Palliers, sells the lands of Caussade to Sully, v, 55.

Palot, receiver-general, turned out of his office by Sully, iii, 161.

——, the prince of Condé's agent at Paris, v, 490.

Pangeac or Pangeas, N; de Pardaillan de, obliges the count of Soissons to quit Bearn, i, 303.

Pangeas, madame de, gives good advice to the princess Catherine, ii, 103. Endeavours to restore Sully to her favour, 113. Gives an exact inventory of the effects of that princess, iii, 190.

Panny, du, agent from d'Entragues in London, iii, 67.

Parabere, a Protestant officer, takes Corbie, i, 246. Present at the siege of Laon, 455. His letter to Sully concerning Bouillon, iv, 83, 112.

Pardieu. See Mothe, La.

Paré, Ambroise, surgeon to Charles IX, his conversation with that prince concerning the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i, 42.

Parisiere, N. de la, deputed by the city of Poitiers to Henry IV on occasion of the quarrel between Sully and father Cotton, iii, 361.

Parma, Alexander Farnese, duke of, raises the blockade of Cambray, and maker a fine retreat, i, 94. Forces monsieur to quit Flanders, 103. A speech of his upon the barricadoes, 174. Obliges Henry IV to raise the

siege of Paris, 237. Takes possession of an advantageous post, and acts like an able general upon this occasion: a smart saying of his to the duke of Maienne, 238. He takes Corbeil with great difficulty, 240. Suffers some losses in his retreat, 241. He repasses the Somme, and comes to the assistance of Rouen: Henry goes to meet him, 268. He misses taking this prince at Aumale, 277. A saying of his upon this action, 277. He repasses the Somme, and again takes the road to Rouen, 278. He avoids fighting, and arrives at Rouen, 282. Henry IV deceives him, and gains several advantages over him, 283: he is wounded, 286: he escapes the pursuit of Henry IV by a master piece of good conduct at the passage of the Seine, 288. A mutiny in the army of Henry IV prevents his being pursued, 292. He goes back to Flanders, 300. Designs to return again into France, but dies, 313. Opinion concerning his death, ib.

Parquet, president to the parliament of Grenoble, iv, 112.

Partenay, Catherine de. See Quellenec.

Parthenay. Henry IV is repulsed before this town, i, 147.

Pascal, ambassador from France, to the Grisons, iii, 337.

Pasithea, the faction in the queen's household make use of her to serve their pernicious designs, iv, 309.

Passage, du, gives the king information of the duke of Savoy's designs, ii, 345.

Passy, defended by Sully against the League, i, 216.

Paul V, Rejoicings in Paris for his advancement to the pontificate, iii, 425. His attachment to France. See Bethune. His great esteem for Sully, 430. He congratulates Henry upon the expedition to Sedan, iv, 96. Origin and effects of the dispute between him and the Venetians, 99. He stands godfather to the Dauphin, 116. His moderation with respect to the Protestants, 149; .v, 33. He forbids the English to take the oaths of fidelity to king James, 176. He grants with some difficulty the bishopric of Metz to the duke of Verneuil, 257. Presses Henry to publish the council of Trent, ibid. He agrees to the union against the house of Austria, 413. The queen-regent unites with him and Spain against the policy of the last reign, 483. His part in the great design, v, 93.

Paul, county of Saint, particulars relating to it, iii, 343; iv, 97.

Paul Francis d'Orleans, count of Saint, governor of Provence, ii, 46. Defeated before Dourleans, 57. Justifies himself to Henry IV, concerning the assassination of the younger d'Epinoy, iv, 144. He forms a design to go into the service of the archdukes, 241.

Pearls, false, manufacture of, established by Henry IV, iii, 419.

Pedro, Don, de Toledo, ambassador from Spain to France, labours to procure a peace, iv, 274. His intrigues at court: a bon-mot of Henry's upon this ambassador, ibid.

Peguillon. See Martigues.

Pellevé Nicholas de cardinal, reveals the plots of St. Bartholomew, i, 34. Proposes a marriage between the Infanta of Spain and the archduke Ernest to the states of Paris: his plots unsuccessful, 353.

Pembroke, earl of, Sully sees him at Dover, ii, 428.

Pentievre, claims of this house upon Brittany, ii, 192.

Pepin Le-Bref. Sully's character of this king, v, 66.

Peres, Antonio, minister, to Philip II, ii, 392.

Peronne, assembly of, the design of the League formed there, i, 112. Henry IV, makes his entry into this city, ii, 13.

Perron, James David, cardinal du, one of the authors and promoters of the third party, i, 323. Sully brings him over to Henry's interest, 340. He instructs this prince in the Roman Catholic religion, 370. And has the chief hand in his conversion: he endeavours to convert Sully, 374. Sent to Rome by Henry IV, to pay obedience to the Pope, and made bishop of Evreux, 378. Labours with Sully to procure a reconciliation between the duke of Montpensier and the count of Soissons, 401. His conduct at Rome blamed ii, 70. He labours to procure a dissolution of the marriage between Henry IV, and Margaret de Valois, 214. His public dispute with Du-Plessis Mornay, 354. He serves the king but indifferently at the treaty of Lyons, 395. Sully endeavours to make him approve of the tolerations of religions, 222, and obtains a cardinal's hat for him, ii, 225; The friendship between him and Sully, and their letters to each other, 423. His residence at Rome, 427. He congratulates this minister upon the success of the expedition to Sedan, iv, 96. Conversations between them upon the two religions, 102. Made archbishop of Sens and great almoner, 104. Informs Sully of the plots of the Spanish ambassador with the courtiers, 157. Persuades Paul V not to insist upon the recal of the Jesuits with the Venetians, 177. Cannot prevail on Sully to change his religion, 217. He is appointed of the council of the regency by Henry IV, 422.

Perron, du, brother to the cardinal, Sully makes use of him to get the contract of marriage between the princes Catherine and the count of Soissons, i, 401. A conversation between him and Sully iv, 129.

Persia, Sophy of, sends an ambassador to the emperor Rodolph, ii, 366.

Persy le Riche. A captain in Nerestan's regiment. Serves at the siege of Ostend, ii, 318.

Pest. Taken by the Christians from the Turks, ii, 535.

Phenomena, seen the evening before the battle of Ivry, i, 215.

Philip the August, king of France, his character, iv, 270, 293.

Philip le Bel, king of France, motives for the edict he published against duels, iv, 50. Sully's character of this king, v, 70.

Philip de Valois, king of France, occasions a rebellion in his kingdom by his excessive imposts, iv, 270.

Philip II, king of Spain, causes of the war being re-kindled between Henry and him, i, 13. His offers to Henry IV, 105. His design of making the duke of Savoy count of Provence disconcerted by Lesdiguieres, 307. Conditions offered this prince by the duke of Maienne and the League; his views by supporting the League, 322. His plots with the states of Paris ineffectual, 352. Proposals made by him to Henry IV, after his abjuration, 378. Motives for his desiring a peace with France, ii, 193. His death, 282. His last will, ibid. Particulars relating to his person, his character, and policy, 287. He orders an examination to be made into the usurpation of Navarre, ibid. A marriage between him and the princess Catherine proposed, 295. Proofs of his designs for universal monarchy, iv, 66. The causes that hindered their succeeding, 67. Motives for the advice he gave to the duke of Anjou concerning the treachery at Antwerp, 313.

Philip III, king of Spain, his instructions and advice to Philip II, ii, 284. Marries the archdutchess at Gratz, 293. Supports the rebels in Ireland, 460. He condemns the pretended Don Sebastian to the gallies, 461. Congratulates Henry IV, upon the discovery of Biron's conspiracy 512. Takes possession of Final, Piombino, &c. Without any just claim, iii, 333, and endeavours to seize Embden, ibid. Favours the duke of Savoy in his attempts upon Geneva: Complaints and invectives of the king of England against him, 74. Pretended proposals for an union of these two princes against France, 86. His designs upon Barbary. 157. Upon the coasts of the Mediterranean, 157. He resumes his father's designs of universal monarchy, iv, 66. He carries on plots in the court of France against the life of Henry IV, 158. He ratifies the treaty for a suspension of arms with the United Provinces; and afterwards concludes a truce for twelve years, 171.

Picardy, military exploits in this province, ii, 14, 66, 190.

Piercy, Sir Rich. defeats the rebels in Ireland, ii, 460.

Pienne, company of, defeated by Henry IV, i, 154.

Pierrefort, castle of, besieged, iv, 196.

Piles, Armand de Clermont de, a Protestant lord, i, 27. Murdered at the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, 37.

Piementel, an Italian. Henry IV, admits him into his parties of pleasure: a comical adventure between Sully and him, iv, 208. His arts to win at gaming, 261.

Piombino. Usurped by Spain from the emperor, iii, 333.

Pisany, John de Vivonne, de, deputed by Henry IV to the pope, who refuses to give him audience, i, 358. Sent to Rome to pay obedience to the pope, 378.

Pius IV, pope. Degrades the cardinal de Chatillon, i, 20.

Pius V, refuses to give a dispensation for the marriage of Henry IV with Margaret de Valois, i, 31. Deplores the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, 35. His character, iii, 422.

Plague, at Paris, hinders the celebration of the baptism of the children of France, iv, 116.

Placentia, cardinal de, legate, his plots with the states of Paris ineffectual, i, 356. He retires to Soissons after the reduction of Paris, 424.

Plessis, Francis du. See Richelieu.

Plessis-Mornay. See Mornay.

Pluviant, Claveau, a Protestant gentleman murdered at the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, i, 27, 36.

Pluviers or Petiviers, taken by the two kings, i, 194.

Podins, a Catholic officer in the royalist party, i, 59.

Poissy. Taken by the two kings, i, 194.

Poitiers, blockade of this city, i, 302. It surrenders to Henry IV, 443. Sum paid for its surrender, ii, 264. Quarrel between Sully and father Cotton on account of a college in this city, iii, 355. The citizens make complaints against the Jesuits, iv, 155.

Poitou, Henry's journey into this province, 476. He gives the government of it to Sully, iii, 177. Value of this government, ib. His journey thither, 258. Honours paid him there, 261. He sells this government to the duke of Rohan, v, 53. Roads and public works made by him there, 147.

Pol, Antony de Saint, brings the forces of the League to the siege of Rouen, i, 269. One of the four marshals of France made by the League, 347. Slain by the duke of Guise, ii, 340.

Police, order in it restored, ii, 231. Sully's maxims upon the police, 413. Henry IV restores it in his kingdom. iii, 416. Regulations upon it, iv, 189. Other regulations and establishments projected in the cabinet of state, 322.

Political Design, or the great design of Henry IV. This prince corresponds with queen Elizabeth upon that subject, ii, 426. Sully goes to Dover to confer with her, 428. The five principal points of this design, 430, 31. Discloses it to the king of England, iii, 118. Sully imparts it to the cardinal Bufalo, 312. Plots at court to hinder the execution of it, iv, 157. Henry and Sully endeavour to forward it, 321. The succession of Cleves made the pretence, 389. Means of executing it. The design endeavoured to be blasted: the princes and electors who unite with Henry upon the great design. It is broken off by the death of Henry. Explanation of this political scheme, v, 62, et seq. Henry IV's general view in it, 72. The probability of its execution proved, 73. In what manner it was formed by Henry and Sully, 76, and concerted with queen Elizabeth, 80. Its purport with respect to religion, 84. Means by which

the infidels were to be driven out of Europe, 87. Its purport merely political, to humble the house of Austria, 89. To establish fifteen equal powers, 93. Measures taken with the princes of Europe, 102. Detail of the forces, and the necessary expenses, 107. Dispositions and march of the armies, 108. Manifestos, 112. Regulations for the troops, 114. The result which might be expected from the great design, ibid.

Poilet, skirmishes at, i, 207.

Poland. Henry III is elected king of Poland, i, 47, and returns to France after the death of Charles IX, 52. Sigismund king of Poland, driven out of Sweden by his uncle, ii, 349. Part of the great design relating to this kingdom. See Political Design.

Poltrot, John de Mere, assassinates the duke of Guise, i, 14.

Pomegue, isle and castle of, restored to France, ii, 440.

Pompadour, Lewis, viscount of, one of the heads of the League in Limosin, ii, 116.

Pons. Henry IV and the prince of Condé have a conference there, but quarrel, i, 69. The great boldness of the Protestants in that city, iv, 151.

Ponteaudemer. Taken from the League by the party of Henry IV, i, 212. Surrendered to the prince of Parma, 284. Submits to Henry IV, 433.

Pontcarré, de, serves Henry IV at Paris against the seditious party, i, 451. Summoned to the council held upon the restoration of the Jesuits, iii, 192. Appointed one of the council of regency by Henry IV, iv, 422, and admitted into the public council of the queen-regent, 466.

Pont-Courlay, a Protestant gentleman, his plots against Sully in Poitou, iii, 259. Henry IV employs him to reconcile Sully and father Cotton, 363. He gives Sully some information concerning the seditious faction, iv, 248.

Pont l'Eveque, taken from the League by the royalists, i, 212.

Pont-neuf. Finished by Henry IV, iii, 415.

Pontoise, taken by the two kings, i, 194. Retaken by the League, 212. Sum paid by Henry at its surrender, ii, 264.

Porte, la, raises obstacles to the marriage of mademoiselle de Mercœur with the duke of Vendome, iv, 248.

Portes, des. See Tiron.

Portocarrero, Hernando Teillo, surprises Amiens, and is slain there: a saying of his upon the great captains of his time, ii, 163.

Porto-Hercule. The Spaniards seize it unjustly, iii, 332.

Portugal. Henry IV sends La Tremouille there to examine into the dispute concerning the true or false Don Sebastian, ii, 233. Catherine de Medicis has a claim upon this kingdom, ib.

Posts, regulations concerning them; post-horses established, iv, 322,

Poterie, La, a gentleman attached to Sully, and present with him at the skirmish at Touvery, i, 27.

Potier. See Gevres, and Blancmenil.

Prada, secretary of state to the king of Spain, L'Hote carries on a correspondence with him, iii, 210.

Praslin, Charles de Choiseul, marquis de, captain of the guards, ii, 482. He arrests the count of Auvergne, 488. Sully's friendship for him calumniated, iii, 390. Gratuity granted him by Henry IV, 418. His letters to Sully upon the fondness of this prince for hunting, iv, 141. A conversation between them upon the prince of Condé's flight, 356. Henry sends him to Flanders to demand the princess of Condé, 359. The queen-regent deputes him to Sully, 458.

Pre, du, Du Rollet makes use of him to traverse Sully's treaty with Villars, i, 413. Who orders him to be hanged, 417.

Preaux, Hector de, a Protestant officer, governor of Châtelleraut: cabals during the siege of Amiens, ii, 175. One of the agents of France to the states-general, iv, 173. Deputed by Jeannin to Henry IV, 341. Solicits the archduke in favour of the prince of Epinoy, 375. Foretells the persecution of the Protestants under the new reign, v, 14.

Pressaigny, a Protestant gentleman, present at the battle of Bonneval, i. 143.

Primerose, a Protestant preacher at Bourdeaux, iv, 188.

Privas, synod of, the dispute concerning Saint John d'Angely terminated there, v, 123. See Rohan.

Profession of faith made by Henry IV. The objections to this writing removed by Sully: it is sent to Rome, i, 375.

Prognostics of the death of Henry IV, and this prince's presages of it, iv, 426. See Henry IV.

Protestants. See under Nantes, edict of, Henry IV, Sully, Bouillon, Chatellerault, Gergeau.

Provence. The king of Spain endeavours to put the duke of Savoy in possession of this province, i, 307. The rebels make an attempt to seize the strong towns in it, iii, 439.

Provinces of France. Debts due to them discharged by Sully, iv, 179.

Provinces, United. See Flanders.

Proutiere, Philip Gourea de la, deputed by Catherine de Medicis to the queen of Navarre, i, 17.

Prussia. See Brandenburg.

Pucharnaut, agent for Henry IV in Auvergne, iii, 315.

Puget, treasurer of the exchequer, iii, 385. Brings Sully a comptant from the queen, which he refuses to sign, v, 6.

Puiseaux. Sully is sent thither by Henry IV, ii, 417.

Puritans. Quarrels between them and the English Protestants, iii, 154. Conferences at London between them and the church of England, 324.

Q.

Quasy, a Protestant gentleman, what happened to him at Marmande, i, 81.
Quelus, or Caylus. See Caylus.
Quentin Saint, the battle of, lost by the constable of Montmorency: an account of what followed afterwards, i, 14. Henry goes to St. Quentin to see mademoisells d'Estrees, 247.
Quimper, taken by marshal d'Aumont, ii, 14.

R.

Rabodanges, a Protestant gentleman, escapes the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i, 34. A letter wrote to him by Charles IX, ib.
Rafis, John de Leyré, called, discovers the treason of L'Hote, iii, 212. Gives information of it to Barrault, and escapes out of Spain, ib. Comes to Henry IV, and gives him proofs of it; rewards which he obtains for this discovery, 215.
Ragny, obtains the employment formerly possessed by the baron de Lux. iii, 402.
Ragny, madame de, a confident of Henry IV in his amours, iii, 249.
Raleigh. Sully sees him at Dover, ii, 428. One of the malecontents at London, iii, 55. Information given by him to Sully, 86. He conspires against the king of England, 154.
Rambouillet, Nicholas d'Angennes, marquis of. i, 122. Has great share in cementing the union of the two kings, 133, and in the treaty of Plessis-les-Tours, 185.
Rambures, de, murders the young d'Epinoy, iv, 143.
Ranchin, physician to the constable de Montmorency, contributes to the seizing of the Luquisses, iv, 8.
Randon, John Lewis de la Rochefoucault, count of, loses the battle of Issoire against the Protestants, i, 230.
Rastignac, De, one of the heads of the league in Languedoc, ii, 116.
Ratisbon, diet of, a conference there about reconciling the two religions, ii, 462.
Ravaillac, Francis, the procedings at his trial suppress, iv, 435. Other faults attributed to his judges, and remarks upon this conduct, ib. Ravaillac's punishment: particulars on this subject, 448. A particular account of the assassination of Henry IV, v, 159 et seq. Examination of

the different opinions concerning the cause of the authors of this parricide. ib.

Raucourt. See Bouillon, Sedan.

Reason, council of, Established in the assembly des notables, at Rouen, ii, 155, which afterwards requests Henry IV to suppress it, 158.

Rebours, commissioner for registering the rents, iii, 301.

Reuby. Henry IV orders the fortifications of that place to be demolished, iv, 173.

Recolets, instituted, iii, 173.

Recrainville, Lewis d'Alonville de, or l'Arclainville, commands in Chartres for the league, i, 191.

Refuge, du, agent in Switzerland, iv, 194. Sully charges him with behaving ill there, 382.

Regnardiere, La, a court buffoon, banished, ii, 35. A bon-mot of his concerning Beringhen, 527.

Religion, memorial drawn up by Sully upon the toleration of religions, iii, 222. Part of the great design of Henry IV, relating to religion: division of the several religions, and the means of keeping them in tranquillity, v, 86.

Renaud, Rachel, discovers the conspiracy of La-Flèche, iv, 366.

Renier, escapes the massacre of St. Bartholomew by the assistance of Vezins his enemy, i, 45. Succours Montaubon, and defeats a body of troops belonging to the king, ib. Themines obliges him to give up the command of Villemur, 309.

Rennes. Sully resides there while he settles the affairs of this province, ii, 199. Henry IV passes some time there; his firmness with respect to the sovereign courts, 200.

Renouard, inspector of accounts, employed in registering the rents, iii, 301. Sully's confidence in him, and the advice he gives him before he retires from court, v, 41.

Reole, La, taken by the Protestants, i, 57. Catherine de Medicis confers there with the king of Navarre, 70: Ussae delivers up this place to the league, 72.

Republic, a Protestant, scheme of establishing it in France formed by admiral Coligny. See Coligny. The heads of the party endeavour to put it into execution, iv, 12. Bouillon seeks to engage the prince of Condé in the design, 499.

Resnel, Antony de Clermont, Marquis de, one of the heads of the Protestant party, i, 27. Murdered in the massacre of St. Bartholomew, 36.

Resnel company of, defeated by Henry IV, i, 154.

Retz, Albert de Gondy, duke of, one of the counsellors of Catherine de Medicis, i, 32. Made one of the members of the new council of finances, ii, 36.

Retz, Charles de Gondy de. See Bellisle.

——, Peter de Gondy de. See Gondy, cardinal de.

Revenues, royal, estimation made of them in the assembly des notables, ii, 149. Memorial upon the means of augmenting them, iv, 322.

Rheims, revolts from the duke of Guise, and surrenders to Henry IV, ii, 25. This city refuses to admit the Jesuits, iii, 355. Lewis XIII is crowned there, v, 13.

Rhinberg, besieged and taken by the prince of Orange, ii, 419. Retaken by the Spaniards, iv, 131.

Rhone. The borders of this river, as far as Lyons, ceded to the king by the treaty of Lyons, ii, 400. Henry IV, secures to himself this possession, iii, 340.

Richardot, John de, president, employed in the affair of a treaty of commerce between France and Spain, iii, 313. In the negociations for a peace between Spain and the United Provinces, iv, 276, 79. His death, 302.

Richelieu, Francis du Plessis de, endeavours to injure Sully during his journey to Poitou, ii, 259. Henry employs him to reconcile this minister and father Cotton, 363.

————, cardinal de, follows the political system formed by Sully for humbling the house of Austria, iii, 209.

Richeome, father, a Jesuit, dedicates a book to Sully, iii, 364.

Rieux, René de, de Sourdiac, one of the heads of the league, i, 332.

Rieux, governor of Noyon, defends himself there with great bravery, i, 249.

Rieux, de, deputed by the prince of Condé to Sully, iv, 490.

Rigaut, defends Corbeil againt the prince of Parma, i, 240.

Rignac, Peter de, lieutenant for the duke of Bouillon: his plots in the Protestant party during the siege of Amiens, ii, 175. Sent by Bouillon to Henry IV, 510. Promises to defend his towns against this prince, but abandons them, iv, 31, 87.

Risse, de Crequy de, attends Henry IV, in the campaign of Franche-Comté, ii, 65.

Roannais, duke of, cabals with the malecontents, iv, 248.

Roche, count de la, takes Agen. See Agen, Matignon.

Rochebeaucourt, La, obtains the post of king's lieutenant in St. John d'Angely, iv, 112.

Roche-Chalais. See Chalais.

Rochefoucault, Francis duke de la, suspected of murdering the duke of Guise, i, 14, 27. Murdered at the massacre of St. Bartholomew, 36.

————, Francis duke de la, son of the former duke, colonel-general, present at the siege of Fontenay, and the battle of Coutras, i, 142.

One of the royalist commanders in Limosin, ii, 116. He is slain at the battle of St. Yrier, 116.

Rochefoucault, the abbé de la, made a cardinal, iv, 381.

Roche-Guyon de Silly, count de la, i, 122.

Rochelle, given to the Protestants, i, 4. Catherine de Medicis endeavours to get possession of it by stratagem, 22. The duke of Anjou is forced to raise the siege of it, 46. Honours paid by the Rochellers to Henry IV, ii, 49. Pernicious designs of the Protestants assembled there against Henry IV, i, 182. Honours paid by it to the king in the person of Sully, iii, 261. Henry's kind reception of the deputies from Rochelle, iv, 148. The differences between the Protestants and Catholics in Rochelle terminated, and the Rochellers obliged to give the king satisfaction, 152. Sully supports the Rochellers against the Jesuits in the affair of father Seguiran, 153, 4. He loses several great sums which he had lent them, v, 55.

Rochemorte, Lewis Bouchereau de, surprises Angers, and is slain there, i, 124.

Rochepot, Antony de Silly de la, advises Sully to attend monsieur to Flanders, i, 90. He is sent ambassador to Spain: insulted at Madrid, ii, 421. Returns to France, iv, 135.

Rochette, agent for the duke of Savoy in the affair of the marquisate of Saluces, ii, 328.

———, La, agent for the duke of Guise in his treaty with Henry, ii, 21.

Rodelle, master of the horse to queen Margaret, gives information of the plots carried on by the malecontents to Henry and to Sully, iii, 452.

Rodolph, emperor, his wars with Hungary and the Turks. The king of Spain deprives him of Final, ii, 532. His war against the Hungarians and Turks, 534. He seizes upon Donawert unjustly, iv, 286. Examination of his claims upon the principalities of Cleves and Juliers, &c., 336. He gives the investiture of them to the archduke Leopold, and endeavours to gain over Henry to his interest, 390. He occasions an insurrection of the German Protestants by his cruelties to them, 413. Suffers Juliers to be taken by the confederates, 507, and shares the succession of Cleves between the elector of Brandenbourg and the palatine of Nieubourg, 508.

Rohan, house of, its alliances, its claim to the succession of the house of Albret, for the appanages of Navarre, Foix, and Armagnac, ii, 115; iii, 400.

———, Benjamin de. See Soubise.

Rohan, Henry II duke of, the princess Catherine proposes a marriage between him and mademoiselle de Sully, ii, 115. Henry IV refuses his consent to this match, 161. The duke of Rohan's cabals in the Protestant party, and with the king of England, iii, 252. His reception of Sully in Poitou, 262. He marries mademoiselle de Sully, 401. Refused the pri-

vilege of nominating the king's lieutenant of Saint John d'Angely, 403. He obtains his pardon of Henry IV, iv, 112, and does the king some services in detecting the plots of the courtiers, 162. He commands the Swiss troops sent against Cleves, 424. Approves Sully's design of resigning his employments, 483. Is made marshal de camp of the army sent to the siege of Juliers, 505. He purchases the government of Poitou from Sully, v, 54, and openly supports his cause in the assembly of Châtelleraut, 121. His dispute with the queen-regent about the king's lieutenancy of Saint John d'Angely, 123.

Rohan, Lewis de. See Montbason.

———, René, viscount of, defends Lusignan, i, 50.

———, Catherine de, marries the duke of Deux-Ponts, iii, 6.

———, Catherine de Parthenay, dutchess of, gives bad advice to the princess Catherine concerning Henry IV and Sully, ii, 103. She alters her opinion, and favours this minister, 115. Her plots with the Protestant party, 205.

———, Margaret de Bethune, dutchess of, a marriage between her and the count of Laval proposed, and afterwards with the duke of Rohan, ii, 115. Henry IV approves of this marriage, iii, 402. Gratuities given by him to the new-married couple, 403. An anecdote concerning the supposititious son of this marriage. See Tancrede.

Roissy, John James de Nismes de, commands the king's troops in Auvergne, iv, 31.

Rollet Du, an officer in the royalist party, present at the battle of Ivry, i, 224. Contributes to the taking of Louviers, 253. Thwarts Sully's treaty with Villars, 413.

Romain, Saint, a miracle related of this pious archbishop: origin of the privileges of the canons of Rouen, iv, 197.

Rome and Roman empire. The establishment of manufactures, tending to promote luxury, wisely prohibited there, iii, 363. Its revolutions; causes of its fall, v, 62, et seq.

Roncas, agent for the duke of Savoy in the affair of Saluces. His artifices and breach of faith, ii, 329.

Ronsey, company of, defeated by Henry IV, i, 154.

Roquelaure, Antony de, marshal of France, a Catholic officer in the service of Henry IV, i, 59. His character; a humorous dialogue between Henry IV and him; another between him and the archbishop of Rouen, on the subject of the princess Catherine's marriage, ii, 299. He assists in forcing Henry from the dutchess of Beaufort, when they were obliged to part, 315. The chamber of justice employ his interest with Henry, 416. A friend of Sully's, iii, 175. Henry sends him to compliment queen Margaret, iv, 46. He is summoned to the council on the affair of Sedan, 81.

Rosan, Durefort de, fights a duel with Turenne, i, 74.

Rosieres, madam de, a friend of the cardinal of Bourbon, i, 337.

Rosne, Christian de Savigny, baron of, one of the general officers in the service of the League, i, 249. One of the four marshals of France made by the League, 347. Takes Le Catelet and La Capelle, ii, 54. Defeats the French at Dourlens, 57.

Rosny, castle and estate of. See under Sully.

———, Francis de Bethune, baron of, father of the duke of Sully, his alliances, i, 4. State of his family and domestic affairs, 8, 24. He attends the queen of Navarre, 27. His advice not listened to, 26. He makes his escape at the massacre of St. Bartholomew. Writes to his son on that occasion, 40.

———. See Sully.

———, Maximilian II, de Bethune, marquis of, eldest son of the duke of Sully. Henry IV sends du Laurence to him during his indisposition, 143. Several great matches proposed for him, 209. The king marries him to mademoiselle de Crequy, 210. Particulars relating to this marriage, and to the private conduct of Rosny: the king proposes to give him mademoiselle de Vendome in marriage, 213. Henry IV reconciles the duke of Vendome and him, 412. He gives him the reversion of the post of master-general of the ordnance, he commands the artillery in the expedition of Cleves, 421. He prevents his father from resigning his employments, 434. Prevails upon Sully to leave Montrond, v, 17. The fortune he received with his wife, 52. Sully lends him money, and pays his debts, 55. The uneasiness which his dissolute conduct gives to Sully, 133.

Rosny, baron of. See Bethune, Solomon de.

Rosne, de, Sully defends Passy against him, i, 216.

Rotonneau, isle and castle of, surprised by the grand duke of Tuscany, and restored to Henry IV, ii, 440.

Roubais, or Robeck, Robert de Melun, marquis of, takes Bouillon prisoner, i, 95. Cause of his hatred of Sully, ib.

Roubais, Mary de Melun, lady de, refuses to give her consent to a marriage between the marquis of Cœuvres and mademoiselle de Melun, iii, 404.

Rouen. The Protestants take possession of it, i, 23. D'Allegre takes it for the League, 216. Henry IV prepares to invest it, 256. He begins the siege, and makes an unsuccessful attack, 259. The trenches forced at different times by that prince and admiral Villars, 262. The vigorous defence made by this governor, 267. Henry is obliged to raise the siege, 280. Sum paid by Henry for the surrender of Rouen, 364.

Rousse, La, servant to the dutchess of Beaufort. Sully causes her to be shut up in the Bastille, ii, 317.

Roussiere, La, governor of Fontenay for the League, i, 142.
Roussy, count of, solicits a pardon for marshal Biron, ii, 494. Slain in the battle of Arques, i, 207.
Rouxel. See Medavy.
Rubenpré, Andrew de Bourbon de, deputed to Henry IV by the states of Blois, i, 67.
Rue, La, a gentleman in Sully's service, wounded with him at the encounter of Touvery, i, 246.
Rumigny, his speech to marshal Biron upon the scaffold, ii, 490.
Rumilly, treaty of, between the duke of Savoy and the republic of Geneva, ii, 534.
Rusé, Martin, de Beaulieu, secretary of state, i, 206. He favours the Jesuits in the quarrel between father Seguiran and the Rochellers, iv, 153, 4.
Russia. See Muscovy.
Russy, Elias de La-Place de, agent for Bouillon, iv, 1. Sent by him to Flanders, 167, where he concludes the treaty of mediation with Jeannin, &c., 370.

S.

Sagonne, John Babou de, slain at the battle of Arques, i, 207.
Salcede, his resistance to the Guises, the cause of his death, i, 173.
Salignac, John de Gontault de, his duel with Rosan, i, 75. One of the heads of the Protestant party, ii, 171. Solicits a pardon for Biron, 494. Ambassador to the Ottoman Porte, iii, 346.
Salic-law. An erroneous opinion of Sully's concerning this law, iii, 330.
Salt. The price of it increased to fifteen sols three bushels, ii, 165. Regulations upon this part of the revenue, iii, 119.
Saluces, marquisate of, a dispute concerning it, ii, 227. Artifices of the duke of Savoy to elude the restitution of it, 328, 352. Sully's reasons for not giving up this fief, 348. Conditions upon which it is ceded to that prince, 400.
Samblançay. See Beaune.
Sancerre. Siege of this town, i, 46.
Sancy, Nicholas de Harlay de, one of the heads of the Protestant party, i, 335. Serves Villeroy in his treaty, 428: his character, his services, ii, 32. His raillery and bon-mots upon the fair Gabrielle prevent his being made superintendant of the finances, 33. His quarrel with Sully in the king's presence, 134. He leaves the council of finances, 169. The king of England blames his conduct, iii, 77. His hatred of Sully; his dissipa-

tion: Henry IV purchases his jewels, 387. Sully buys the lands of Dourden of him, v, 53.

Saone, Henry's brave exploits at the pass of this river, ii, 60. Utility of its being joined with the Loire, iii, 299.

Saveuse. Anne de Brosse. Present at the battle of Bonneval, i, 191.

Saveuse, Charles de Brosse, loses Bonneval, where he is wounded, and dies in despair, i, 192.

Sault, Christian d'Aguirre, countess of, her party in Provence, i, 301. Favours that of the king there, ii, 31 and assists in driving out the dukes of Savoy and d'Epernon, 117. She endeavours to procure a marriage between the marquis of Rosny and mademoiselle de Crequy; and to hinder Sully's conversion, iv, 216. Engages in Henry's amours, 221.

Saulx. See Tavannes.

Saumur, one of the five cities that continued faithful to Henry III, i, 182. Given to Henry IV, as a cautionary city by the treaty between the two kings 186. The Protestants there hold a mutinous assembly, iii, 172. Du-Plessis Mornay puts himself to needless expenses to fortify Saumur, 463.

Savoy. Henry IV, carries the war thither, ii, 363 et seq. Design of Philip II, to seize that state: part of the great design with respect to Savoy, v, 116.

——, Charles Emanuel, duke of, he unites with Spain and the league, and has bad success in Provence, i, 308. His plots with the states of Paris ineffectual, 353. He supports the party of the duke of Nemours in Lyons, but cannot hinder him from being driven from thence, 440. Victories gained by Lesdiguieres over the duke of Savoy, ii, 14. By the constables de Montmorency in Dauphiny and Lyonnois, 44. Other encounters in which the troops are defeated by Lesdiguieres, 117. He signs the treaty of Vervins at Chamberry, 228. He demands the princess Catherine in marriage, 295. His artifices to avoid making a restitution of the marquisate of Saluces, 328. He goes to Paris, 346. Henry's reception of him at Fontainebleau, ib. His intrigues in the French court, 349—353. Towns and forts taken from him, 367 et seq. His correspondencies with Biron, 390. Countries and forts given up by him, in exchange for Saluces, 397. Condition of the treaty between the duke of Savoy and marshal Biron, 454. Congratulates Henry on the discovery of this conspiracy, ii, 511. Fails in an attempt upon Geneva, 533. Animates Spain against France, iii, 157. He puts an end to his wars with the republic of Geneva, 160. He continues his plots against France, 430. Design of Henry IV to make him king of Lombardy, iv, 69. Presents made by him to his majesty, 176. He congratulates Henry upon the birth of the duke of Anjou, 273. An alliance between the two courts projected, 307. Sully's connexions with the duke of Savoy

calumniated, 377. He joins in the deputation sent to the king by the princess assembled at Hall, 402. He makes a treaty of alliance with France, 413. Part of the great design concerning him: he is to be declared king of Lombardy, v, 95. Forces and money to be contributed by him, 107.

Savoy-Nemours. See Nemours and Sorlin, Saint.

Saussaie, La, a Protestant gentleman; his plots during the siege of Amiens, ii, 175.

Sauves, madame de, Beaune de Samblancy Henry IV, and the duke of Alençon rivals for this lady, i, 93. She introduces Sully to Catherine de Medicis, 107; and informs him of her designs, 150. Informations sent by her to the duke of Guise and the states of Blois, 179.

Sauveur, Claude de Joyeuse de Saint, slain at the battle of Coutras, i. 163.

Scaliger, his death, iv, 258.

Schomberg, Gaspar de, count of Nanteuil, Henry IV consults him upon his conversion, i, 327. Makes him one of the members of the council of finances, ii, 36, 123. His death, occasioned by a very extraordinary sickness; his eulogium, iii, 102.

———, Henry de, marshal of France, Sully's friendship for him calumniated, iii, 390. Gives information of Ravaillac's conspiracy to Henry IV, and to Sully, iv, 430. He is deputed to Sully by the queen-regent, 458.

Schomberg, Theodore, a Swiss colonel, slain at the battle of Ivry, a fine speech of Henry's concerning him, i, 226.

———, count of, grand marshal of the empire, ii, 465.

Scotch-Guard, acknowledge Henry IV for king, i, 199.

Sebastian, Don, circumstances relating to the pretended Don Sebastian, ii, 233, 461.

Sedan, account of Henry IV's expedition against it, iv, 71, et seq. Gratuities which Bouillon receives from Mary de Medicis for this principality, v, 4.

Sfondrato. Commands the troops of Gregory IV, at the siege of Rouen, i, 267, 280.

Seguier, John, president of the parliament: the good advice which he gives Sully when in discontent, i, 316.

———, Peter, chancellor, supports the princes of Henrichemont in their process with Sully, v, 136.

———, Charlotte, married to the prince of Henrichemont, v, 135.

Seguiran, Gaspard, a Jesuit, his quarrel with the Rochellers, iv, 153.

Segur, de, de Pardaillan: murdered in the massacre of St. Bartholomew. i, 39.

Segur, James, de, baron of Pardaillan, makes his escape at the massacre of St Bartholomew, i, 39.

Selles. Henry IV raises the siege of that place, i, 357.

Sellier, John, Henry's Commissioner at Troyes, iii, 419.

Selvage, Catherine, one of the bed-chamber women to the queen, 474.

Sens. Besieged by Henry IV, but with little success, i, 233.

Servian, deputy from Dauphiné for the Protestants, iv, 111.

Servin, a young man of a very extraordinary character, iii, 35.

Sicily. This kingdom designed to be given to the republic of Venice, v, 104. See Political Design.

Sidney, lord, sent by queen Elizabeth to Calais with letters for Henry IV, ii, 428. Is appointed to receive Sully in London, iii, 43.

Sigebert. Character of this king, v, 66.

Sigismond, king of Sweden, dethroned by Charles his uncle, ii, 340.

Sigogne, Charles de Beausoncle de, taken prisoner at Ivry by Sully, i, 222. An amusing discourse of his upon the affair of the advocates, iii, 46, 48.

Silk. Henry IV causes it to be cultivated in France, iii, 54. Sully's reasons for opposing it, 177. Silk manufactures established, 412.

Sillery, Nicholas Brulat de, chancellor, deputed from the court to Henry IV, i, 120. Opposes Sully's admission into the council of finances, ii, 121. Quarrels with him in the council, 172. Labours to pacify Picardy, 192. Concludes and signs the peace of Vervins, 197, 228. Is sent ambassador to Rome, 235. Is made minister of state, ii, 365. Labours to procure a repeal of the Jesuits banishment, iii, 192. His plots to procure two cardinals hats for Villars and Marquemont, 225. He unites with the courtiers and Jesuits to ruin Sully, 374, 380. The cause of his hatred to Sully. Acquaints him with the advancement of Paul V, to the pontificate, 426. His letters to Sully at the assembly of Chatelleraut, iv, 15, and to Villeroi during the expedition of Sedan, 90. Made keeper of the seals, 138. Opposes Sully's opinion concerning the proposals made by the Flemings, 165. He has another dispute with Sully, 334. Henry's judgment upon his good and bad qualities, 338. He prejudices that prince against Sully, 407. His grave reply to the queen upon the death of Henry IV. He is admitted in the secret council of Mary de Medicis, 465, 479. Endeavours to ruin Sully, v, 3. Makes a fraudulent use of the seal, 8. Gratuities from the queen-regent, 24. He supports Villeroi and d'Alincourt against Sully, 27.

Sillery, Noel Brulart, commandeur de, engaged in the amours of Henry IV, iv, 221. Is admitted into the secret council of Mary de Medicis, 479.

Silly. See Rochepot and Rocheguyon, la.

Simiane. See Gordes.

Simiers, madam de, Louisa l'Hopital Vitry, contributes towards the success of the treaty between the king and Villars, i, 388, 411, 419.

Sixteen, council of, Maienne causes four of them to be hanged, i, 268.

Sixtus V, a bon-mot of his to cardinal Joyeuse upon Henry III, i, 69. He excommunicates the Protestants, 114. A saying of his upon the barricadoes, 174. He excommunicates Henry III, after the murder of the Guises, 183. His sayings and predictions concerning Henry IV, the duke of Maienne, the king of Spain, and the duke of Savoy, 209. His character: a bon-mot upon him, iii, 422.

Sluys, siege and surrender of, 318.

Sobolle, Raymond de Comminges de, and his brother driven out of Metz, iii, 5.

Soissons, one of the towns of the League, i, 323. The chiefs of the League retire thither. See League. The garrison is defeated by the royalists, ii, 44.

Soissons, Charles de Bourbon, count of, joins Henry IV and takes the duke of Mercœur's baggage, i, 155. Behaves bravely at the battle of Coutras, 162, but hinders Henry from taking any advantage of his victory, 167. His design of marrying the princess Catherine, 168. Quits Henry after the barricadoes, 175. He endeavours to prevail upon Sully to quit the party of Henry IV, 186. Goes to Bearn with an intention to marry the princess Catherine, 303. His character, 304. He becomes one of the heads of the third party, 324. His views and plots with the states of Paris, 354. He defeats the Spaniards at Laon, 452. Made great master of the household to the king, 474. Refused the presidency of the council and attends the king into Burgundy, ii, 47. Sully endeavours to break off his marriage with the princess Catherine, 97. He discovers the plot of Mignon to poison the king, 303. Opposes Sully's opinion with regard to the war of Savoy, 371. Quarrels with Sully, 442. Summoned to the council held at Blois, concerning arresting the heads of the seditious party, 472. He is reconciled to Sully, iii, 30. He quarrels again with that minister, 164. Henry purchases his earldom of St. Paul, 343. His quarrels with the prince of Conty, 460. He quarrels again with Sully, iv, 39. Opposes the expedition of Sedan, 80. He discovers his discontent publicly, 245, and unites with the courtiers and Jesuits, 299 Made one of the members of the public council of Mary de Medicis, his conduct on this occasion, 466, 472. His quarrels with the prince of Conty and the duke of Guise, 473. Sully's advice to him, 496. He combats Sully's opinion with regard to the siege of Juliers, 505. Procures the government of Normandy, v, 22.

Solre, count of, ambassador from the archduke to Henry IV, ii, 424.

Sommerive, Charles Emanuel de Lorrain count of, defends Lyons against

Henry IV, i, 443. Surrenders the place to him, ii, 12. Is banished by the king for his amours with the countess of Moret, iv, 238.

Sophy of Persia, sends an ambassador to the emperor Rodolph, ii, 422.

Sorlin, Henry de Savoy-Nemours, marquis of Saint, comes to Lyons to the assistance of the duke of Nemours, i, 440. Makes a treaty with the king, ii, 87.

Soubise, Benjamin de Rohan, duke of, Henry offended with him, iv, 112.

Sourdis, Francis d'Escourbleau, marquis of, one of the heads of the Catholics who opposes Henry IV, i, 332.

Sourdis, Francis d'Escourbleau de, he is made a cardinal, ii, 234. Goes to Rome to assist at the conclave, iii, 224.

Sourdis, Isabella Babou de la Bourdaisiere, marchioness of, mistress to the chancellor de Chiverny, ii, 173. Seconds the dutchess of Beaufort's schemes, 238.

Southampton, earl of, escorts Sully to London, iii, 44. In great favour with the king of England, 83. His quarrel with Grey, 154.

Souvré, Gilles de, an anecdote concerning him: his eulogium, ii, 416.

Spain. The Spaniards join the duke of Maienne, i, 216. They behave well at the battle of Ivry, 219. Make proposals of union with Henry IV, 295. Victorious, 301. Worsted in Provence and Dauphiné, 307. Assist the League, 321. Their plots in the assembly of the states at Paris, 352. The snares laid by the council of Madrid for Henry IV, 382. They offer him the infanta in marriage; they leave Paris, 383. They send succours to the duke of Nemours. They besiege and take La Capelle, 442. Assist the Jesuits in their process with the university, 451. Defeated before Laon, 458. Their expeditions into Brittany, ii, 14. They endeavour to establish Burgundy into a kingdom for the duke of Maienne, 15. Driven from Marseilles by the duke of Guise, 31. Henry IV declares war against them, 40. They take Le Catelet and La Capelle, 54. Defeat the French at Dourlens, ib. Enter Franche-Compté, and defeated by Henry IV at Fontaine-Françoise, 65. They surprise Amiens, 162. They are driven out of Brittany, 198. Continue the war against the Dutch, 404. Henry disgusted with them: they insult his ambassador, 421. Support the French rebels, 454, as likewise those in Ireland, 460. Continuation of their war with the Dutch, iii, 12. Their squadron defeated by the Dutch, 13. Their plots in England after the death of queen Elizabeth, 21. They endeavour to gain James, 43. Spanish faction in London, 54. James's hatred and jealousy of them, 74. He accuses them of conspiring against his life, 80. They make him great offers to induce him to forsake France, 87. They support the English priests, and endeavour to dethrone him, 97. They foment the conspiracy of the English lords against James, 153. Their fleet defeated by the Dutch, 161. Henry unwisely prohibits trading with them, 310. Conti-

nuation of their war with the Dutch, 317. They endeavour to procure a peace with England. 321. The beginning of their difference with the Grisons, 336. Continuation of their war in Flanders, 431. New plots carried on by them against James, 434. They build a new armament of gallies, iv, 9. Continuation of their war with the Dutch, iv, 132. Proposals for a truce, 133. They plot against Henry in his court, 156. Continuation of the war in Flanders, 163, et seq. Negociations for a truce with Holland, 273. The weakness of this crown in fixing the boundaries of Navarre and Bearn, 280. As likewise in the revolt of the Moors, 281. Their detestable plots against the life of Henry IV, 304. A treaty of truce concluded between them and the Dutch, 370. The queen-regent seeks their alliance, 467, 482. They send ambassadors to Paris upon the death of Henry IV, v, 12. The object of the great design with regard to that crown, 86.

Spinola, the marquis of, besieges Ostend, ii, 532. Has an audience of Henry IV at Paris, iii, 431. His military exploits in Flanders, 432. He besieges and takes Rhimberg, iv, 131. Concludes a treaty with the Flemings for a suspension of arms, 276. Favours the prince of Condé's flight, 350, and dissuades the archduke from surrendering him, 359.

Spinola, Frederick, his squadron beaten by the Dutch, ii, 532. Killed in a naval battle, iii, 157.

Stafford, See Sydney.

Stenay, taken by the duke of Bouillon, i, 301.

Strozzy, Philip, one of the principal officers of Charles IX, i, 2. Endeavours to surprise Rochelle, 22.

Stuart, Henry, lord Darnley, becomes king of Scotland.

Stuart, Mary, queen of Scotland, niece to the duke of Guise, i, 15.

Stuart, Arabella, proposed for a wife to Henry IV, ii, 215.

Stuniga, or Zuniga, Don Baltazar de, his offers in the name of Spain to Henry IV rejected by that prince, i, 378. Sent ambassador to France, iii, 314.

Sweden, a revolution in that kingdom, ii, 340. The bad policy of that court, iii, 84, Part of the great design, relating to Sweden, v, 88, 107.

Sweden, Charles, king of, dethrones Sigismund his nephew, ii, 340, and confirms himself in the throne, iv, 165. Himself and his son enter into a confederacy against the house of Austria, 422.

Swiss. They prevent Charles IX from being taken at Meaux, i, 23. They grant troops to Henry III, 136. Sully treats with them for this purpose, 133. They march into France under several disadvantages, 149, and take part with the League to avoid being cut in pieces at Auneau, 170. They are disarmed on the day of the barricadoes, 172. They fight bravely for Henry IV at Arques, 208, but refuse to fight at Ivry, 223. They mutiny in Henry's army after this battle, 235. They bring him succours

at the siege of Rouen, 258, and refuse to pursue the prince of Parma, 294. Their valour before Laon, 459. They unite with France against Spain in the war of 1595, ii, 46. Disbanded after the peace of Vervins, 230. A solemn embassy from the thirteen cantons to renew the alliance, 528. France levies soldiers in Switzerland, 528. Their dispositions and true policy with respect to the house of Austria, iii, 125. Their share in the design of Henry IV, 127. Become mediators between the duke of Savoy and the republic of Geneva, 158. The part they have in the affair of La Valtoline and the Grisons, 336. Debts contracted by Henry IV with them during the League, 413. The Swiss join the Grisons against Spain, iv, 175. Sully pays the debts of the state to the cantons, 179, 194. The Swiss enter into the confederacy against the house of Austria, 414.

Sully, Maximilian de Bethune, duke of, his ancestors, family, and his birth, i, 5. Goes with the court of Navarre to Paris, 27. Is presented to the king of Navarre: his studies, 27. Escapes the massacre of St. Bartholomew, 34. His education, 41. His first exploits in arms, 54, 57. He quarrels with Frontenac and Turenne, 59. Follows Henry IV to Bearn: his economy: his reception by the princess Catherine, 62. He is at the taking of Eause; at the battles before Mirande, Nerac, and other encounters, 63. His behaviour during the junction of the two courts of Catherine de Medicis and the king of Navarre, 71. He is in danger at the reduction of Cahors, 76, and before Marmande. Defends Monsegur, 78. Is made counsellor of Navarre, and chamberlain in ordinary to Henry, 85. His motives for going with monsieur into Flanders, 90. He entertains several gentlemen in his train, 94. What befel him at Cambray, 96. Monsieur refuses to oblige him, which occasions a coolness between that prince and him, 100. Advice given him by the prince of Orange, of the treachery of Antwerp, 101. His reception from madam de Mastin, 103. Honours paid him by the burgesses of Bethune, 105. He returns into France, his reception from Henry: he goes to the court of Henry III to acquaint that prince with the proposals made by Spain to the king of Navarre, ib. He goes to visit monsieur at Chateau-Thierry, 107. Continues at court to observe the motions of the League, 108. Falls in love with mademoiselle de Saint-Mesmin, 109, and marries mademoiselle de Courtenay, 111. His domestic employments during the first year of his marriage, ib. He returns to the king of Navarre, and carries him a supply of money, 112. He receives the duke of Joyeuse at Rosny, 114. He gives good counsel to the Protestants in the assembly, 117. Returns to Paris, and commences a negociation there, 121. He goes to Guyenne, 125. The king of Navarre, by his advice, makes head against three armies in the neighbourhood of Rochelle, 133. He throws himself into Saint-Bazeille, 135.

Is deputed to Saint-Maur to Henry III, 137. He treats likewise with the Swiss; and for the use of the foreign troops in France, 138. He is present at the siege of Talmont, 140, and at that of Fontenay, 143. He goes to his wife during the plague at Rosny, 146. Reflections upon the weakness of Henry III, 147. He penetrates into the designs of Catherine de Medicis, 149. Defeats a squadron belonging to Joyeuse, 153, and takes advantage of his absence to harass his troops: services which he does his brother, 156. He goes to Paris to the assistance of madame de Rosny, ib. He returns to the king of Navarre, and serves him in the battle of Coutras, 158. His wise advice after this battle, 168. Deputed to the prince of Conti, 169. Returns to Bergerac, 171. He accompanies the count of Soissons to court, 176. His conversation with Henry III, 177. Reflections upon the weakness of that prince, 181. He comes to make his report to the king of Navarre, and goes back again to conclude the treaty between the two kings, 185. His indisposition: his advice to Henry IV upon his interview with Henry III, 188. He helps to defend Tours, 190. The part he has in the battle of Saveuse, 191. He goes to the assistance of his wife: his excessive grief for her death, 193. He returns to the army of the two kings, 194. Services which he does to Henry IV, 200. He seizes Meulan, the government of which is denied him, ib. Fails in his attempt upon Louviers, 202. Reconnoitres the duke of Maienne's army, 203. Present at the battle of Arques, 206. Fails in his attempt upon Vernon, 210. Storms the suburbs of Saint Germain, 211. Preserves the country of Mante against the troops of the League, 213. His motives for writing his Memoirs, ib. He contributes towards raising the siege of Meulan, 214. Defends Passy, 217. Present at the battle of Ivry, wounded there, and takes several prisoners, 221, 22. Carried in triumph to Rosny: Henry IV caresses him and makes him a knight, 228, 29. Present at the siege of Paris, 234. He retires in disgust, 244. He saves the life of Clermont-Tonnere at Joigny, ib. His adventure at Touvery, where he narrowly escapes being slain, 246. Henry disconcerts an enterprise which he had projected at Mante against the duke of Maienne, 252. He visits madame Châteaupers, 255. Seizes a boat richly laden, 256. Attends Henry IV to the siege of Rouen, 258. Opposes Biron's opinion concerning the manner of attacking the place, 259. Is present at the attack of the trenches, 263. Makes remonstrance to the king, upon the dangers to which he exposes his life, 265. Conversation between them, concerning the mutinies of the Catholics in his army, 267. He endeavours to procure the surrender of Rouen, by a correspondence within, 266. He goes with Henry IV to meet the prince of Parma, 270. He complains of the duke of Nevers's conduct at Bully, 272. Is present in the battle of Aumale, 276, and at all the expeditions in the neighbourhood of Rouen, 286. He declares him-

self for pursuing the prince of Parma, 290. He marries madame de Châteaupers, 313. Retires to his seat in disgust, 314. He intercepts some papers belonging to the League and the third party, and carries them to Henry IV, 318, 324. The confidence this prince places in him upon this occasion, 326. Motives which oblige him to conceal this confidence, 328. Conversation between them, 332. The true sentiments of this minister upon religion, 334. He prevails upon the Protestants to treat with the heads of the Catholics upon this subject, 337. His conversations and negociations with Bellozane, 338; with the Durets, 340; and with du Perron, ib. The part he has in the reduction of Dreux, 368. He votes contrary to the inclinations of the Protestants in their assemblies, 373. His answer to du Perron, who exhorted him to change his religion, 375. The last service he does Henry IV in the affair of his abjuration, 375. He procures a second truce for the Parisians, 381. He opposes the deputation of La Varenne to Spain, 384. He commences a negociation with admiral Villars, Medavy, &c., 388, 394. He reconciles the duke of Montpensier and the count of Soissons, 398. He treats with the dutchess of Aumale for her husband's surrender, 407; with Medavy, 408; with admiral Villars, ib. Difficulty of concluding this last treaty, 411. Sully returns to Rouen, and receives in the king's name the homage of Villars and the city of Rouen, 428. A pleasant adventure which happened to him with Bois-rosé, 435. His delicacy with regard to the gratuities and presents bestowed on him by his majesty, 437. He serves in the siege of Laon, 443. The affairs of the government oblige him to return to Paris, his conversation with the cardinal of Bourbon, 446. He discovers the designs of the seditious party, 451, and suppresses the process of the Jesuits against the University, 453. He returns to Laon to give an account of his proceedings to the king, 452. Assists in defeating the great convoy, 457. Is employed to discover Biron's designs, 462. Gives notice of the approach of the Spanish army, 464. Henry sends him to Rouen, ii, 2, and afterwards to Sedan, ib. His conversation with Bouillon, 7, et seq. The affairs of the state again oblige him to return to Paris, 14. Employed in the treaty with the duke of Guise, 25. His apology for this treaty, 28. His sentiments concerning the abuses in the finances, 37. Made secretary of state, 38. Opposes the declaration of war with Spain, 40. Returns to the council, from whence the bad conduct of the counsellors obliges him to retire, 48. His dispute with the officers of the count of Soissons, 51. Conversation between Henry and Sully upon the disasters which happened in Picardy, 78. He refuses to go with Bouillon to London, and discovers the snares laid for him by the council, 79. He goes to Paris to provide for the subsistence of the troops during the siege La Fere, 84. Goes to Amiens to attend the king, 86: he is deputed to Rouen to the duke of Montpensier, 96. Afterwards to

the princess, to break off her marriage with the count of Soissons, 98. Opposition made by the financiers to his entering the council, 118, and the king's resolution thereon, 122. Takes a journey into the districts, 126. Calumnies against him oblige Henry to recal him, 130. His quarrels with Sancy, 133. Discovers the frauds of the council of finances, 137. His reflections upon the general states of the kingdom, 140. Others upon imposts and government, 146, et seq. Contrives the means of retaking Amiens, 164. He is made head of the council during this expedition, 170. His great application to contribute to the success of the siege of Amiens, 174, and in disconcerting the cabals of the Protestants during it, 175. He opposes the besieging of Dourlens, 188. Reproves Henry for his indulgence to the duke of Mercœur, 198. His stay at Rennes: his wise regulations there to pacify Brittany, 200. He prevails upon Henry to make peace, 209. A curious conversation between them, on the necessity of Henry's marrying again, 214, et seq. Sully prepares Margaret de Valois for the dissolution of her marriage, 224. The share he has in the several regulations in the government, 231. He endeavours in vain to break off the conference of Boulogne, 234. He thwarts the schemes of madam de Beaufort to make herself queen, 237. Receives the cardinal of Florence at Paris and Saint Germain, 246. Undertakes to make a reformation in the finances, 247. His character, dispositions, eulogium, 248, 49. He gives an account of his estates, of his abilities, of his employments, &c. 253: of the distribution of his time, and his daily occupations, 255, 56, et seq. Henry IV makes him his first minister, 257. He prosecutes extortioners, and those who are guilty of any embezzlement, 267. Quarrels in full council with d'Epernon, 268. He takes the management of the farms of the state out of the hands of the nobles and foreigners, 272. Other labours in the finances, 274. Calumnies are spread against him, 275. He accuses d'Ossat of opposing the marriage of the princess Catherine and the duke of Bar, 296. Assists at a conference for the conversion of the princess, 298. Prevails upon the Protestants to consent to an alteration in the edict of Nantes, 308. The superintendance of the finances established in his favour, 310. Made superintendant of the fortifications and buildings, and surveyor-general, 311. Condoles with Henry IV, on the death of the dutchess of Beaufort, 323. Resists the duke of Savoy, who sought to corrupt him, 329. He attends the king to Blois, 331. Prevails upon Henry to marry again, 332. Tears, before Henry, the promise of marriage to be given to mademoiselle d'Entragues, 337. He concludes the marriage with the princess of Tuscany, 338. He takes the guardianship of the prince of Epinoy's children upon himself, 340. Made master-general of the ordnance, 343; and appointed commissioner for the affair of the marquisate of Saluces, his conversation with

the duke of Savoy when he came to visit him at the Arsenal, 347. His firmness in opposing the other commissioners, 351. Present at the dispute between Du-Plessis and Du-Perron, 354. Prevails upon Henry to march to Savoy, 362. Account of his conduct in this war, 366, et seq. He receives the king and queen at the Arsenal, 403. He resumes the direction of the finances and the government, 407. His advice to Henry IV, with regard to the prince of Orange, 419. Presents made to him by the grand signior, 423. He goes to Elizabeth at Dover: the discourse he has with her, the praises he gives to this queen, 428. Henry acquaints him with the birth of the Dauphin, 436. He refuses to become a security in the affair of the isles, 441. He dissuades the king from purchasing the estates of the count of Soissons, 442. Obtains the embassy to Rome for his brother the count of Béthune, 443. Letters from Henry to him upon different subjects, 444. A letter from Sully to Biron: and a conversation with him, 449. He is commissioned to interrogate La-Fin: his name is mentioned among the conspirators, 458. He takes measures for arresting Biron; and is made governor of the Bastile, 459. His reception of the foreign princes, 464. He accompanies the king to Blois, ibid. Clears the duke of Epernon, and opposes his being arrested, 468. The precautions he takes with respect to Burgundy; and Biron's resentment against him, 479. His advice to the king concerning the manner of arresting Biron, and the part he takes in the arrest of Biron and d'Auvergne, 487 et seq. A conversation between Henry and him upon his motives for pardoning the count of Auvergne, 502. He intercedes for the prince of Joinville, 506. Endeavours but in vain, to persuade Bouillon to come to court, 510. A curious conversation between Henry and him, upon the bounds which he proposed to set to his gratuities to him, 513. His discontent at the opposition that prince made to some of his designs; and the precautions he takes against his enemies, 515. His severity to the fraudulent financiers, 517. He raises the value of the gold and silver coin, and establishes the reckoning by livres, 523. His sentiments of the edict against duelling, 527. He attends Henry to Calais, 529. The king gives him the abbey of Coulon, iii, 11. Secret conversations between him and Henry, upon the death of Elizabeth, in which Sully's embassy to London is resolved upon, 20. The importance of this embassy, 21. He visits Henry when indisposed at Fontainebleau, 26. Purport of the instructions he received on his embassy to England, 30. Account of his journey to London and negociations there, 38 et seq. State of the court, and of the English government, 53. The difficulties he found in this negociation, ib. Character of the king and queen of England, 57. Presents which he receives from James, 67. An account of what passed at his first audience, 71. He has a second audience with James, and a private conversation with this prince, 91. Is invited by

the king of England to an entertainment: their discourse at dinner, 105. Sully's third audience of the king of England, in which he has a private conversation with him, and acquaints him with the conduct of his ministers, 116. He explains to him the great design, 119. The kindness shown by this prince to Sully, 129. Audience of leave. Civilities and honours paid by king James to Sully: presents made by Sully to the king, the queen, and the lords of the English court. 141, 43. Embarks for France, 145. He goes to Henry at Villers-Coterets: his reception from the king: public conversation upon his embassy, 146. Praises given him by Henry, 149. Private conversations between the king and Sully on the same subject, 151. He resumes his labours in the finances, 161. He makes remonstrances to the king upon the abuse of granting small edicts, 162. Henry supports him against his enemies, 168. He receives and treats the king at Rosny, 170. He endeavours to appease the mutiny among the Protestants, 173. He is made governor of Poitou, 174. Opposes the establishment of silk manufactures, 177. He blames Henry's great expenses in gaming, mistresses, &c. 185; and opposes the sending of colonies to Canada, ib. Employed to settle the claims of the king and the duke of Bar, to the effects of the late dutchess of Bar, 190. He endeavours to hinder the recal of the Jesuits, 197: but afterwards favours that society, 204. He presents a memorial against d'Ossat, 205. He assists in making a discovery of l'Hôte's treasonable practices, 216. His behaviour on this occasion to Villeroi, 220. He composes a memorial concerning a toleration of different religions, 224. A curious conversation between Henry and him, respecting the queen and the marchioness of Verneuil, 232. Sully gives advice to this prince, on this subject, which he does not follow, 235. He reconciles the king and the queen, who afterwards quarrel again, 243. He is ill used by that princess, 244; and forbears to concern himself in her quarrels with the king, 245. Attempts to persuade the marchioness of Verneuil to disengage herself from the king, 246. Reciprocal praises between queen Margaret and Sully, 251. He labours to prevent the cabals of the malecontents, 252. He goes to Poitou, 256. Honours paid him there: the great utility of this journey, 261. Services which he does for d'Epernon, 266. He takes measures for arresting the count d'Auvergne, 272. Letters between him and that nobleman, 277. He reproaches the marchioness of Verneuil when commissioned to interrogate her, 281. Cannot prevail upon Henry to send her out of the kingdom, 285. He deposits the king's treasure in the Bastile: 291. Some fine reflections upon government, and the duty of kings, 295. Methods for raising money, 296. Sully undertakes to prove the rents, 298. Establishes a chamber of justice, 302. Regulations upon the army: an establishment for disabled soldiers, 305. Causes of the ruin and decay of states, 307. He begins the canal of

Briare, 309. Opposes the edict for thirty per cent, 310. He obliges Villeroi and Sillery to sign the treaty of commerce, 316. Secretly favours the Flemings, 318. Sully's advice to Henry against the Spanish policy, 328. His sentiments concerning the Salic law, and the alliances of the house of France, 330. He discloses Henry's great Schemes to cardinal Bufalo, 332. Supports the Grisons against Spain, in the affair of La-Valtoline, 334. Puts the king in possession of his rights with regard to the bridge of Avignon, 340. Dissuades him from purchasing the earldom of St. Paul, 343: and endeavours to hinder him from erecting buildings for his manufactures; and from encouraging too great a number of religious orders, 345. Disapproves of the pardon granted by this prince to d'Entragues and d'Auvergne, 348. Refuses to concern himself in this affair with the marchioness of Verneuil, 350. Opposes the demolition of the pyramid, 353. A great quarrel between him and father Cotton, on account of the college of Poitiers. 376.; and is reconciled to father Cotton, 364. He is concerned with d'Epernon and Grillon in a dispute relating to the post of colonel of the guards. 368. The courtiers and Jesuits enter into a combination to ruin him, 372. Letters between Henry and him, and the service which he receives on this occasion from the house of Lorrain, 379. A long and interesting conversation between them, in which they are reconciled, 383. The artifices of his enemies: their libels against him, 384. Sully convicts them of calumny, 394. Henry punishes his enemies, and loads him with caresses in the presence the courtiers, 396. He puts an end to the dispute concerning the post of the colonel of the guards, to the satisfaction of the king, 397. He quarrels, and is again reconciled with this prince, 398. He marries his daughter to the duke of Rohan, 400; and his wife's daughter to La-Boulaye, 401. His labours in the finances, 406. The debts of the state discharged, and plenty and good order restored to the kingdom, 412. Paul V writes a complimentary letter to him: his answer, 430. Services done by him for Du-Perron, ib. His opinion of Spinola's arrival at Paris, 431. Letters between the king of England and Sully, 434. Sully removes Henry's apprehensions concerning the designs of the Protestants assembled at Châtelleraut, and is appointed to go thither to act for the king, 437. Purport of the public instructions he received on that occasion, 445, and of his secret and particular instructions, 446. Account of this mission, 452, et seq. He dismisses the assembly, and returns to give an account of his conduct to the king, iv, 27, whom he advises to take a journey into Limosin and Auvergne, 31. He attends the king in his journey, 33. Theodore de Beza dedicates a book to him, 39. He quarrels with the count of Soissons, ib., and with d'Epernon, ib. A bon-mot of his concerning the king's first physician, 44. Queen Margaret asks his advice concerning her journey to Paris, 45. Memorial upon the customs

and forms of duels, 49. A conversation between the king, queen, and Sully, a method proposed by him to put an end to their disputes, 52, et seq. New-year's gifts from their majesties to him, 59. Another conversation between the king and him upon the means of humbling the house of Austria, 66. He is made duke and peer, 70. He confirms Henry in his design of besieging Sedan, 71. An uncommon circumstance with regard to the wound in his neck and mouth, 75. His letters to Bouillon, and the answers to them, 78. His complaints against Villeroi on this expedition, 92. He visits Sedan, 96. He cannot prevail upon Henry to turn his arms against the earldom of St. Paul, 97, and endeavours to dissuade him from making a public entry into Paris, 98. He gives good advice to the Venetians upon their difference with Paul V, 100. Does some service to the cardinal Barbarini, and Du-Perron, 104. He supports the city of Metz against the Jesuits, 103. Composes the quarrels between the Catholics and Protestants, 113. He is made captain-lieutenant of the queen's company of gendarmes, 118. Regulations on the finances, 119. Friendship between him and the dutchess of Guise, 124. He give Henry the abstracts of the general accounts, 130. His advice to the king concerning the war in Flanders, 133. Henry's letters to him upon the birth of a second son of France: upon his children, and the chase, &c., 140. He suppresses the prosecution upon account of the murder of his nephew Epinoy, 144. Henry IV disgusted with him, but soon after reconciled, 145. Refuses to interfere in the disputes of the Jesuits with the inhabitants of Rochelle, 153 Conversation with Henry IV upon the intrigues of the Spaniards at court, 158. He satisfies the king upon this head, and justifies the house of Lorrain, 160. He induces Henry to refuse the offer made by the United Provinces of submitting to the dominion of France, 166. His opinion of the treaty concluded between Spain and Holland, 172. Presents made by him in Italy for the king, 177. Briefs sent him by Paul V, and his answer to the pope, 178. Operations in the finances, ib. Establishes order in the chambers of accounts, &c. &c., 182. He opposes the establishment of a chamber of justice, 191. Warns the king of his enemies, 193. Regulations for the artillery, &c., 195. He condemns his majesty's excessive expenses in manufactories, buildings, and furniture, 200. Henry's letters to him upon his domestic quarrels, 203. His son married to mademoiselle de Crequy, 209. He is offered the post of constable, &c., which he refuses, 213. Means employed by the Protestants to prevent his accepting of them, 216. He is supported by Henry against his enemies, 218. His conversation with Henry on the queen, the marchioness of Verneuil, &c. 221. Henry's letter to him on the birth of his son, 231. Employed by Henry in the affair of Joinville and the marchioness of Verneuil, 234, as likewise in that of Sommerive with the countess of

Moret, 258. In the assassination of Balagny d'Eguillon, 242. In the marriage of M. de Vendome with mademoiselle Mercœur, 245. He opposes the violent counsels against the Protestants, 248, 251. Henry's letter to him upon his health and that of his children, 254. He complains of Henry's extravagance at play, 260. Grants made him by the king, 263. Orders plans to be taken of the coast of France, and a restitution of the usurpations made by Spain and Lorrain, 264. Regulations in the finances, 265. Exhorts Henry to be present at the consultations of his ministers, 267. Memoirs and reflections upon the taille, imposts, and the different forms of our government, 268. He receives the compliments of foreign princes, 272. Henry follows his advice upon the accommodation between the Spaniards and Dutch, 276. Medals and memorials presented by him to Henry, 287. Different opinions of him, 290. His dispute with Villeroi, ib. He entertains his majesty at the Arsenal, 291. Disputes betwixt him and father Cotton, 295. Henry imparts to him his disquietudes, 301. A discourse between them upon this prince's love for the princess of Condé, 302. Upon the plots against his life, ib. Sully's opinion of these plots, and his wise advice to the king, 311. He hastens the execution of the grand design, 316. Henry and he employ themselves in composing the cabinet of state, 318, &c. His conversation with the king on the different ways of raising money, 322. Henry's character of Sully, 336. Operations in the finances, 339. He reproaches Henry on his great expenses, 341. Edict against fraudulent bankrupts and duels, 343. His letters and counsels upon the affair of the prince of Condé, 348. He clears du Plessis Mornay, and other Protestants, of false informations against them, 365. Conversation between Henry and him upon the means of humbling the house of Austria, 397, &c. The courtiers inspire Henry with suspicions against him, 408. Negociations with the princes of Europe, and other preparations for the grand design, 412. Henry's conversation with him upon the presages of his approaching death, 426, &c. Sully endeavours ineffectually to persuade the queen to delay her coronation, 429. Schomberg informs him of a conspiracy, &c., 640. He receives the first account of this prince's assassination, his behaviour and speeches upon that occasion, 441, 443. Sully's reasons for not going to the Louvre, 447. His complaints against the author of this murder, and upon the negligence with which he is guarded, 449. A sketch of the character, and of the good and bad qualities of this prince, 450, 452: goes to the Louvre: his reception from the king and queen-mother, 459. The hatred and plots of the courtiers against him, 461. He assists at the ceremony of a bed of justice, 463. His complaints of the court and council of the queen-regent, 464. Resolves to withdraw himself, 468. The count of Soissons seeks his friendship, and afterwards becomes his enemy, 470, 473. His opinion with regard to Cleves not fol-

lowed, 474. His advice to the count of Bethune, ambassador at Rome, 478. His advice with regard to the duke of Savoy, and the other allies of the crown, not followed, 481. He again resolves to deliver up his posts, and again hindered by his family, 483. He is reconciled with the prince of Condé, 493. Counsels which he gives him, 499. He opposes the grants promised to the duke of Bouillon, v, 3. As likewise those of council in the affair of Cleves, 504. He opposes Conchini and the count of Soissons, 4. Refuses to sign a comptant sent him by the queen-regent, 6. Blames Sillery and Couchini, 8. His dispute in full council with Bouillon, 9. He retires to Montrond during the coronation of Lewis XIII, and there falls sick, 13. Is recalled, the reception he meets with, 18. Visits the children of France, 19. Conchini prejudices the queen against him, 21. His indignation at the proposal made to the council, 24. He opposes Villeroy and Alincourt in full council, 28. Eulogium of his boldness and honesty, 31. He gives up his post of superintendant and captain of the Bastile, 33. His titles, ibid. Brevets and recompenses which he receives, 37. His advice to his secretaries, 38, 9. Honours paid him upon his quitting Paris, 42. He prevents the cabals of his enemies at court, 44. The king gives him a brevet for the augmentation of his pension, 48. He gives a particular account of his estate, and the improvements he made in it, with the provision he makes for his children, &c., 49, et seq. His disputes with the prince of Condé, 58. The assembly of Protestants at Châtelleraut support his interest against Bouillon and his enemies, 120. The part he takes in the affair of St. John d'Angely, 123, and in the revolt of the princes, 124. Other services in the war against the Protestants: recompensed with a marshal's staff, 132. State of his family, and his disquietude upon account of the marquis of Rosny, and the prince of Henrichemont, 133, &c. His death, 136. Honours paid to him by the dutchess of Sully, 137. His residence at Villebon: at Sully, &c. State and government of his house: the employment of his time, &c., 140, et seq. His buildings, 146.

Sully, dutchess of, Rachael de Cochefilet. Sully asks her in marriage, i, 257. Married to him, 313. She is beloved by the princess Catherine, ii, 114. Her conversation with the dutchess of Beaufort, 316. She exerts herself with madame de Brandis for the surrender of the castle of Montmelian, 387. Her return to Paris, 399. She goes to Baugy, 418. Delivered of a son, 488. Presents she receives from their majesties, iii, 188. Gives the queen good counsel with regard to Conchini, iv, 229. Henry IV, compliments her upon the birth of her son, 231. Sully informs her of the disposition of the queen-regent, and of the council towards him after the death of Henry IV, 483. She opposes his giving up his posts, 484. The sum she brought Sully at her marriage, v, 52. She excuses her husband to the queen-regent, 131. The mausoleum

she causes to be built for him, 137. Her life and domestic occupations, 145, &c.

Sulsback, counts of, right of these princes to the dutchy of Juliers, iv, 507.

Surenne. A conference at this place between Henry IV, and the Protestants, i, 366.

Synods of Protestants. They raise a rebellion, ii, 175, 203. Sully forbids them in the king's name to receive deputies from the factious lords, iii. 463.

T.

Talan. The troops of the League are driven out of this castle by Henry IV, ii, 59.

Talmont, taken by La Tremouille, i, 140. Defended against the League, 147.

Tambonneau, the president, commissary for proving the rents, iii, 301.

Tancrede, pretended heir to the house of Rohan, iii, 399.

Tapestry-workers, Flemish, sent for to Paris, iv, 200.

Tarn, the duke of Joyeuse drowned there, i, 312.

Tassone, Octavio, agent for the duke of Savoy in the treaty of Lyons, ii, 403.

Tavannes, Gaspard de Saulx de, one of the counsellors of Catherine de Medicis: his character, i, 3.

Tavannes, John de Saulux, viscount de, defeated and taken prisoner at Noyon, i, 248. Driven from Dijon by the king's forces, ii, 58.

Taxis, John, count of Villamediana, ambassador from Spain to England, iii, 77.

Taxis, John Baptist, count of, i, 351, 378.

Teillo, Hernando. See Portocarrero.

Teligny, Charles de, son-in-law to admiral Coligny, deputed to Charles IX, by the Huguenots, i, 18. Slain in the massacre of St. Bartholomew, 36.

Tende, Claude de Savoy, count of, refuses to obey the orders of Charles IX, to massacre the Protestants, i, 44.

Terrail, du, commands the light horse in the army of the league at the battle of Ivry, i, 220. Goes with Sully to London, iii, 48. Enters into the service of the archduke: takes Bergen op-zoom, and loses it again, 433. Fails in an attempt upon Sluys, iv, 266. Endeavours to surprise Geneva: is taken there, and beheaded, 377.

Tesin, the scheme of turning this river fatal to Francis I, ii, 85.

Themines, Pons de Lausieres de Cardaillac de, defends Villemur, and de

feats the forces of the League there, i, 309. Solicits for Biron's pardon, ii, 494. Does the king good service against the rebels, iv, 8.

Thermes, John de Saint Larry de, one of Henry the third's favourites, ii, 18.

Thermes, Paul de la Barthe de, defeated at Gravelines, i, 15.

Thore, William de Montmorency de, fails in his attempt to take possession of the bridge of Saint Maixence for Henry IV, i, 211.

Thou, James Augustus de, president, a conversation between him and Montagne, upon the characters of Henry IV, and the duke of Guise, i, 120. Consulted by Henry IV, upon his conversion, 327. Employed in composing the edict of Nantes, ii, 305. His sentiments with regard to religion suspected, ib. He votes in the council against the repeal of the Jesuits' banishment, iii, 196.

Thou, Nic. de, crowns Henry IV, at Chartres, i, 396.

Thouars. Sully goes there to visit la Tremouille, iii, 263.

Tignonville, mademoiselle de, beloved by Henry IV, i, 61.

Tilenus, a Protestant minister, his dispute with Du Val, ii, 297.

Tiron, Philip des Portes, abbot of, employed in Villars's treaty with Henry IV, i, 413. Gratuities which he received from this prince, 268.

Tonnerre, Francis Henry, count of Clermont, Sully saves his life at Joigny, i, 244.

Torigny, Odet de Matignon, count of, present at the battle of Ivry, i, 224. The cause of the death of la Chataigneraye, 224. Fights in the battle of Fontaine-Françoise, ii, 69.

Touchet, N. du, a Protestant gentleman, escapes the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i, 34.

Touchet, Mary, mistress to Charles IX, i, 444.

Toulon. The malecontents endeavour to seize upon this city, ii, 455, iii, 439.

Toulouse. Its reduction, ii, 86. Sum paid for its treaty, 264. The chamber of requests suppressed by its parliament, iii, 170. Its ancient counts, vassals to the kings of France, 341.

Tour, John de la, betrays the league, i, 223.

Touraine, cities of, taken by Henry IV, i, 212.

Tournelles. Henry IV, establishes his silk manufactories there, iii, 184.

Tours, one of the five cities which continued faithful to Henry III, i, 182. The two kings have a meeting near the city, 187. Duke of Maienne invests it, and obliged to retire by the two kings, 188. The duke of Guise escapes from its castle, 254. The first manufactories of rich stuff do not succeed, ii, 341.

Tours, Robert de, a contractor, attempts to bribe Sully and his wife, ii, 171.

Touvery. Sully dangerously wounded at this place, i, 246.

Trape, La, valet de chambre to Sully, i, 58, 78.

Tremblecourt, Lewis de Beauveau de, defeated in endeavouring to succour Nayon, i, 248. His success in Burgundy, ii, 46.

Tremont, one of the general officers, of the league, at Ivry, i, 223.

Tremouille, Claude, duke de la, takes Talmont, i, 140. Fights at Coutras, where his troops behave ill, 161. Gives bad counsel to the prince of Condé, 165. Has a great share of the victory gained at Fontaine-Françoise, ii, 63. Plots amongst the Protestants during the siege of Amiens, 175. Sent by Henry IV, to examine into the affair of the false Sebastian, 233. Is suspected of being amongst the seditious, 468. He engages with Bouillon, iii, 14. His intrigues with the king of England, 66, and the Protestants, against the state, 252. Sully visits him at Thouars, and disconcerts his schemes, 263. His death, 266. Sully purchases from him the lands of Sully.

Trigni, an officer in the king's party, i, 445. Present at the defeat of the great convoy before Laon, 459.

Troyes. The Jesuits refused an establishment there, iii, 355.

Turks and Turkey. They carry on a war in Hungary, ii, 404. The Grand Seignior's embassy to Henry IV, the magnificent titles they give him, 423. Continuation of their war in Hungary, 463. They give succour to the Moors in Spain, iv, 288. The grand design, so far as it relates to them, v, 87.

Turenne, viscounty of, seized upon by Henry IV, ii, 210. Bouillon pretends that this viscounty is one of the great fiefs of the crown, 249.

Turenne, viscount of. See Bouillon.

Tyber. A great overflow of this river, ii, 282.

V.

Vactendonck. The Spaniards driven from this place by the prince of Orange, iii, 12.

Vair, William du, counsellor of the parliament, his opinion for the hereditary succession of the crown, i, 355.

Vaivodes of Transilvania, defeated by George Baste, ii, 462.

Vall, du, his dispute at the conference with Tilenus, ii, 297.

Valentia, the council of, its edict against duels, iv, 50.

Valentia in Spain, an insurrection there, upon account of the expulsion of Moors, iv, 284.

Valentinian III. Sully's opinion of this emperor, v, 64.

Vallée, Michael Piquemouche de la, lieutenant-general of the ordnance, ii, 374. He conducts the duke of Vendome into Brittany, iv, 247.

Valette, Bernard de Nogaret de la, admiral of France, particulars of his life; killed at the siege of Roquebrune, i, 301.

Valette, John Lewis de Nogaret de la. See Epernon.

Valois, Claude de, daughter of Henry II, married to the duke of Lorrain, i, 16.

———, Margaret of, queen of France. See Margaret.

Valtoline. The situation of this canton: dispute upon account of it between the Spaniards and Grisons, iii, 336; iv, 174.

Vandrelep, treaty of, between England and the United Provinces, iii, 64.

Varade, Peter, a Jesuit, involved in the affair of Chatel, ii, 43.

Varenne, William Fouquet de la, imprudently sent by Henry IV to Mendoza, i, 384. Particulars relating to him, 385. Services done by him to the princess Catherine, ii, 112. Henry IV recommends the dutchess of Beaufort to his care, 316. His letters to Henry IV and to Sully upon the tragical death of this lady, 320. Henry's affection for him, 416. He is employed in arresting marshal Biron and Auvergne, ii, 487. This prince makes use of him in accommodating matters betwixt Sully and the count of Soissons, iii, 168. He is instrumental in the recal of the Jesuits, 192. He joins with the courtiers and Jesuits to ruin Sully, 374. His services to the Jesuits at La-Flèche, iv, 106. He supports father Seguiran and the Jesuits against the Rochellers, 153. His attachment to the Jesuits, 297. Informs Henry of the plots of the Spaniards against his person, 304, 357. His speech to the Jesuits upon the death of this prince, v, 179. Sent by the queen-mother to Sully, iv, 458.

Vassignac. See Bassignac.

Vaucelas, Andrew de Cochéfilet, earl of, sent by Sully to the queen of England, iii, 141. Discovers in Spain the plots of the queen's party against the life of Henry IV, and informs him of it, iv, 304.

Vaucemain. Sully sells him the abbey of Absie, v, 55.

Vaudemont, Nicolas of Lorrain de, Henry III marries his daughter, i, 52.

Velasco, John Ferdinand de, constable of Castile, sent ambassador extraordinary from Spain to London, iii, 77. Plots against Henry IV, 156. Concludes at London the agreement betwixt Spain and England, 326. Henry the Fourth's reception and conversation with him at Paris, 328.

Vendome, Alexander de Bourbon, chevalier de. See Bourbon, Alexander of.

————, Charles de Bourbon, duke of, i, 2.

————, Cæsar de Bourbon, duke of, son to Henry IV, and the Fair Gabrielle, ii, 35. Design of giving him the sovereignty of Franche-Comté, 45. Made governor of La-Fère, 86. Betrothed to mademoiselle de Mercœur, 195. Sent by Henry IV to visit queen Margaret, iv, 46. Difficulties in accomplishing his marriage with mademoiselle de Mercœur, 245. He accuses Sully of opposing his legitimation, 345. Henry IV reconciles him with Sully and Rosny.

Vendome, Catherine Henrietta, de Bourbon. See Bourbon, Catherine, Henrietta de.

Veneur, Taeneguy le, endeavours to save the Protestants at Rouen, at the massacre of St. Bartholomew, i, 44.

Venetians. The reception and presents made its ambassador, 423. Unites with the Grisons against Spain, iii, 65. Sully's conference with the Venetian resident at London: its advantage in the execution of the great design, 127. Their great veneration for a suit of armour given them by Henry, 202. The interest they had in the affair of the Valtoline, 335. Presents given by Henry IV to their ambassador, 421. Account of their quarrel with Paul V, iv, 99. Their union with the Grisons against Spain, 175. Their difference with the Pope terminated by the mediation of Henry IV, 177. Confederacy between France and this republic, 308. They join the deputation sent this prince by the German princes assembled at Hall, 402. The grand design so far as it regards this republic, v, 88, 98, 108.

Ventadour, Ann de Levis, duke of, made prisoner before Cambrai, i, 95. His success against the League in Languedoc, ii. 115. He intercedes with Henry IV for the count of Auvergne, 503. Sully calumniated upon account of his friendship for him, iii, 390. Debts of the king to him discharged, 418 He complains of Sully, iv, 232.

Verdun. Henry's reception and promises to the Jesuits of this city, iii, 7.

Verdun, first president of the parliament of Toulon. Sully writes him upon the affair of the registers and clerks offices, iv, 181, and upon other regulations, 267.

Vere, colonel, the earl of Northumberland gives him a blow upon the face, iii, 154.

Verneuil. Medavy treats with Sully for the surrender of this city, i, 388, 438. It is delivered to the king, 434.

Verneuil, Henry de Bourbon, duke of, iii, 350. The king gives him the bishopric of Metz: the difficulties raised by the pope on this occasion, iv, 256. Particulars of his life, ib.

————, Catherine Henrietta de Balzac d'Entragues, marchioness of, mistress of Henry IV. The beginning of her amours with this prince, ii, 334. Her character, ib. Her artifice to make him give her a promise of marriage, 335. She follows him to the campaign of Savoy, 358. Is delivered of a dead child, 359. She procures the count of Auvergne's pardon and liberty, 502. Her hatred of Sully, iii, 166. Her plots with the malecontents, 185. Her unequal and bad temper, 230. Henry reproaches her in his letters; she haughtily refuses to deliver him his promise of marriage, 232. The queen's hatred to her, 240. Her great artifice in fomenting quarrels between the king and queen, and endeavours to ruin Sully, 248. Endeavours to dissolve the king's marriage, 249. Delivers up the pro-

mise of marriage, 270. She is arrested, Sully employed to interrogate her, her reproaches to this minister, and other particulars relating to this incident, 281. She makes the king pardon Auvergne and Entragues, and dictates her own conditions, 350. Causes of her hatred to Sully, 385. Other quarrels between the king, queen, and her, iv, 202. Her children by the king, 220. Intrigues with Joinville, 234. A bon-mot of her's upon the marriage of the prince of Condé, 303. Accused of being engaged in the parricide of Ravaillac.

Vernon. The duke of Montpensier fails in his attack upon this city, i, 210.

Vervins. Negociations for a peace at this city, ii, 196. Concluded, 201. Particulars of the ceremony used upon this occasion, 226.

Vesoris, advocate for the Jesuits against the University of Paris, i, 451.

Vesou. Taken by the constable of Castile.

Vezins, generously saves the life of Renier, his enemy, at the massacre of Saint Bartholomew, i, 45. Defends Cahors, where he is killed, 76.

Vic, Dominique de, defeats d'Aumale, and attacks St. Denis, i, 301. Vice-admiral of France, ii, 176. Appointed to treat with the Swiss ambassadors, 528. His resentment of the affront offered by the vice-admiral of England, iii, 39. Ambassador to the Grisons, 338. Demolishes the fort of Rebuy, iv, 173. His schemes for the security of Calais, 342. Admitted into the public council of the queen-regent, 466. His death, ib

——, his company defeated by Henry IV, i, 154.

Vienne, taken by the constable Montmorency, ii, 44.

Vienne, de, admitted into the council of the finances, ii, 48. Gratuities given him by Henry IV, 298. Regulations prescribed to him by Sully, iii, 317. Dissatisfied with Henry's excessive expenses for manufactories, iv, 200.

———, de, his counsel the cause of the taking of Bourg, ii, 366.

Vignoles, distinguishes himself at the head of his regiment at Ivry, i, 225, and at the siege of Laon.

Villa-Mediana, the count of. See Taxis.

Villandry, offends Charles IX, admiral Coligny procures his pardon, i, 27.

Villarnou, deputy-general of the Protestants, iv, 254.

Villars, earldom of, the claim that the duke of Savoy had in the cathedral of Lyons contested with Charles Emmanuel, ii, 346.

Villars, Andrew de Brancas, admiral of France, defends Rouen against Henry IV, i, 258, 264, 279. Sully endeavours to begin a negociation with him, but does not succeed, 266. Refuses a challenge from the earl of Essex, 281. The beginning of Sully's negociation with him, 333. Broke off, 393. Resumed, 394. His character, 395. The conditions of his treaty with the king, 411. His rage against Sully, 414. His eulogium, 433, 440. Ceremony observed at the surrender of Rouen: he comes to court, 446. Commands the king's forces in Picardy, ii, 46.

His bravery before Dourlens, 54. He is killed. 57. Henry's great grief for his death, 66. The sum of money he received for his treaty, 264.

Villars, George de Brancas, chevalier d'Oise. See Oise.

Villars, Honorat de Savoie, marquis of, commands the royal army in Guyenne, i, 22, 68.

———, Jerôme de, archbishop of Vienne, iii, 225.

———, Peter de, archbishop of Vienne, sent to Henry IV, by the states of Blois, i, 67.

———, Julietta Hypolita d'Estrees, marchioness of, her intrigue with Joinville, iv, 235.

Villebon, lands and castle of, purchased by Sully, v, 54. Sully dies at this castle, his mausoleum there, 136. His manner of living there. Makes great improvements there, 150.

Villefranche, in Perigord, taken by assault, i, 58.

Villemur, siege and battle of, i, 309.

———, Peter Pitte de, wounds admiral Coligny, i, 32.

Villeneuve. Taken by the Catholics, i, 70.

Villepion. Taken by Turenne for Henry IV, iv, 36.

Villequire, René de, dissuades Henry III from ordering the duke of Guise to be assassinated, i, 173. One of the favourites of this prince, ii, 18.

Villeroi, Nicholas de Neufville de, minister of state: he makes proposals from the league to Henry IV, i, 296. One of the chief of the third party, 324. His real sentiments of the league, of Spain, and of Henry IV, 361. Other conditions offered by him to Henry IV, from the league, 345. Rejected, 349. Accused of making the heads of the league, take an oath against this prince, 361. Justified, 362. His treaty with the king, 427. A bon-mot of Henry IV, upon him, 428. He opposes Sully's entrance into the council of the finances, ii, 120. Disappointed of being made master-general of the ordnance, 178. Endeavours to procure a treaty with the Protestants, 191. Defends Picardy, 192. Advises Henry IV against marrying again, 222. Manages foreign affairs, 257. The sum he received for his treaty, 264. One of the commissioners for the marriage of Henry IV, with Mary of Medicis, 338, and for the marquisate of Saluces, 347. Opposes Sully during the campaign of Savoy, 379. Commissioner for the treaty of Lyons, 395. Opposes the embassy of the count of Bethune to Rome, 443. Attends the king to Metz, iii, 84. His solicitations for the Jesuits and connexions with Ossat, condemned by Sully, 10. Solicits the recal of the Jesuits, 196. His conduct in the affair of Nicholas L'Hote, 210. Signs the treaty of commerce between Spain and France, 317. Advises Henry to purchase the earldom of St. Paul, 343. Endeavours to ruin Sully in the affair of Grillon, 374. His hatred to this minister, 385. Letters between them during the continuance of this assembly, iv, 15. Concludes the treaty

with Bouillon, 90. His sentiments upon the law of shipwrecks, 163 Opposes Sully in the council upon the offers made by the Dutch, 165. Henry makes use of him to persuade Sully to change his religion, 217. His letters to the Protestants assembled at Gergeau, 252. Employed in the truce against Spain and the Dutch, 276. Favours the Spanish policy in opposition to the designs of Henry IV, 306. Disputes betwixt him and Sully, 334. Henry's judgment of the good and bad qualities of this minister, 338. Circular letters written by him after the prince of Condé, left the kingdom, 363. Inspires the queen-regent with a policy quite opposite to that of Henry the Great, 480. He is affronted by the duke of Nevers and the nobles: advises the queen-regent to recal Sully, v, 14. Gratuities which he receives from her, 23. A great quarrel between him and Sully in full council, 27.

Villers-Coterets. The garrison of Soisson defeated at this place, ii, 44.

Villette, la, conferences upon religion at this place, i, 366.

Villers. A Protestant minister: the prince of Orange informs him of the intended treachery at Antwerp, i, 101.

Vincenzo, valet de chambre to Conchini: his wise observations upon his master, iv, 487.

Vins, Hubert de La-Garde de, his party in Provence, i, 307.

Vinta, chevalier, chancellor of Savoy: employed in the affair of the isles, ii, 441.

Vinti. An Italian, attendant upon the queen, ii, 476. His plots with Conchini against the king, iv, 303.

Vitry, Lewis de L'Hopital de, commands the troops of the league at the siege of Rouen, i, 269. Employed in the conversion of Henry IV, 360. Surrenders Meaux to the king, 392. His speech to the duke of Maienne, ibid. He promotes the treaty with Villars, 428. Attends the king to the campaign of Franche-Comté, ii, 65. The sum of money he received for his treaty, 264. He arrests marshal Biron, ii, 488. His great grief upon the death of Henry; the advice he gave Sully, iv, 444.

University of Paris. Its process against the Jesuits, i, 447. It opposes the recal of this society, iii, 193.

Ubaldini, nuncio of the pope, iv, 483.

Urban VIII. This pope's brief to Sully, and answer, v, 132.

Urbin, archbishop of, employed in the dissolution of the marriage of Henry IV with Margaret de Valois, ii, 214.

Vroreylzen, employed in the treaty of commerce betwixt France and Spain, iii, 313.

Ursin, Virgil, cousin to Mary of Medicis, attends her into France, ii, 403.

Ussac, delivers up La-Réole to the Catholics, i, 72.

Usseau, Sully favours his duel with Beauvais, i, 86.

Usson. Queen Margaret's residence at this castle, ii, 452. She leaves it; and Henry IV orders it to be demolished, iv, 45.

Uzes. See Crussol.

Uzes, madam de, informs Sully of the designs of Catherine of Medicis, i, 144.

W.

Wales, prince of, his character, iii, 143. Presents made him by Sully, 143. His fondness for Henry IV, iv, 128. Henry's design of marrying his eldest daughter to him, 307.

West, empire of the, Sully's opinion of it, v, 64.

Whale, a large one taken on the coast of Holland, ii, 282.

Wirtemberg, duke of, no longer concerned in farming the revenues, ii, 271. Henry's politeness to his ambassador, iii, 333. Sully accused of holding a criminal correspondence with him, 391. Henry IV, protects him, iv, 136.

Wymmes, Thomas, governor of Dover, his brutality to Sully, iii, 41.

Y.

Yverne. Sent into Spain by the count d'Auvergne, iii, 270.

Yvetot. Henry IV, at this place, defeats the prince of Parma, i, 287.

Z.

Zamet, Sebastian, makes proposals to Henry IV, from the League, i, 296. Of great use in the conversion of Henry IV, 319, ii, 124. Henry recommends the dutchess of Beaufort to him, 316, who is taken ill at his house, and dies, 319. Particulars relating to his fortune and family, ib. Henry's affection for him, iv, 37. Grants made him by this prince, iv, 123: and debts which he pays him, 179. Informs the king of plots against him, 304. Particulars relating to him and his children, 384.

Zapata, cardinal, sent from Spain to congratulate the grand duke of Tuscany, iv, 331.

Zeland. This province opposes the suspension of arms between Spain and the Dutch, iv, 173.

Zopyrus, iii, 188, 203.

THE END.